Gc
974.7
G83h
v.1
1755076

M. L.

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

Gc
GEN



189

HISTORY

of the

Valley of the Hudson

RIVER OF DESTINY

1609-1930

V. 1

Edited by
NELSON GREENE

+ + +

Covering the Sixteen New York State Hudson River Counties of New York, Bronx, Westchester, Rockland, Orange, Putnam, Dutchess, Ulster, Greene, Columbia, Albany, Rensselaer, Saratoga, Washington, Warren, Essex.

+ + +

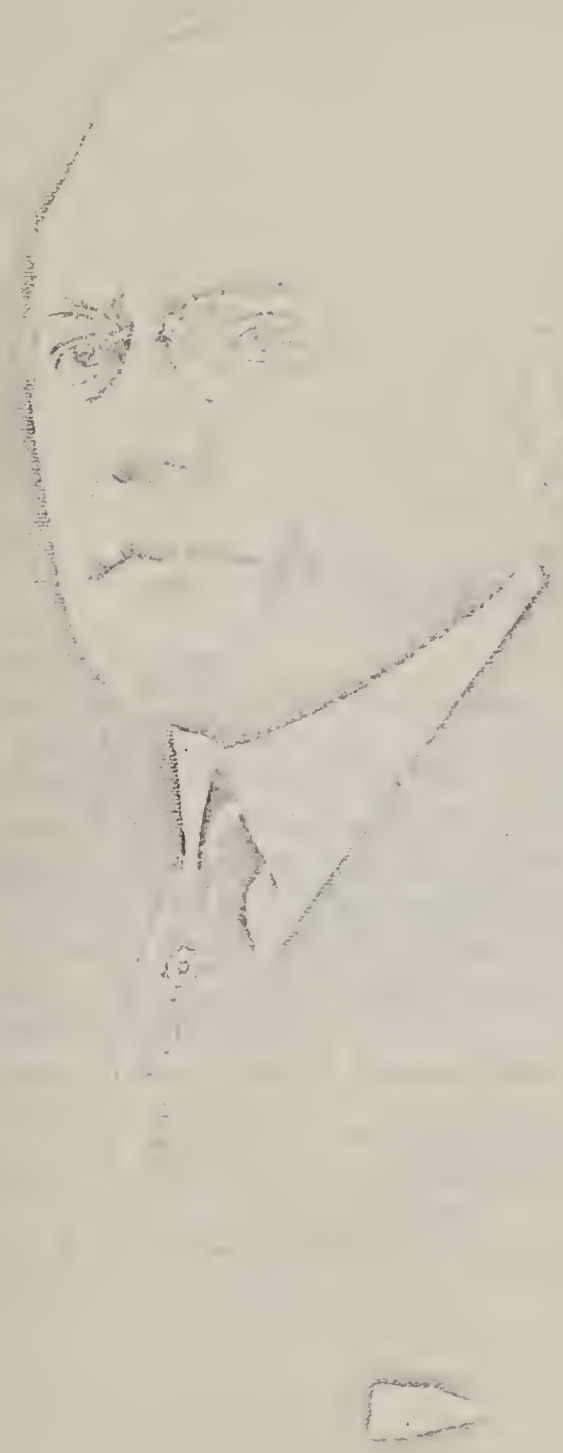
VOLUME I

+ + +

Chicago.
The S. J. Clarke Publishing Company
1931

189

1755076



Xerored 1973

Helen Keene

MAR 23 '73

F
852
.37

Greene, Nelson, *ed.*

History of the valley of the Hudson, river of destiny, 1609–1928, edited by Nelson Greene: covering the sixteen New York state Hudson river counties of New York, Bronx, Westchester, Rockland, Orange, Putnam, Dutchess, Ulster, Greene, Columbia, Albany, Rensselaer, Saratoga, Washington, Warren, Essex ... Chicago, The S. J. Clarke publishing company, 1931.

5 v. fronts. (v. 1-2) illus., plates, ports., map. 27^{cm}.

Editor's name appears on t.-p. of v. 1–2 only.
Vols. 3–5: Biographical.

1. Hudson valley—Hist. 2. Hudson valley—Biog.

Library of Congress F127.H8G8 22-3332

N 320 974.7

FOREWORD

HISTORY OF THE VALLEY OF THE HUDSON

River of Destiny

The Hudson is truly the River of Destiny.

Its marvelous story concerns not only the history of the United States of America but it also has had a vital influence on the life and activities of all the civilized peoples of the World.

The Declaration of Independence initiated our mighty American republic but the Battle of Saratoga, fought on the banks of the Hudson, assured the life of the new nation and made possible its future development.

The story of the World's greatest city and seaport—New York—is a vital part of that of the Hudson—our River of Destiny. Not only is the history of our national and world metropolis bound with that of the Hudson and its Valley, but the lordly river and its main tributary—the Mohawk—are the geographical factors which are responsible for the mighty city at the mouth of this remarkable stream.

America's national spirit developed long prior to the Revolutionary War, which had its primal causes and its actual beginnings with the earliest settlements of the Atlantic coast—by the English in Virginia in 1607, by the Dutch on Manhattan Island in 1613, and by the Pilgrims at Plymouth in 1620. The subsequent settlements of the Dutch on the middle and upper reaches of the Hudson, at Kingston and at Albany in 1614, planted the seeds which have grown, not only into the cities which they founded but which were the initial steps in the development of the entire Hudson River region with its population of over five million people on the 200 miles of the shores of the stream between New York Bay and the City of Glens Falls.

It is truly remarkable that such an important historical and geographical area as the Valley of the Hudson has never had proper historical presentation in a worthy and dignified published form.

We have had many county histories but none, nor all, of them filled the need of a comprehensive historical record and description of the great Valley of the Hudson. This territory forms one extensive regional community extending from New York to Albany and Troy and northward to the beginning of the Adirondack section of the river above Glens Falls. North of the limits of Greater New York, 1,335,323 people live in the Hudson River counties of Westchester, Rockland, Putnam, Orange, Dutchess, Ulster, Columbia, Greene, Rensselaer, Albany, Washington, Saratoga and Warren. Of the remainder of the four and a half million people who live in the counties abutting on the Hudson River, 2,817,000 were residents of the counties of New York and Bronx, according to the census of 1925 and another half million lived in the New Jersey counties of Hudson and Bergen. The population has materially increased over the 1925 figures. In the Hudson River counties north of the New York City line, by far the greater part of the county population is located directly on or within a few miles of the stream.

This History of the Valley of the Hudson covers the historical features of the counties of New York and the Bronx in a general way. The history of New York is too extensive a subject to be elaborated in detail in this work, which, however, forms a comprehensive history of the Hudson Valley north of New York City in the river counties aforementioned.

Particular attention is paid to the capital city of New York State—Albany; also Rensselaer and the interesting group of cities at the mouth of the Mohawk—Troy, Cohoes and Watervliet. Adequate description is given of the cities of Yonkers, Newburgh, Poughkeepsie, Kingston, Hudson and of the northern valley center of Glens Falls. The many interesting villages along the river and its adjacent territory are given proper delineation in the historical picture. However, the work in general constitutes a study of the entire region of the Valley of the Hudson and its many human activities and epochal periods which have had so great a part in the making of America. The Westchester County cities of Mount Vernon, New Rochelle and White Plains also have historical treatment and general description.

Nature itself gave the Valley of the Hudson its fame because of its remarkable and unique geological and geographical formation. The Hudson is an actual arm of the Atlantic Ocean extending for 150 miles northward from the sea through the barrier of the Highlands to the mouth of the Mohawk opposite Troy. The latter stream pierces the Appalachian Mountain range. Thus, the Hudson and the Mohawk rivers have cut a narrow pass through the mountains, affording water connection between the Atlantic and the Great Lakes, as well as rail and highway transportation over this, the only low pass from east to west on the entire Atlantic Coast. Given these geographical conditions, the Hudson Valley naturally became the Atlantic Coast's Gateway to the West and the Hudson became the River of National Destiny. Through this gateway, poured the greater part of the vast human tide which peopled the United States westward of the Alleghanies. The old Indian trial on the eastern river bank, became the historically famous Boston Post Road and the paralleling of the river by America's Greatest Railroad—the New York Central—followed in due time. Highway and rail transportation on the west shore of the river later completed the double chain of land communication on both of the river's banks.

From a historical point of view, water transportation has been the outstanding feature of the Hudson Valley. The earliest Dutch settlers utilized this arm of the sea for the movement of produce, grain, freight and also passengers and the river's growth as an artery of transportation has continued, through periods of rise and decline, up to the present deep sea channel work, which will carry the commerce of the Seven Seas from the Atlantic to the railhead ports of Albany and Rensselaer. At these cities, connection with the Great Lakes is had by way of the New York State Barge Canal, which utilizes a large part of the channel of the Mohawk westward from Waterford on the Hudson. The future results of the Albany deep-sea channel are well nigh incalculable. However, it is entirely possible that this ocean commerce will create a Capital City community of over a million people within the next quarter century. The entire river and its cities and villages between New York and Albany will share in the development and prosperity which are sure to follow this tremendous waterway development.

During a long residence in New York City and at Grandview-on-Hudson, the Editor made an intensive study of the history of the Hudson Valley, which he trusts is given a worthy exposition in the History of the Valley of the Hudson—River of Destiny.

NELSON GREENE.

August 1, 1931.

CONTENTS

VOLUME I

Alphabetical Index in Volume II

CHAPTER 1.

THE HUDSON RIVER.

THE HUDSON AND ITS VALLEY—THE STREAM FROM ITS SOURCE TO ITS MOUTH—ONE OF THE WORLD'S GREATEST RIVERS, HISTORICALLY, SCENICALLY AND COMMERCIALLY 1

CHAPTER 2.

THE HUDSON RIVER, NEW YORK CITY TO YONKERS.

THE NEW YORK CITY SECTION—PALISADES OF THE HUDSON—SPUYTEN DUYVIL—VAN CORTLANDT HOUSE (1748) AND VAN CORTLANDT PARK—RIVERDALE 17

CHAPTER 3.

THE HUDSON RIVER—YONKERS TO PEEKSKILL—THE TAPPAN ZEE REGION.

THE CITY OF YONKERS—THE CITY DISTRICT OF YONKERS, MOUNT VERNON, NEW ROCHELLE—LOWER PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, 1682, AT YONKERS—THE "LOOKOUT," 550 FEET HIGH, OPPOSITE HASTINGS—ALBANY POST ROAD, U. S. ROUTE 9, BROADWAY TO OSSINING, "THE LONGEST STREET IN THE WORLD"—LIVINGSTON HOUSE AT DOBBS FERRY, WHERE WASHINGTON PLANNED YORKTOWN CAMPAIGN—WHITE PLAINS AND THE BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS, 1776—TAPPAN, SCENE OF ARNOLD'S EXECUTION, 1780—PICTURESQUE PIERMONT, GRANDVIEW, NYACK SECTION—HARING HOUSE, 1738—SALISBURY HOUSE, 1750—SUNNYSIDE, IRVING'S HOME AT IRVINGTON—TARRYTOWN, WHERE ANDRE WAS CAPTURED, 1780—SLEEPY HOLLOW CHURCH, 1699—UPPER PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, 1683—HOOK MOUNTAIN—OSSINING—CROTON RIVER AND CROTON POINT—VAN CORTLANDT MANOR HOUSE, 1681—HAVERSTRAW—STONY POINT BATTLEFIELD PARK—KINGS FERRY—VERPLANCK'S POINT—PEEKSKILL—CAMP SMITH OF NEW YORK NATIONAL GUARD 29

CHAPTER 4.

THE HUDSON RIVER—PEEKSKILL TO NEWBURGH—THROUGH THE HIGHLANDS OF THE HUDSON.

DUNDERBERG—IONA ISLAND—ANTHONY'S NOSE—BEAR MOUNTAIN PARK AND BRIDGE—PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK—BATTLES OF FORTS

CLINTON AND MONTGOMERY, OCT. 6, 1777—HIGHLAND FALLS—WEST POINT, THE AMERICAN MILITARY STRONGHOLD OF THE REVOLUTION—UNITED STATES MILITARY ACADEMY—CONSTITUTION ISLAND—PICTURESQUE HIGHLANDS, MAGNIFICENT RIVER VIEWS—COLD SPRING—CROW'S NEST—STORM KING AND STORM KING HIGHWAY—SIPHON TUNNEL OF NEW YORK CITY'S WATER SUPPLY, 1,114 FEET UNDER HUDSON 63

CHAPTER 5.

THE HUDSON RIVER—NEWBURGH TO HUDSON.

CORNWALL—THE RIVER CHANNEL TO POUGHKEEPSIE—NEWBURGH—FIRST SETTLEMENT OF PALATINE GERMANS AT NEWBURGH—CAMP OF AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY ARMY AND WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS, 1779-1783—HASBROUCK HOUSE (1750) WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS—STATE MUSEUM AND TOWER OF VICTORY IN STATE PARK, NEWBURGH—BEACON—FISHKILL, AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY CAMP—DEVIL'S DANSKAMMER—POUGHKEEPSIE, FORMER STATE CAPITAL, WHERE CONSTITUTION OF UNITED STATES WAS ADOPTED, 1788—POUGHKEEPSIE BRIDGES—ESTATE OF GOVERNOR ROOSEVELT—KINGSTON, SETTLED BY DUTCH, 1652—SENATE HOUSE, 1676, WHERE NEW YORK STATE LEGISLATURE MET, 1777, STATE CONSTITUTION ADOPTED—WALLKILL RIVER—ASHOKAN RESERVOIR OF NEW YORK CITY WATER SUPPLY—ROKEBY, MONTGOMERY PLACE, LIVINGSTON MANOR HOUSE—SAUGERTIES, GERMANTOWN, NORTH GERMANTOWN, SITES OF PALATINE GERMAN SETTLEMENTS, 1710—CATSKILL MOUNTAINS—CATSKILL, SCENE OF STORY OF "RIP VAN WINKLE"—CITY OF HUDSON 79

CHAPTER 6.

THE HUDSON RIVER—HUDSON TO ALBANY—RENSSELAER.

ISLAND SECTION OF RIVER, NORTH OF HUDSON—27-FOOT SHIP CHANNEL, HUDSON TO ALBANY—KINDERHOOK—LINDENWALD, 1797, HOME OF PRESIDENT MARTIN VAN BUREN—COXSACKIE—RAVENA—CASTLETON CUT-OFF BRIDGE AND SELKIRK FREIGHT YARDS OF NEW YORK CENTRAL RAILROAD—CASTLETON—MOHICAN INDIAN COUNTRY 101

CHAPTER 7.

THE HUDSON RIVER—THE ALBANY-TROY CITIES DISTRICT.

ALBANY, THE CAPITAL CITY—CITIES OF TROY, RENSSELAER, WATERVLIET, COHOES; VILLAGES OF MENANDS, GREEN ISLAND, WATERFORD—THE ALBANY-TROY-SCHENECTADY CIVIC TRIANGLE WITH 400,000 POPULATION, THIRD LARGEST CIVIC DISTRICT IN NEW YORK STATE—HISTORIC HOUSES: FORT CRALO, 1642, RENSSELAER, OLDEST HOUSE IN NEW YORK STATE; SCHUYLER MANSION, ALBANY; VAN SCHAICK HOUSE, COHOES—FEATURES OF THE CAPITAL CITY—ALBANY, CENTER OF DUTCH COLONIZATION OF UPPER HUDSON VALLEY—ALBANY-RENSSELAER PORT—ERIE AND CHAMPLAIN BARGE CANAL CONNECTIONS—TROY CITY FEATURES—WATERVLIET ARSENAL—COHOES FALLS—MOUTH OF THE MOHAWK AND THE MOHAWK VALLEY—ALBANY-TROY, GREAT INTERSTATES CROSSROADS OF LAND, WATER AND AIR TRANSPORTATION—ALBANY, HEADQUARTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY ARMY OF THE NORTH 107

CHAPTER 8.

THE HUDSON RIVER—WATERFORD TO GLENS FALLS.

THE HUDSON-CHAMPLAIN-ST. LAWRENCE-MOHAWK HISTORICAL TRIANGLE, WITH ALBANY, MONTREAL, OSWEGO AT POINTS—ROUTES 9, 32, 4, 22 NORTHWARD FROM ALBANY, WATERFORD, TROY—MECHANICVILLE—STILLWATER—BEMIS HEIGHTS—SARATOGA BATTLEFIELD, SITE OF DECISIVE BATTLES OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION, SEPTEMBER 19, OCTOBER 7, 1777—SARATOGA BATTLEFIELD STATE PARK—SCUYLERVILLE, SCENE OF SURRENDER OF BURGOYNE'S BRITISH ARMY, OCTOBER 17, 1777—FORT EDWARD—HUDSON FALLS—GLENS FALLS—U. S. ROUTE 9 NORTHWARD FROM ALBANY—SARATOGA SPRINGS—SARATOGA LAKE—BALLSTON SPA—MOUNT McGREGOR.....131

CHAPTER 9.

THE HUDSON RIVER—GLENS FALLS TO THE SOURCE AT MOUNT MARCY.

THE ADIRONDACK SECTION OF THE HUDSON—DESCRIPTION OF ITS COURSE FROM LAKE TEAR OF THE CLOUDS TO GLENS FALLS, 100 MILES—TAHAWUS, WHERE VICE PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT WAS NOTIFIED OF PRESIDENT McKINLEY'S DEATH—INDIAN RIVER—NORTH CREEK—WARRENSBURG—SCHROON RIVER—HADLEY—SACANDAGA RESERVOIR—HYDROELECTRIC DEVELOPMENTS ON THE UPPER HUDSON—250,000 HORSEPOWER DEVELOPED—MAIN HIGHWAYS OF THE UPPER HUDSON VALLEY: ROUTES 9, 4, 22—LAKE GEORGE AND LAKE GEORGE BATTLEFIELD PARK—SITE OF BATTLE OF LAKE GEORGE, SEPTEMBER 8, 1755—ROUTE 4, HUDSON FALLS TO WHITEHALL—ROUTE OF GENERAL BURGOYNE'S ARMY'S SOUTHWARD MARCH, 1777—WHITEHALL TO TICONDEROGA AND CROWN POINT TO KEESEVILLE OVER ROUTE 22—FORT TICONDEROGA, SCENE OF BRITISH DEFEAT, 1758; AMERICAN CAPTURE, 1775; BRITISH CAPTURE, 1777—LAKE GEORGE TO KEESEVILLE OVER ROUTE 9.....153

CHAPTER 10.

INDIANS OF THE HUDSON RIVER, 1609.

THE RIVER INDIANS, ALGONQUIN TRIBES; MOHICANS AND MINCEES—SUB TRIBES; MANHATTANS, SANHIKANS, TAPPANS, WECKQUASGEEKS, SINTSINGS, PACHAMIS, WAORANACKS, WAPPINGERS, WARONAWANKONGS, MINNISINCKS, NANTICOKES, MINCEES, MOHICANS, HORIKONS—MOHAWKS OR CANIENGAS, OVERLORDS OF THE HUDSON RIVER INDIANS—THE FIVE NATIONS OF IROQUOIS; MOHAWKS, ONEIDAS, ONONDAGAS, CAYUGAS, SENECAS.....165

CHAPTER 11.

1524-1609—PERIOD OF DISCOVERY.

1524. VERAZANNO'S VISIT TO NEW YORK BAY—1540. FRENCH TRADERS AT PRESENT ALBANY—DUTCH MARITIME DEVELOPMENT—FIRST EUROPEAN SETTLEMENTS ON THE ATLANTIC COAST: 1565, ST. AUGUSTINE, FLORIDA; 1607, JAMESTOWN, VIRGINIA; 1608, QUEBEC, CANADA; 1613, MANHATTAN BOROUGH, NEW YORK CITY; 1614, ALBANY, NEW YORK; 1620, PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS.....177

CHAPTER 12.

1609. CHAMPLAIN'S ATTACK ON THE MOHAWKS.

AN EPOCHAL EVENT IN THE HISTORY OF NORTH AMERICA, WHICH MADE THE MOHAWKS, OR CANIENGAS FOREVER ENEMIES OF THE FRENCH—CONFLICT, PROBABLY OCCURRED NEAR CROWN POINT, LAKE CHAMPLAIN, JULY 30, 1609, A FEW MONTHS PRIOR TO HUDSON'S VOYAGE—CHAMPLAIN'S GUN CAUSES A PANIC AMONG MOHAWKS—THE BEGINNING OF 150 YEARS OF WARFARE—CHAMPLAIN NAMED LAKE AFTER HIMSELF 181

CHAPTER 13.

1609. HUDSON'S VOYAGE IN THE HALF MOON—THE RIVER EXPLORED FROM NEW YORK BAY TO STILLWATER 185

CHAPTER 14.

1609-1614 IN NEW NETHERLAND AND THE HUDSON RIVER REGION.

1610, AMSTERDAM MERCHANTS SEND TRADING SHIP TO HUDSON RIVER—DUTCH CALL THE RIVER MAURITIUS—1611, CAPTAINS CHRISTIAENSEN AND BLOCK VOYAGE TO HUDSON RIVER AND BRING TWO INDIANS BACK TO HOLLAND—1613, DUTCH SHIPS "FORTUNE," "TIGER," "LITTLE FOX" AND "NIGHTINGALE" TRADE IN HUDSON RIVER—CAPT. SAMUEL ARGALL, VIRGINIA BUCCANEER, DROPS ANCHOR AT MANHATTAN ISLAND; DECLARES ENGLISH SOVEREIGNTY—FOUR HOUSES AT MANHATTAN—BLOCK'S SHIP "TIGER" BURNS—CAPTAIN AND CREW SPEND WINTER OF 1613-1614 AT MANHATTAN, MARKING PERMANENT SETTLEMENT OF PRESENT NEW YORK CITY—BLOCK BUILDS NEW SHIP, THE "ONRUST" (RESTLESS), AND RETURNS TO HOLLAND IN 1614—NAME "MANHATTAN" APPLIED TO PRESENT NEW YORK CITY FROM 1609 TO 1647, WHEN STUYVESANT CHANGED IT TO NEW AMSTERDAM—1614, CHARTER GRANTED UNITED NETHERLANDS COMPANY TO TRADE IN NEW NETHERLAND 195

CHAPTER 15.

1614. FOUNDING OF FORT NASSAU AT PRESENT ALBANY—1617, TREATY OF TAWASENTHA.

1614, CAPT. HENDRICK CHRISTIAENSEN AND PARTY BUILD FORT NASSAU ON CASTLE ISLAND AT PRESENT ALBANY, SITE OF FRENCH TRADING STATION OF 1540—LOCATED ON ALBANY END OF GREAT SCHENECTADY TRAIL—FORT NASSAU A STONE STOREHOUSE WITH STOCKADE—FURNISHED WITH CANNON AND A GARRISON OF TWELVE SOLDIERS—TRADING POST OF THE UNITED NEW NETHERLANDS COMPANY—BRISK INDIA TRADE STARTED—CHRISTIAENSEN MURDERED BY AN INDIAN—THREE DUTCH TRADERS EXPLORE MOHAWK, SUSQUEHANNA AND DELAWARE RIVERS; CAPTURED BY INDIANS; RANSOMED BY CAPTAIN HENDRICKSEN IN 1616—JACOB ELKINS SUCCEEDS CHRISTIAENSEN AT FORT NASSAU—1617, FLOODS MENACE FORT NASSAU—ELKINS BUILDS NEW FORT NASSAU AT MOUTH OF TAWASENTHA—GREAT INDIAN COUNCIL AND TREATY WITH THE DUTCH AT TAWASENTHA; AN EVENT OF GREAT HISTORICAL IMPORTANCE; IMPORTANT ALLIANCE OF MOHAWKS AND OTHER IROQUOIS 201

CHAPTER 16.

1614-1621—SETTLEMENT AND DEVELOPMENT ON THE HUDSON RIVER.

1614. BEGINNING OF ACTIVE EXPLORATION AND TRADING ABOUT NEW YORK AND ALBANY—CAPTAIN BLOCK EXPLORES NEIGHBORING WATERS IN THE "ONRUST," BUILT AT MANHATTAN—EXPLORES CONNECTICUT AND THAMES RIVERS, CAPE COD AND MASSACHUSETTS COAST—MANHATTAN A TRADING CENTER—1616. CAPTAIN HENDRICKSEN FIRST EXPLORES DELAWARE BAY AND RIVER IN "ONRUST"—HENDRICKSEN RANSONS THREE DUTCH EXPLORERS (WHO WENT OUT FROM FORT NASSAU [ALBANY] IN 1614), ON SITE OF PHILADELPHIA—1618. CHARTER OF UNITED NEW NETHERLAND COMPANY EXPIRES—1618-1623. DUTCH SHIPS CONTINUE TRADING ALONG HUDSON RIVER—1620. PURITANS IN HOLLAND PROPOSE TO SETTLE IN NEW NETHERLAND. APPLICATION REFUSED, THEY SETTLE AT NEW PLYMOUTH 209

CHAPTER 17.

1621-1624 IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

1621. APPLICATION TO THE STATES GENERAL OF HOLLAND FOR A CHARTER FOR THE WEST INDIA COMPANY—JUNE 3, 1621, PATENT GRANTED THE COMPANY—FINAL ORGANIZATION, JUNE 21, 1623—ACTIVE TRADE WITH THE INDIANS AT MANHATTAN, ESOPUS AND FORT NASSAU—1622. WEST INDIA COMPANY TOOK POSSESSION OF NEW NETHERLAND. PLANS MADE FOR NEW FORT AT PRESENT ALBANY TO REPLACE FORT NASSAU—1623. NEW NETHERLAND MADE A PROVINCE OF HOLLAND AND PLACED UNDER THE CONTROL OF THE AMSTERDAM CHAMBER OF THE WEST INDIA COMPANY 215

CHAPTER 18.

1622-1623. BUILDING OF FORT ORANGE AT PRESENT ALBANY—WALLOON SETTLEMENTS.

1623. AMSTERDAM CHAMBER PROMOTES COLONIZATION OF NEW NETHERLAND—SENDS SHIP "NEW NETHERLAND" WITH 30 FAMILIES OF COLONISTS, MOSTLY WALLOONS—CAPTAIN CORNELIS JACOBSEN MAY, IN COMMAND OF SHIP, MADE FIRST DIRECTOR GENERAL OF NEW NETHERLAND—CAPTAIN MAY FORCES FRENCH SHIP, ANCHORED AT MANHATTAN, TO PUT TO SEA—COLONISTS LOCATED AT MANHATTAN, LONG ISLAND, ESOPUS (KINGSTON), FORT ORANGE (ALBANY), DELAWARE AND CONNECTICUT RIVERS—1623-1624. ADRIAEN JORIS, IN COMMAND AT FORT ORANGE, HOLDS COUNCIL WITH INDIANS—WALLOONS START FARMING OPERATIONS AT FORT ORANGE, ESOPUS AND "WAAL-BOGHT," LATER WALLABOUT BAY (PRESENT U. S. NAVY YARD) BROOKLYN. 219

CHAPTER 19.

1625-1626. IMMIGRATION OF SETTLERS FROM HOLLAND.

1625. PUBLICATION OF DE LAET'S DESCRIPTION OF NEW NETHERLAND AND JUET'S LOG BOOK OF HUDSON'S VOYAGE OF 1609—THREE VESSELS ARRIVE FROM HOLLAND CARRYING 45 DUTCH SETTLERS AND 103 HEAD OF CATTLE—WILLIAM VERHULST SUCCEEDS CAPTAIN MAY AS DIRECTOR GENERAL—DEATH OF PRINCE MAURICE, STADTHOLDER OF HOLLAND, AND JAMES I, KING OF ENGLAND—FREDERICK HENRY, SUC-

CEEDS HIS BROTHER, PRINCE MAURICE, AS STADTHOLDER AND PRINCE OF ORANGE—1626. PETER MINUIT, NEW DIRECTOR GENERAL, ARRIVES AT MANHATTAN AND SUCCEEDS VERHULST_____223

CHAPTER 20.

1626-1628. MINUIT PURCHASES MANHATTAN ISLAND FOR $24.

1626. DIRECTOR GENERAL GIVES INDIAN OWNERS 60 GUILDERS FOR PROPERTY NOW (1931) WORTH BILLIONS—PURCHASE PRICE ABOUT 11 CENTS PER ACRE—WORK BEGUN ON FORT AMSTERDAM—30 HOUSES IN 1626 AND PROBABLE POPULATION OF 200 IN MANHATTAN—HORSE MILL BUILT AND SERVES AS CHURCH—DE RASIERES' DESCRIPTION OF MANHATTAN ISLAND—SEWAN OR WAMPUM MADE ON LONG ISLAND—MINUIT SENDS THREE ENVOYS TO NEW PLYMOUTH—THE DUTCH GOVERNOR OF NEW NETHERLAND MADE FIRST MOVE TO PROMOTE FRIENDLY RELATIONS BETWEEN THE COLONIES—REV. JONAS MICHAELIUS, THE FIRST MINISTER, ARRIVES—1624-1627. TRADE OF NEW NETHERLAND DOUBLES—1628. MANHATTAN'S POPULATION 270—CONDITIONS IN THE SETTLEMENT_____227

CHAPTER 21.

1626-1630. LIFE AND EVENTS AT FORT ORANGE.

1626. MOHAWK-MOHICAN WAR—DUTCH COMMANDANT KRIECKEBEECK AND SIX DUTCH SOLDIERS OF FORT ORANGE JOIN MOHICAN WAR PARTY—MOHAWKS DEFEAT THE ALLIES—KRIECKEBEECK SLAIN—MOHAWKS FORGIVE THE DUTCH—WALLOON SETTLERS OF FORT ORANGE AND KINGSTON REMOVE TO MANHATTAN—SOLDIERS REMAIN AT FORT ORANGE—1628. MOHICANS RENEW WAR. MOHAWKS DRIVE MOHICANS FROM THEIR CASTLE AT PRESENT RENSSELAER. MOHICANS DEFEATED IN BATTLE AT UPPER RED HOOK AND DRIVEN INTO CONNECTICUT. DUTCH SETTLE PRESENT RENSSELAER—1630. MAP SHOWS TWELVE FARMS IN PRESENT CITIES OF ALBANY AND RENSSELAER_237

CHAPTER 22.

1629-1630. THE PATROON SYSTEM—RENSSELAERWYCK, PAVONIA.

1628. MINUIT DISMISSES DE RASIERES, WHO RETURNS TO HOLLAND AND PREPARES STATEMENT ON NEW NETHERLAND—PATROON SYSTEM PLANNED—1629. PROVISIONS OF THE CHARTER OF PRIVILEGES AND EXEMPTIONS—1630. KILLIAN VAN RENSSELAER PURCHASES LAND AND ESTABLISHES MANOR OF RENSSELAERWYCK—SENDS OVER DUTCH SETTLERS—ADDITIONAL PURCHASES IN 1637 INCREASES RENSSELAERWYCK TO 700,000 ACRES, COMPRISING GREAT PARTS OF PRESENT ALBANY, RENSSELAER AND COLUMBIA COUNTIES—1630. MICHAEL PAUW BUYS LAND IN PRESENT JERSEY CITY AND SETS UP THE MANOR OF PAVONIA—DISSATISFACTION AMONG AMSTERDAM DIRECTORS OVER PATROONSHIPS—VAN RENSSELAER TAKES IN PARTNERS—LATER PHILIPSE, VANDER DONCK, VAN CORTLANDT, LIVINGSTON MANORS_____243

CHAPTER 23.

1629-1633. MINUIT RECALLED—VAN TWILLER ARRIVES.

1629-1630. TRADE INCREASES—MANHATTAN AN IMPORTANT PORT ON THE ATLANTIC COAST—1631. LAUNCHING OF THE GREAT SHIP, "NEW NETH-

ERLAND," AT MANHATTAN—VESSEL OF 600 TONS, WITH 30 CANNON, ONE OF LARGEST THEN AFLOAT—"NEW NETHERLAND" CARRIES CARGO FROM MANHATTAN TO HOLLAND—1631. MINUIT RECALLED TO HOLLAND, ENDING BEST COLONIAL ADMINISTRATION OF NEW NETHERLAND—1632. WOUTER VAN TWILLER APPOINTED DIRECTOR GENERAL, REACHES MANHATTAN IN 1633—SCHOOLMASTER ROELANDSEN AND DOMINIE BOGARDUS ARRIVE—1633. DE VRIES VISITS VIRGINIA'S GOVERNOR, BEGINNING FRIENDLY INTERCOLONIAL RELATIONS_____ 253

CHAPTER 24.

1633-1637. THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW NETHERLAND UNDER VAN TWILLER.

1633. VAN TWILLER SENDS JACOB VAN CURLER TO FINISH FORT GOOD HOPE ON THE CONNECTICUT RIVER, ON THE SITE OF PRESENT HARTFORD—1633. PENNSYLVANIA SETTLED BY DUTCH—ELKINS' ENGLISH SHIP "WILLIAM" SAILS UP HUDSON RIVER DESPITE VAN TWILLER'S PROTEST—DUTCH FORCE SENT TO FORT ORANGE COMPELS ELKINS TO WITHDRAW—INDIANS RESENT ELKINS' TREATMENT—WINDMILLS ERECTED AT MANHATTAN—MUCH BUILDING THERE—CHURCH BUILT—BUILDING AT FORT ORANGE AND PAVONIA—CONDITIONS AT RENSSELAERWYCK—MILLS ERECTED—DUTCH TRADERS OF FORT ORANGE SELL ARMS TO INDIANS—1534-1635. VAN DEN BOGAERT'S JOURNEY FROM FORT ORANGE TO THE MOHAWK AND ONEIDA COUNTRY—1637. ARENT VAN CURLER COMES TO RENSSELAERWYCK—VAN RENSSELAER ADDS GREAT TRACT TO HIS MANOR—AMSTERDAM CHAMBER BUYS PAVONIA —VAN TWILLER RECALLED_____259

CHAPTER 25.

1638-1641. WILLIAM KIEFT, DIRECTOR GENERAL.

1638. WILLIAM KIEFT REPLACES WOUTER VAN TWILLER AS DIRECTOR GENERAL—FINDS CONDITIONS BAD AT MANHATTAN—TRADE DECLARED FREE IN NEW NETHERLAND—DE VRIES BRINGS COLONISTS FROM HOLLAND TO STATEN ISLAND—1639. KIEFT BUYS FROM INDIANS LARGE TRACTS OF LAND IN WESTCHESTER AND QUEENS COUNTIES_269

CHAPTER 26.

1640. VOYAGE OF DE VRIES UP THE HUDSON—MANHATTAN TO FORT ORANGE.

1640. APRIL 15, DAVID PIETERSEN DE VRIES SETS SAIL FROM MANHATTAN FOR FORT ORANGE—VISITS TAPPAN AND WESTCHESTER SHORE—PURCHASES TAPPAN FROM INDIANS—APRIL 27, REACHES ESOPUS—VISITS BRANDT PEELEN'S FERTILE FARM AT PRESENT ALBANY—DRIVEN TO THE HIGH GROUND BY SPRING FLOOD—AT FORT ORANGE—VISITS COHOES FALLS—DE VRIES CONCLUDED THAT THE HUDSON'S SHORES WERE UNSUITED FOR SETTLEMENT_____273

CHAPTER 27.

1640-1650. FORT ORANGE, BEVERWYCK AND RENSSELAERWYCK.

CONDITIONS OF COLONISTS' LIFE—LUXURIANCE OF VEGETATION AND ABUNDANCE OF GAME—A KNIFE BUYS A DEER FROM INDIANS—EUROPEAN GOODS HIGH IN PRICE—INCREASE OF IMMIGRATION FROM HOLLAND—COMFORTABLE FARMHOUSES BUILT BY PATROON—MONOPOLIES

AND PRIVILEGES OF PATROON—1642. DOMINIE MEGAPOLENSIS ARRIVES—FIRST CHURCH BUILT—FORT CRALO BUILT AT GREENBOSCH (RENSSELAER)—1643. COLONY SHIP, "ARMS OF MANHATTAN," HELD UP AT MANHATTAN—PRESENT ALBANY-RENSSELAER AREA ESCAPES RAVAGES OF WAR RAGING IN LOWER HUDSON VALLEY—1644. FORT BUILT ON BEEREN ISLAND—RENSSELAERWYCK CLAIMS STAPLE RIGHT—FATHER JOGUES ESCAPES FROM MOHAWKS AT FORT ORANGE—JOGUES' DESCRIPTION OF BEVERWYCK—1646. DEATH OF FIRST PATROON—1648. ANDRIES JANSZ, FIRST SCHOOLMASTER 277

CHAPTER 28.

1641-1643. KIEFT'S ADMINISTRATION.

TRADERS SUPPLY MOHAWKS WITH 400 GUNS—THEY SUBDUE MANY OTHER INDIAN TRIBES—DUTCH SOLDIERS ATTACK RARITAN INDIANS—1640. NEW CHARTER FOR LANDED COLONISTS—IMPORT AND EXPORT DUTIES—DE VRIES STARTS TAPPAN COLONY—WAR WITH RARITANS—1641. TROUBLE WITH WECKQUAESGEEKS—MEETING OF "TWELVE MEN"—1642. REQUESTS FOR POPULAR RIGHTS—ANNE HUTCHINSON SETTLES AT NEW ROCHELLE—ENGLISH SETTLE ON LONG ISLAND SOUND—KIEFT BUILDS STONE HOTEL—1643. STONE CHURCH BUILT IN FORT AMSTERDAM—SETTLEMENTS ON THE HUDSON RIVER 287

CHAPTER 29.

1643-1645. INDIAN WAR IN LOWER HUDSON VALLEY.

1643. INDIAN WAR PANIC IN NEW NETHERLAND AND NEW ENGLAND—MOHAWK WAR PARTY PASSES DOWN HUDSON RIVER COLLECTING TRIBUTE—RIVER INDIANS FLEE TO MANHATTAN AND PAVONIA—KIEFT ORDERS MASSACRE OF INDIAN REFUGEES BY DUTCH SOLDIERS—TERRIBLE SCENES—80 INDIAN WOMEN, CHILDREN AND MEN KILLED AT PAVONIA AND 40 AT MANHATTAN, AS THEY SLEPT—REPRISALS BY INDIANS ON OUTLYING COLONISTS—KIEFT BECOMES UNPOPULAR—DE VRIES STARTS PEACE MOVEMENT—FRESH OUTBREAKS—ASSEMBLY OF "EIGHT MEN"—ANNE HUTCHINSON KILLED AT NEW ROCHELLE—GENERAL INDIAN ATTACKS—TAPPAN DESTROYED—1644. FATHER JOGUES SAILS FOR FRANCE—EXPEDITIONS AGAINST INDIANS—TWO INDIAN CAPTIVES TORTURED TO DEATH AT MANHATTAN BEFORE KIEFT—1645. PEACE MADE AT FORT AMSTERDAM—KIEFT VISITS FORT ORANGE—CONDUCTS INDIAN PEACE COUNCIL 295

CHAPTER 30.

1644-1646. LAST YEARS OF KIEFT'S RULE.

1645. PURCHASES OF LAND ON LONG ISLAND—PETER STUYVESANT APPOINTED DIRECTOR GENERAL—VANDER DONCK LEAVES RENSSELAERWYCK; RECEIVES PATENT FOR LANDS AT PRESENT YONKERS AND BRONX—VAN SLYCK RECEIVES LAND GRANT AT CATSKILL—VAN SLYCK'S INDIAN PRINCESS—1646. BRUECKELEN MADE A VILLAGE—1646. STUYVESANT SAILS FROM HOLLAND BOUND FOR MANHATTAN 307

CHAPTER 31.

1647-1648. EARLY YEARS OF STUYVESANT'S RULE.

MAY 11, 1647. PETER STUYVESANT REACHES MANHATTAN AFTER VOYAGE OF 5½ MONTHS FROM HOLLAND—CHANGES NAME OF MANHATTAN

TO NEW AMSTERDAM—STUYVESANT'S DESPOTIC RULE CLASHES WITH DEMAND FOR POPULAR RIGHTS—TRIAL OF KUYTER AND MELYN, FIRST ACT IN STRUGGLE FOR LIBERTY IN NEW YORK STATE—BOTH MEN BANISHED; SAIL ON SHIP WITH KIEFT, WHO IS DROWNED IN SHIPWRECK—ASSEMBLY OF NINE MEN CHOSEN—STUYVESANT ATTEMPTS TO OPEN FRIENDLY RELATIONS WITH ADJACENT COLONIES—1648. TROUBLE WITH RENSSELAERWYCK—STUYVESANT VISITS FORT ORANGE—CONFERS WITH MOHAWKS—STUYVESANT'S DESPOTISM MAKES HIM UNPOPULAR—HE CONFISCATES VESSELS AND DRIVES MARITIME COMMERCE FROM NEW AMSTERDAM 313

CHAPTER 32.

1649-1652. THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW NETHERLAND UNDER STUYVESANT.

ENGLISH COLONISTS SIDE WITH STUYVESANT IN CONTROVERSY OVER POPULAR RIGHTS; DUTCH FOR LIBERTY—VANDER DONCK, FOUNDER OF YONKERS, IMPRISONED—MELYN RETURNS—STUYVESANT ORDERED TO APPEAR BEFORE STATES GENERAL—DOMINE MEGAPOLENSIS SETTLES AT MANHATTAN—DELEGATES OF NINE MEN PRESENT THEIR PROTEST, "VERTOOGH VAN NIEUW NEDERLANDT," TO STATES GENERAL, OCTOBER 13, 1649—1650. LONG ISLAND DIVIDED BETWEEN ENGLISH AND DUTCH—SCHOOLHOUSE BUILT AT BEVERWYCK (ALBANY); ANDRIES JANSEN, FIRST SCHOOLMASTER—STUYVESANT CLASHES WITH RENSSELAERWYCK AUTHORITIES—1650. PEACE COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS—"BOSCH LOOPERS" SUPPRESSED—1651. DYCKMAN VICE DIRECTOR AT FORT ORANGE (ALBANY)—PEOPLE OF RENSSELAERWYCK TAKE COLONIAL OATH OF ALLEGIANCE—TROUBLE AT BEVERWYCK, WHICH STUYVESANT ANNEXES TO FORT ORANGE—1652. CAPTAIN THOMAS CHAMBERS HEADS PARTY OF DUTCH PIONEERS WHO SETTLE ESOPUS (KINGSTON) 321

CHAPTER 33.

1652-1658—NEW AMSTERDAM MADE A CITY, 1652.

1652, AMSTERDAM CHAMBER OF WEST INDIA COMPANY GRANTS POPULAR DEMAND FOR BURGHER GOVERNMENT AND MAKES NEW AMSTERDAM A CITY—VAN TIENHOVEN FIRST CITY SCHOUT (MAYOR)—1653, FATHER PONCET, JESUIT PRIEST, KINDLY TREATED AT BEVERWYCK (ALBANY)—FIRST "LANDTDAG" OR PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY MEETS IN NEW AMSTERDAM—1654, END OF DUTCH FORT AT HARTFORD AND OF DUTCH EMPIRE ON CONNECTICUT RIVER—STUYVESANT SAILS FOR WEST INDIES TO PROMOTE TRADE—1655, DE DECKER SUCCEEDS DYCKMAN AS VICE DIRECTOR AT FORT ORANGE (ALBANY)—STUYVESANT CONQUERS SWEDES ON DELAWARE RIVER—VAN DYCK MURDERS A SQUAW—INDIANS ATTACK NEW AMSTERDAM AND KILL VAN DYCK—DRIVEN FROM CITY—ATTACK PAVONIA AND HOBOKEN—100 DUTCH KILLED—1655, FORT ORANGE (ALBANY) OFFICIALS RENEW ALLIANCE WITH MOHAWKS—1656, NEW AMSTERDAM HAS 120 HOUSES AND 1,000 PEOPLE—NEW CHURCH STARTED AT BEVERWYCK (ALBANY)—1658, NEW HAERLEM MADE A VILLAGE 329

CHAPTER 34.

1658-1660. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY—INDIAN WAR AT ESOPUS.

1658, MAY 30, STUYVESANT HOLDS INDIAN COUNCIL AT ESOPUS (KING-

STON)—NEW LOCATION OF ESOPUS VILLAGE—GARRISONED BY 24 DUTCH SOLDIERS—JEREMIAS VAN RENSSELAER, NEW DIRECTOR OF RENSSELAERWYCK (1658-1674)—OCTOBER 15, 1658, STUYVESANT AT ESOPUS (KINGSTON)—MASSACHUSETTS "GRANTS" LAND OPPOSITE FORT ORANGE (ALBANY)—1659, NEW NETHERLAND RECEIVES ENLARGED TRADING RIGHTS—LATIN SCHOOL ESTABLISHED AT NEW AMSTERDAM—DOMINE BLOM PREACHES AT ESOPUS—ESOPUS SETTLERS MURDER INDIANS—THIRTEEN WHITES CAPTURED AND TEN BURNED AT STAKE BY INDIANS—STUYVESANT AND FORCE REACH ESOPUS—INDIANS FLEE—VAN CURLER DIRECTS DUTCH-MOHAWK COUNCIL AT OSSERUENON—DUTCH CAPTURE ESOPUS INDIAN STRONGHOLDS—1660, PEACE COUNCIL AT ESOPUS—INDIANS CEDE PRESENT KINGSTON AREA—ESOPUS MADE A VILLAGE—STUYVESANT HOLDS COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS AT FORT ORANGE—CHURCH CONGREGATION OF 200 AT BEVERWYCK 339

CHAPTER 35.

1660-1664. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY—LAST YEARS OF NEW NETHERLAND AND DUTCH DOMINION.

1660. INTERCOLONIAL TREATY NEGOTIATED BY STUYVESANT BETWEEN NEW NETHERLAND AND VIRGINIA—MAY 16, 1661. ESOPUS CHARTERED AS "WILTWYCK"—JUNE 18, 1661. ARENT VAN CURLER APPLIES TO STUYVESANT FOR PERMISSION TO SETTLE SCHENECTADY—JULY 27, 1661. MOHAWKS CONVEY SCHENECTADY LANDS, ON MOHAWK RIVER, TO VAN CURLER—SETTLEMENT AND BUILDING OF SCHENECTADY—SEPTEMBER 15, 1661. BERGEN MADE A VILLAGE—1661. DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH BUILT AT ESOPUS—1663. SEVERE EARTHQUAKE IN HUDSON AND ST. LAWRENCE VALLEYS AND NEW NETHERLAND—SMALLPOX OUTBREAK AT BEVERWYCK; 1,000 IROQUOIS DIE OF EPIDEMIC—JUNE 7, 1663. INDIANS ATTACK ESOPUS; 21 KILLED, 45 CAPTURED—SETTLERS FLEE TO FORT ORANGE (ALBANY) AND GREENBOSCH (RENSSELAER)—DUTCH SOLDIERS FROM NEW AMSTERDAM DEFEAT INDIANS AND BURN THEIR TOWNS—STUYVESANT VISITS BOSTON AND PROPOSES FREE INTERCOLONIAL TRADE BETWEEN NEW NETHERLAND AND UNITED COLONIES OF NEW ENGLAND—APRIL 10, 1664. PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY CONVENES AT NEW AMSTERDAM—MAY 15, 1664. STUYVESANT MAKES PEACE TREATY WITH ESOPUS INDIANS—WILLIAM BEECKMAN MADE COMMISSARY OF ESOPUS REGION, BETWEEN CATSKILL AND HIGHLANDS—1664. MOHAWK-MOHICAN WAR—MAJOR STAATS' HOUSE, AT STOCKPORT LANDING, BURNED; REBUILT 351

CHAPTER 36.

1664. ENGLISH CONQUER NEW NETHERLAND.

ENGLAND PLANS CONQUEST—EXPEDITION SENT TO HUDSON RIVER UNDER COLONEL RICHARD NICOLLS—ANCHORS IN NARROWS, AUGUST 29, 1664—SURRENDER OF NEW AMSTERDAM DEMANDED—PEOPLE FOR CAPITULATION—TERMS ARRANGED AT STUYVESANT'S BOUWERY, SEPTEMBER 6; RATIFIED, SEPTEMBER 8, 1664, WHEN BRITISH SOLDIERS TAKE POSSESSION OF FORT AMSTERDAM AND NEW AMSTERDAM—FORT ORANGE (ALBANY) SURRENDERS ON SEPTEMBER 20, 1664—ENGLISH HOLD TREATY COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS AND SENECAS AT FORT ORANGE—BRITISH OCCUPY ESOPUS (KINGSTON)—STUYVESANT DEFENDS THE SURRENDER BEFORE DIRECTORS OF THE WEST INDIA COMPANY IN HOLLAND—RETURNS TO NEW YORK AND RETIRES TO HIS BOUWERY 363

CHAPTER 37.

1664-1668. NEW NETHERLAND BECOMES NEW YORK.

NAME OF NEW AMSTERDAM CHANGED TO NEW YORK, FORT AMSTERDAM TO FORT JAMES, FORT ORANGE TO FORT ALBANY—DUTCH LOCAL OFFICERS RETAINED—1665, THOMAS WILLETT FIRST MAYOR OF NEW YORK CITY UNDER ENGLISH RULE—1665, MOHAWK-MOHICAN WAR—COUNCIL WITH ESOPUS INDIANS AT FORT JAMES, FROM WHOM GOVERNOR NICOLLS PURCHASES LARGE SECTION OF ULSTER COUNTY—JANUARY, 1666, FRENCH RAIDERS, CARED FOR AT SCHENECTADY—SEPTEMBER, 1666, DE TRACY, WITH 1,500 FRENCH AND CANADIAN INDIANS, BURNS MOHAWK CASTLES—1667, VAN CURLER, FOUNDER OF SCHENECTADY, DROWNED—TROUBLE BETWEEN CITIZENS OF ESOPUS AND ALBANY AND BRITISH SOLDIERS OF GARRISONS—COLONEL LOVELACE SUPERSEDES COLONEL NICOLLS AS GOVERNOR_____371

CHAPTER 38.

1668-1673. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND PROVINCE OF NEW YORK.

1668, EX-GOVERNOR NICOLLS AND GOVERNOR LOVELACE VISIT ALBANY TO REGULATE INDIAN TRADE—AT ESOPUS, GOVERNOR NICOLLS DISMISSES BRITISH SOLDIERS AND PUTS BURGHER GUARD (MILITIA) ON DUTY—SEPTEMBER 25, 1669, NAME OF VILLAGE OF ESOPUS CHANGED TO KINGSTON—MOHAWKS DEFEAT MOHICANS ON MOHAWK RIVER—1671, GOVERNOR LOVELACE PRESIDES OVER PEACE COUNCIL OF MOHAWKS AND MOHICANS AT ALBANY—1672, DEATH OF STUYVESANT—ENGLISH AND FRENCH KINGS PLAN WAR ON DUTCH—COURT ESTABLISHED AT SCHENECTADY—1673, POSTAL ROUTE OPENED BETWEEN NEW YORK AND BOSTON_____377

CHAPTER 39.

1673-1674. DUTCH REOCCUPY NEW YORK.

1673, AUGUST 6, DUTCH FLEET ARRIVES OFF SANDY HOOK—AUGUST 9, DUTCH SHIPS BOMBARD FORT JAMES AND 1,000 DUTCH SOLDIERS ADVANCE TO ATTACK—CAPTAIN MANNING, BRITISH COMMANDER, SURRENDERS FORT AND CITY—1673, AUGUST 15, ALBANY RETAKEN BY DUTCH—CAPTAIN ANTHONY COLVE MADE GOVERNOR GENERAL, REPRESENTING DUTCH REPUBLIC— NAME OF NEW YORK PROVINCE CHANGED TO NEW NETHERLAND, NEW YORK CITY TO NEW ORANGE, FORT JAMES TO FORT WILLEM HENDRICK, ALBANY TO WILLEMSTADT, FORT ALBANY TO FORT NASSAU, KINGSTON TO SWANENBURG—1674, NOVEMBER 10, ENGLISH REOCCUPY NEW YORK CITY AND PROVINCE_383

CHAPTER 40.

1674-1682. ENGLISH REOCCUPATION OF HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW YORK PROVINCE.

1674, ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR ANDROS—OPPOSED TO LAND GRABBING BY CONNECTICUT—1675, ANDROS VISITS THE MOHAWK RIVER AND MOHAWK INDIAN CASTLES—AUGUST 30, 1675, RECEIVED AT TIONNONTOGEN, THE MOHAWK CAPITAL—ORGANIZES BOARD OF INDIAN AFFAIRS AT ALBANY—1676, ANDROS HAS NEW FORT BUILT AT ALBANY—GOVERNOR VISITS ALBANY AND GOES UP HUDSON TO SCHAGHTI-

COKE—1677, GOVERNOR ANDROS HOLDS COUNCIL AT ALBANY BETWEEN MOHAWKS AND MASSACHUSETTS AND CONNECTICUT COMMISSIONERS —GREENHALGH EXPLORES IROQUOIS COUNTRY—ANDROS DECLARES ENGLISH SOVEREIGNTY OVER IROQUOIS—SETTLEMENT OF NEW PALTZ BY FRENCH HUGUENOTS AND GERMANS—SENATE HOUSE BUILT AT KINGSTON—ANDROS IN ENGLAND, DESCRIBES NEW YORK PROVINCE— 1680, FIRST LABOR UNION FAILED—1680, GOVERNOR ANDROS TAKES OVER RULE OF NEW JERSEY—1682, FREDERICK PHILIPSE BUILDS MANOR HOUSES AT PRESENT YONKERS AND NORTH TARRYTOWN— WILLIAM PENN STOPS IN NEW YORK 389

CHAPTER 41.

1683-1686. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

1683, GOVERNOR DONGAN APPOINTS COUNCIL AND CALLS PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY—DONGAN VISITS ALBANY AND PREVENTS SALE OF SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY BY IROQUOIS TO WILLIAM PENN—OCTOBER 17, 1783, NEW YORK GENERAL ASSEMBLY MEETS AT NEW YORK CITY— TWELVE COUNTIES CREATED: NEW YORK, WESTCHESTER, DUTCHESS, ALBANY, ORANGE, ULSTER, RICHMOND, KINGS, QUEENS, SUFFOLK, CORNWALL, DUKE'S—NEW YORK CITY DIVIDED INTO SIX WARDS— 1684, GOVERNOR DONGAN OF NEW YORK, AND LORD EFFINGHAM, GOVERNOR OF VIRGINIA, HOLD COUNCIL WITH FIVE NATIONS AT ALBANY—BOUNDARY LINE SETTLED BETWEEN NEW YORK AND CONNECTICUT—1685, DONGAN ESTABLISHES POST OFFICE IN NEW YORK CITY—1686, GOVERNOR DONGAN SIGNS NEW CITY CHARTER FOR NEW YORK—TAPPAN PATENT GRANTED TO 16 DUTCH FARMERS 395

CHAPTER 42.

1686. ALBANY MADE A CITY.

1685. GOVERNOR DONGAN GRANTS NEW PATENT TO RENSSELAERWYCK PROPRIETORS—JULY 22, 1686. DONGAN GRANTS CITY CHARTER TO ALBANY—PETER SCHUYLER, FIRST MAYOR—ALBANY OF 1686—LIVINGSTON PATENT GRANTED 403

CHAPTER 43.

1686-1691. LEISLER'S REBELLION.

1685-1686. WESTERN TRADING EXPEDITIONS, UNDER CAPTAIN ROSEBOOM, SET OUT FROM ALBANY—1686. KING JAMES REPEALS CHARTER OF LIBERTIES—1686. POPULATION OF NEW YORK PROVINCE, 18,000—1687. GOVERNOR DONGAN, WITH MILITARY FORCE, SPENDS WINTER IN ALBANY—1688. ANDROS HOLDS COUNCIL WITH FIVE NATIONS AT ALBANY—WILLIAM OF ORANGE BECOMES KING OF ENGLAND—1689. REVOLUTION AT BOSTON—ANDROS IMPRISONED—ANTI-CATHOLIC AGITATION—JUNE 3, 1689, CITY MILITIA, UNDER LEISLER, SEIZE FORT JAMES, NEW YORK CITY—BEGINNING OF LEISLER'S REBELLION—ANTI-LEISLERIANS FLEE TO ALBANY—"ARISTOCRATS" VERSUS "DEMOCRATS"—1689. COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS AT ALBANY—PEOPLE OF ALBANY AND ULSTER COUNTIES OPPOSE LEISLER—"ALBANY CONVENTION"—IROQUOIS ARMY ATTACKS FRENCH SETTLEMENTS AROUND MONTREAL—FEBRUARY 8, 1690. MASSACRE AT SCHENECTADY AND TOWN DESTROYED BY FRENCH-INDIAN RAIDERS—ALBANY MILITIA AND MOHAWKS PURSUE ENEMY—ALBANY CONVENTION PLANS AT-

TACK ON CANADA—LEISLER SENDS EXPEDITION WHICH CAPTURES ALBANY AND KINGSTON—MAY 1, 1690. FIRST COLONIAL CONGRESS, CALLED BY LEISLER, MEETS AT NEW YORK—CANADIAN EXPEDITION FAILS—1690. FRENCH HUGUENOT COLONY AT NEW ROCHELLE—1691. LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR INGOLDSBY ARRIVES—LEISLER RESISTS—GOVERNOR SLOUGHTER ARRIVES—LEISLER AND AIDS ARRESTED—PETITIONS FOR PARDON—MAY 16, 1691. LEISLER AND MILBORNE HUNG—NEW YORK AN INDEPENDENT NATION FOR TWO YEARS----------407

CHAPTER 44.

1690-1700. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND PROVINCE OF NEW YORK.

1690. POUGHKEEPSIE SETTLED BY DUTCH—1691. GOVERNOR SLOUGHTER VISITS ALBANY AND SCHENECTADY—FINDS DISTRICT IN RUINS BECAUSE OF WAR WITH FRENCH—150 FARMS DESERTED AND DESTROYED—INGOLDSBY SUCCEEDS SLOUGHTER, ON LATTER'S DEATH—1692. GOVERNOR FLETCHER MAKES MAJOR PETER SCHUYLER OF ALBANY, A CHIEF ADVISER—FEBRUARY 6, 1693. FRENCH-INDIAN EXPEDITION DESTROYS THE FOUR MOHAWK CASTLES—FEBRUARY 13. MAJOR SCHUYLER, WITH 237 MILITIA AND 290 IROQUOIS, STARTS PURSUIT—FEBRUARY 17. EXPEDITION IN BATTLE WITH RAIDERS NEAR PRESENT SARATOGA SPRINGS—ENEMY FLEES, FOLLOWING CONFLICT—MOHAWK SURVIVORS FORM TOWN OF OGSADAGA AT TRIBES HILL—1693. WILLIAM BRADFORD SETS UP FIRST PRINTING PRESS IN NEW YORK—MANOR OF PHILIPSBURG CREATED—PIRACY—1698. GOVERNOR BELLOMONT ARRIVES—GREAT FUNERAL OF LEISLER AND MILBORNE—PEACE OF RYSWYCK—1700. GOVERNOR BELLOMONT HOLDS COUNCIL WITH FIVE NATIONS AT ALBANY----------419

CHAPTER 45.

1701-1713. QUEEN ANNE'S WAR IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

1702. LORD CORNBURY, NEW YORK'S WORST GOVERNOR, ARRIVES—FIRST FREE SCHOOL ESTABLISHED IN NEW YORK CITY—1703. EPIDEMIC OF YELLOW FEVER—POPULATION GROWTH—1704. QUEEN'S FORT BUILT AT SCHENECTADY—1708. PALATINE GERMANS SETTLE NEWBURGH—1709. CANADIAN INVASION PLANNED—FORT NICHOLSON BUILT AT PRESENT FORT EDWARD—CANADIAN EXPEDITION FAILS—MAJOR SCHUYLER TAKES FIVE MOHAWK CHIEFS TO ENGLAND—1710. PALATINE GERMAN SETTLEMENTS OF HUDSON—1711. CANADIAN EXPEDITION MARCHES FROM ALBANY TO LAKE CHAMPLAIN—RETURNS BECAUSE OF BRITISH NAVAL FAILURE—FORT HUNTER BUILT—1713. DUTCH FARMERS SETTLE TIVOLI AND BARRYTOWN----------427

CHAPTER 46.

1710. PALATINE GERMAN SETTLEMENT IN MIDDLE HUDSON VALLEY.

1710. GOVERNOR HUNTER SUCCEEDS LOVELACE—ARRIVES AT NEW YORK CITY WITH 3,000 PALATINE GERMANS—SETTLED ON LIVINGSTON'S MANOR—ENGAGED IN MAKING "NAVAL STORES"—1711. 105 PALATINES JOIN NICHOLSON'S CANADIAN EXPEDITION—PALATINES DISSATISFIED—1712. MANY REMOVE TO SCHOHARIE VALLEY----------435

CHAPTER 47.

1713-1735. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW YORK PROVINCE.

1713-1719, BATTLE BETWEEN GOVERNOR HUNTER AND THE LIBERAL ASSEMBLY—1720, GOVERNOR WILLIAM BURNET ARRIVES—1722, FORT OSWEGO BUILT—1725, NEW YORK GAZETTE, FIRST PROVINCIAL NEWSPAPER, PUBLISHED BY WILLIAM BRADFORD—1727, MYNDERTSE WINS FREEDOM OF TRADE SUIT—MOHAWK RIVER TRAFFIC—1728, GOVERNOR MONTGOMERY—1730, STAGE LINE, NEW YORK TO PHILADELPHIA—1731, FIRST NEW YORK CITY FIRE DEPARTMENT—FIRST NEW YORK CITY PUBLIC LIBRARY—LYDIUS SETTLES AT FORT EDWARD—1732, GOVERNOR WILLIAM COSBY—1734, ZENGER ACQUITTED OF LIBEL—VICTORY FOR FREEDOM OF THE PRESS—1735, HYDE PARK SECTION SETTLED BY DUTCH 441

CHAPTER 48.

1736. COLONIAL LIFE IN THE HUDSON VALLEY, NEW YORK AND ALBANY.

LOSSING'S PICTURE OF THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK—DETERRENTS TO GROWTH—BAD GOVERNORS AND GREAT LAND GRANTS—PREDOMINANCE OF HOLLAND BLOOD AND DUTCH LANGUAGE—MIXED POPULATION—MANNERS AND DRESS—EQUALITY—EDUCATION AT LOW STATE—RELIGIOUS FREEDOM—MRS. BRANT'S PICTURE OF DUTCH LIFE IN ALBANY—THE MILD CONDITIONS OF SLAVERY 447

CHAPTER 49.

1736-1754. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW YORK PROVINCE—KING GEORGE'S WAR.

1736. GEORGE CLARKE, LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR—WHIG AND TORY STRUGGLE—1738. WILLIAM JOHNSON LOCATES AT PRESENT AMSTERDAM ON MOHAWK RIVER—1741. "NEGRO PLOT" IN NEW YORK CITY—18 NEGROES HANGED IN WAVE OF HYSTERIA—1741. POPULATION OF NEW YORK CITY, 12,000—1743. SIR GEORGE CLINTON, GOVERNOR—1744-1748. KING GEORGE'S WAR—1745. FRENCH-INDIAN RAID DESOLATES SETTLEMENTS OF PRESENT SARATAGO AND WASHINGTON COUNTIES—SARATOGA SETTLEMENT DESTROYED—1748. DEFEAT OF SCHENECTADY MILITIA IN BEUKENDAAL BATTLE—1750. HASBROUCK HOUSE (WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS) BUILT AT NEWBURGH—1752. FIRST MERCHANTS' EXCHANGE BUILT AT NEW YORK—1753. KINGS (LATER COLUMBIA) COLLEGE OPENED—1754. ALBANY POST ROAD BUILT THROUGH HIGHLANDS 451

CHAPTER 50.

1754. THE ALBANY CONVENTION.

TWENTY-FIVE DELEGATES FROM SEVEN AMERICAN COLONIES, JUNE 29, 1754, MET TO CONSIDER COLONIAL CONFEDERACY—RENEW TREATIES WITH SIX NATIONS—BENJAMIN FRANKLIN PRESENTS PLAN OF COLONIAL UNION—ADOPTED BY THE CONVENTION—REJECTED BY PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLIES AND IMPERIAL BOARD OF TRADE—THE "ALBANY PLAN" AND ITS EFFECT ON AMERICAN NATIONAL UNITY—1756 POPULATION FIGURES 459

CHAPTER 51.

1755. FRENCH-INDIAN WAR—BATTLE OF LAKE GEORGE.

BEGINNINGS OF THE GREAT CONFLICT—1755, BRITISH AMERICAN EXPEDITIONS PLANNED AGAINST FORT DUQUESNE, LAKE ONTARIO FRENCH FORTS AND CROWN POINT—1755, FORT TICONDEROGA BUILT BY FRENCH—JOHNSON GUARDS HUDSON VALLEY FRONTIER—COMMISSIONED MAJOR GENERAL AND PLACED IN COMMAND OF COLONIAL MILITIA FOR CAPTURE OF CROWN POINT—MADE COLONIAL COMMISSIONER OF INDIAN AFFAIRS—SHIRLEY AND JOHNSON CONFLICT—GENERAL LYMAN BUILDS FORT EDWARD—JOHNSON REACHES LAKE ST. SACRAMENT, AUGUST 28—RENAMES IT LAKE GEORGE, SEPTEMBER 1, 1755—DIESKAU, AT HEAD OF FRENCH-CANADIAN-INDIAN FORCE, DEFEATS AMERICAN-INDIAN SCOUTING PARTY—ENEMY DECISIVELY DEFEATED, SEPTEMBER 8, 1755—JOHNSON WOUNDED—GENERAL LYMAN COMMANDS—FORT WILLIAM HENRY BUILT—JOHNSON MADE BARONET AND PRESENTED £5,000 463

CHAPTER 52.

1756-1759. FRENCH-INDIAN WAR.

1756, 1757, 1758, CHARACTERIZED BY FAILURES OF PLANS AND INEFFICIENCY OF BRITISH COMMANDERS—MASSACRES AND RAIDS ON THE MOHAWK—JULY, 1757, MONTCALM, WITH ARMY OF 8,000 FRENCH, CANADIANS AND INDIANS BESIEGES FORT WILLIAM HENRY—FORT SURRENDERED, AUGUST 9, 1757—INDIANS MURDER MANY OF GARRISON AND NON-COMBATANTS—GENERAL WEBB'S INEFFICIENCY—1758, EXPEDITION AGAINST FORT TICONDEROGA UNDER GENERAL ABERCROMBIE—AMHERST BECOMES BRITISH COMMANDER IN AMERICA—1759, AMHERST PLANS CONQUEST OF CANADA—WOLFE TAKES QUEBEC—JOHNSON CAPTURES FORT NIAGARA—AMHERST TAKES FORT NIAGARA AND CROWN POINT 469

CHAPTER 53.

1760. GENERAL AMHERST, WITH ARMY OF 10,000, MOVES FROM ALBANY, THROUGH MOHAWK VALLEY TO CONQUEST OF CANADA.

1760. AMHERST MOBILIZES ARMY AT ALBANY, SCHENECTADY AND SCOTIA—FORCE OF 6,000 AMERICAN MILITIA AND 4,000 BRITISH REGULARS—BRITISH BEATEN BEFORE QUEBEC—AMHERST'S ARMY STARTS FROM THE CAMP AT SCOTIA—BOATS AND SUPPLIES GO WEST OVER MOHAWK RIVER—JUNE 22, 1760. GENERAL AMHERST AND STAFF LEAVE SCOTIA—AUGUST 10, ARMY LEAVES OSWEGO IN 400 BOATS—MURRAY'S ARMY, FROM QUEBEC, HAVILAND'S FORCE, FROM CROWN POINT, AND ROLLO'S TROOPS, FROM LOUISBURG, CONVERGE ON MONTREAL—SEPTEMBER 6, AMHERST'S ARMY ARRIVES, MAKING A TOTAL AMERICAN-BRITISH FORCE OF 17,000—SEPTEMBER 8, 1760, MONTREAL SURRENDERS AND BRITISH-AMERICAN CONQUEST OF CANADA IS COMPLETE 475

CHAPTER 54.

1760-1774. CAUSES AND BEGINNINGS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

PERIOD OF GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT FOLLOWING THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR—ENFORCEMENT OF TRADE LAWS STARTS PUBLIC OPPO-

SITION—TORY AND WHIG SENTIMENTS DIVIDE HUDSON VALLEY FAMILIES—1765. STAMP ACT BECOMES A LAW—CONGRESS OF NINE COLONIES MEETS IN NEW YORK CITY—POPULAR MEETINGS—MOB RIOTS IN NEW YORK ON STAMP ACT DAY—JUNE 4, 1766. SONS OF LIBERTY ERECT LIBERTY POLE IN NEW YORK CITY—1766. SONS OF LIBERTY ORGANIZE IN ALBANY—BRITISH SOLDIERS CUT DOWN LIBERTY POLE—JANUARY 16, 1770. "BATTLE OF GOLDEN HILL" IN NEW YORK CITY BETWEEN LIBERTY BOYS AND BRITISH SOLDIERS—MINUTE MEN ORGANIZE—PATRIOTIC COMMITTEES FORMED 1771—NEW YORK POPULATION, 168,007—1772. TRYON COUNTY FORMED—1774. TEA, ON BOARD THE SHIP, "LONDON," THROWN INTO NEW YORK HARBOR BY PATRIOTS—FIRST CONTINENTAL CONGRESS MEETS IN PHILADELPHIA—DEATH OF SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON—DUTCH DOMINATE NEW YORK PROVINCE ---------- 479

CHAPTER 55.

1769. A VOYAGE UP THE HUDSON—NEW YORK TO ALBANY.

WILLIAM SMITH'S JOURNAL OF HIS TRIP FROM BURLINGTON, NEW JERSEY, TO OTEGO, BY WAY OF THE HUDSON, MOHAWK AND SUSQUEHANNA RIVERS—MAY 4, 1769. TAKES PASSAGE IN A SLOOP FOR ALBANY—VISITS PHILIPSE MANOR—SLOOP FREIGHT RATES, ALBANY TO NEW YORK—AGROUND IN THE HIGHLANDS—GOES ASHORE NEAR BEACON—STRIKES ROUGH WATER—STOPS AT RONDOUT CREEK—OBSERVATIONS ON HUDSON RIVER AGRICULTURE—AT CATSKILL—A NEW HUDSON RIVER ISLAND—CANOES ARE COMMON CRAFT—MAY 10. ARRIVES AT AND INSPECTS ALBANY, A TOWN OF 500 HOUSES—REMARKS THE DUTCH STYLE OF ARCHITECTURE AND RECOUNTS SIMILAR CHARACTERISTICS OF ALBANY AND NEW YORK—MAY 11. LEAVES ALBANY BY WAGON FOR SCHENECTADY, VISITING COHOES FALLS ON THE WAY 487

CHAPTER 56.

1775. FIRST YEAR OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

JANUARY 10, 1775. NEW YORK PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY CONVENES WITH TORIES IN GREAT STRENGTH—MAJORITY OF MOHAWKS MIGRATE TO CANADA WITH COLONEL GUY JOHNSON—MAY 22, 1775. PATRIOT ASSEMBLY CONVENED IN NEW YORK—NEWS OF BATTLES OF LEXINGTON AND CONCORD REACHES NEW YORK—SONS OF LIBERTY SEIZE BRITISH VESSELS AND THE ARSENAL AND CLOSE NEW YORK CUSTOMS HOUSE—PATRIOT COMMITTEE OF 100 TAKES OVER CITY GOVERNMENT—MAY 10, 1775. AMERICANS CAPTURE FORT TICONDEROGA—MAY 12. CROWN POINT CAPTURED—JUNE 25. GENERAL WASHINGTON AND BRITISH GOVERNOR TRYON GIVEN SEPARATE RECEPTIONS IN NEW YORK—WASHINGTON CONFERS WITH PROVINCIAL CONGRESS—FOUR NEW YORK LINE REGIMENTS FORMED—COLONEL WILLETT AND LIBERTY BOYS PREVENT REMOVAL OF BRITISH ARMS FROM NEW YORK—BRITISH CANNON REMOVED FROM NEW YORK TO AMERICAN FORTS IN THE HIGHLANDS—AUGUST 23, 1775. AMERICAN AND BRITISH SOLDIERS SKIRMISH IN NEW YORK—BRITISH SHIP "ASIA" FIRES INTO CITY—NEW YORK PROVINCE MADE THE NORTHERN DEPARTMENT OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY ARMY—FIRST AMERICAN NAVY ASSEMBLES AT CROWN POINT—GENERAL SCHUYLER, AT ALBANY, ORGANIZES CANADIAN EXPEDITION OF NEW YORK TROOPS—MONTGOM-

ERY TAKES COMMAND ON SCHUYLER'S ILLNESS—MONTREAL CAPTURED—DECEMBER 31, 1775. AMERICANS REPULSED IN NIGHT ATTACK ON QUEBEC—MONTGOMERY KILLED 499

CHAPTER 57.

1776. SECOND YEAR OF REVOLUTION IN HUDSON VALLEY.

1776, JANUARY. GENERAL SCHUYLER, WITH 2,000 ALBANY COUNTY MILITIA, MARCHES FROM ALBANY TO JOHNSTOWN AND DISARMS SIR JOHN JOHNSON'S TORY FOLLOWERS—PAINE ADVOCATES AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE IN "COMMON SENSE"—JULY 4. DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE—JULY 9. DECLARATION READ BEFORE GENERAL WASHINGTON IN NEW YORK CITY—BRITISH FORCE LANDS ON STATEN ISLAND—NEW YORK PROVINCIAL CONGRESS MOVES TO WHITE PLAINS WHERE, ON JULY 9, 1776, IT APPROVES DECLARATION AND NAMES NEW YORK A "STATE"—CONGRESSIONAL MISSION TO CANADA BY WAY OF HUDSON RIVER AND LAKE CHAMPLAIN—HESSIANS ARRIVE AT QUEBEC—AMERICAN TROOPS DRIVEN FROM CANADA—JOHNSON AND FOLLOWERS FLEE TO CANADA—AUGUST 27, 1776. BRITISH VICTORY ON LONG ISLAND—BRITISH REOCCUPY NEW YORK—OCTOBER 28. BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS—NOVEMBER 16. BRITISH CAPTURE FORT WASHINGTON—AMERICAN FLEET DEFEATED ON LAKE CHAMPLAIN—CONTINENTAL SHIPYARD AT POUGHKEEPSIE—STATE ASSEMBLY MOVES TO KINGSTON—BRITISH PRISON SHIPS IN NEW YORK HARBOR 507

ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME I

Nelson Greene ---- *Frontispiece*
New York State Capitol, Albany ---- Facing Page 1
The Hudson River Counties of New York State, Map of ---- 5
Looking Toward the Narrows ---- 9
The Upper Hudson Near Mechanicville ---- 9
The Hudson River at Anthony's Nose ---- 13
The Hudson at the City of Hudson ---- 13
"Indian Head" on the Palisades of the Hudson ---- 21
Fort Lee Bridge, New York City ---- 21
The Lookout on the Palisades ---- 31
The Palisades From Hastings ---- 31
The Lookout on the Palisades ---- 35
An Old Mansion at Sneden's Landing ---- 35
The Washington Irving Memorial at Irvington ---- 41
The Old Erie Pier, Piermont ---- 41
Haring House Cannonball ---- 45
Haring House, Piermont ---- 45
Van Cortlandt Manor House, on the Croton River ---- 49
Salisbury House, Nyack ---- 49
Sleepy Hollow Church, North Tarrytown ---- 53
The Castle, Irvington ---- 53
World War Ships in Peekskill Bay ---- 59
In Peekskill's Business Section ---- 59
Bear Mountain and the Inn ---- 65
Bear Mountain, Iona Island, Bear Mountain Bridge and Anthony's Nose ---- 65
Target Hill and Storm King ---- 69
High Spot on Storm King Highway ---- 69
Storm King Mountain and Highway ---- 73
Northern Gateway of the Highlands ---- 73
Hessian Pond, Bear Mountain Park ---- 77
First Reformed Dutch Church, Fishkill, Erected in 1765 ---- 81
Wappingers Falls—At the Public Square ---- 85
Home of Governor Franklin D. Roosevelt, Hyde Park ---- 89
"Rosemount," Esopus ---- 89
Monument to Governor George Clinton in the Dutch Reformed Church Graveyard, Kingston ---- 93
Warren Street, Hudson ---- 99
Lindenwald, Home of President Martin Van Buren, Located Two Miles Southeast of Kinderhook ---- 103
Former Van Rensselaer Manor House, Albany, Rebuilt at Williams College, Williamstown, Massachusetts ---- 115
General Schuyler Mansion, Albany ---- 115
New State Office Building, Albany ---- 119
Education Building, Albany ---- 123
One of the Most Picturesque Hudson River Homes at Grandview-on-Hudson ---- 130
The Hudson River at Bemis Heights ---- 135
High Rock Spring, as It Appeared a Century Ago ---- 147

General Grant Cottage, Mount McGregor ---- 151
A Hudson Valley Estate Fronting U. S. Route 9 ---- 164
Old House at Staatsburg ---- 175
A Typical Dutch Farmhouse of Rockland County ---- 180
In the Residential Section of New Rochelle ---- 193
Business Section of Mount Vernon at North Fourth Street ---- 208
Albany Post Road Milestone, Near Hyde Park ---- 213
Yonkers High School ---- 218
A Colonial Dutch Stone Farmhouse Near Hyde Park ---- 226
Mansion on the Boston Post Road, U. S. Route 1, Westchester County ---- 276
Fort Cralo (1642), Rensselaer ---- 281
A Modern Hudson River House at Nyack ---- 305
Typical Old Brick House at Hudson ---- 311
The Staats House at the Stockport Station, One of the Oldest Dutch Farmhouses in the Hudson Valley ---- 359
Rockland Lake ---- 369
Albany Post Road in Irvington ---- 387
Lower Philipse Manor House, Yonkers ---- 393
State Street, Albany ---- 406
Saunders Trade School, Yonkers ---- 433
Washington's Headquarters, Newburgh ---- 458
Blue Store Corners, North of Clermont, on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9 ---- 497
Birthplace of the State of New York ---- 511

VOLUME II

Governor's Mansion, Albany ---- *Frontispiece*
Senate House, Kingston ---- 523
New State Museum, Kingston ---- 523
Saratoga Battlefield, Where Frazer Fell ---- 533
Scene of America's Greatest Pageant ---- 533
Saratoga Battlefield ---- 539
Present Freeman Farmhouse, Saratoga Battlefield ---- 539
The Breyman Redoubt, Saratoga Battlefield ---- 545
American Army Headquarters, Saratoga Battlefield ---- 545
The Saratoga Battlefield ---- 551
Memorial Pavilion and Soldiers' Cemetery, Saratoga Battlefield ---- 551
Site of Fort Montgomery ---- 563
The Great Ravine, Saratoga Battlefield ---- 563
Stony Point Battlefield Park ---- 579
Important Buildings on Upper Broadway, Yonkers ---- 589
Monument Marking the Site Where Major Andre was Captured on Present Broadway, Tarrytown ---- 593
Arnold-Andre Boulder Marker ---- 593
Washington's Headquarters, Tappan ---- 597
Site of Andre's Execution ---- 601
The '76 House at Tappan ---- 601
Washington's Headquarters, Dobbs Ferry ---- 611
Old Capitol, Albany ---- 665
Entrance to Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, Troy ---- 675
Emma Willard School, Troy ---- 675
A Practice Game on the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute Athletic Field, Troy ---- 679
The Dormitories, Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, Troy ---- 679
Bronx River and Bridge at White Plains ---- 700

Victory Monument, Schuylerville ---- 703
Civil War Monument, Mount Vernon ---- 707
Civil War Monument, Peekskill ---- 711
General Phil Sheridan Statue ---- 715
Yonkers War Memorial ---- 729
First Boat to Load at the Port of Albany ---- 735
Old Stone Mansion, Ossining ---- 740
Atlantic Deeper Waterways Convention ---- 751
Cohoes Falls ---- 785
In Ossining ---- 804
United States Military Academy, West Point ---- 807
Part of the Stadium at West Point ---- 807
Pillar of Victory, West Point ---- 811
Statue Presented to West Point Academy by L'Ecole Polytechnique, Paris ---- 815
Yonkers City Hall ---- 849
Upper Broadway, Yonkers ---- 849
Business Section, New Rochelle ---- 853
City Hall, Mount Vernon ---- 853
Westchester County Court House, White Plains ---- 857
102nd Medical Regiment, New York Guard, Armory, White Plains ---- 857
Business Section, White Plains ---- 857
Yonkers Library and City Hall ---- 860
Geety Square, Yonkers ---- 860
Nyack Library ---- 863
Old Stone Church, Nyack, Built in 1813 ---- 863
Colonial Dutch Farmhouse, Palisade, Rockland County ---- 863
The Old Dutch Church, Tappan ---- 867
The Wayside Chapel ---- 867
A Hudson River Home ---- 869
Putnam County Memorial ---- 873
Old Mill, Built in 1776, Still Standing near Carmel ---- 873
Putnam County Courthouse and Clerk's Office, Carmel ---- 873
Business Section, Brewster ---- 875
A House in the Highlands ---- 875
Old Episcopal Church, Newburgh ---- 879
The Doctor Deyo House, Newburgh ---- 879
The Minute Man ---- 883
The Tower of Victory, near Washington's Headquarters, Newburgh ---- 887
View of the Delaware River from Sky Line Drive, Port Jervis ---- 891
Sycamore Tree at Sycamore Place, Walden ---- 891
State Museum at Poughkeepsie ---- 897
The Glebe House, Poughkeepsie ---- 897
Looking South on Main Street from Poughkeepsie's "Busy Corner" ---- 897
Administration Building, Vassar College, Poughkeepsie ---- 901
Faculty House, Vassar College, Poughkeepsie ---- 901
Thompson Memorial Library, Vassar College ---- 905
The Fine Arts Building, Vassar College, Poughkeepsie ---- 905
Beekman Arms, Rhinebeck ---- 909
Entrance Gates to the Hudson River Estate of F. W. Vanderbilt at Hyde Park ---- 909
The Old Dutch Church, Rhinebeck ---- 913
Evangelical Church of St. Peter the Apostle, on the Albany Post Road, near Rhinebeck ---- 913
Courthouse, Kingston ---- 919
DeWall Tavern, Kingston ---- 923
Hotel Governor Clinton, Kingston ---- 923
Columbia County Courthouse, Hudson ---- 931

Stockport Creek ---- 931
Greene County Courthouse, Catskill ---- 937
Albany's Sky Line ---- 943
Governor's Room, State Capitol, Albany ---- 947
City Hall, Albany ---- 951
Albany Academy ---- 955
Albany—Looking Southeast to the Port Section of the Hudson River ---- 959
Albany—Looking East over the Capitol and Hudson to Rensselaer ---- 959
Tomb of President Arthur, Rural Cemetery, Albany ---- 963
The Albany Institute and Historical and Art Society, Albany ---- 963
St. Peter's Protestant Episcopal Church, Albany ---- 967
St. Patrick's Church, Albany ---- 967
Staats House, Albany ---- 971
Old Pemberton Building, Albany ---- 971
United States Government Arsenal, Watervliet ---- 973
In the Business Section of Troy ---- 979
Armory of the 105th Infantry, New York Guard, 27th Division, Troy ---- 979
Irving Mill Falls, Rensselaer ---- 985
Forbes Manor, Rensselaer ---- 985
Saratoga of a Century Ago ---- 991
Knox Marker ---- 995
In Mechanicville ---- 995
Old Mansions, Waterford ---- 999
Indian Monument, Lake George ---- 1009
Black Mountain, Highest Mountain on Lake George ---- 1009
Bridge Over the Hudson River, Glens Falls ---- 1013
The Falls, Glens Falls ---- 1013
Glens Falls Academy, Glens Falls ---- 1017
Cooper's Cave, Glens Falls ---- 1017
City Hall, Glens Falls ---- 1021
City Hospital, Glens Falls ---- 1021
Champlain Memorial Monument on Lake Champlain ---- 1029
The Ausable River through Ausable Chasm ---- 1029
John Brown's Grave, near Lake Placid ---- 1032



NEW YORK STATE CAPITOL, ALBANY

CHAPTER 1.

THE HUDSON RIVER.

THE HUDSON AND ITS VALLEY—THE STREAM FROM ITS SOURCE TO ITS MOUTH—ONE OF THE WORLD'S GREATEST RIVERS, HISTORICALLY, SCENICALLY AND COMMERCIALLY.

"The Story of the Rivers is the History of the World."

The Hudson is one of the world's greatest rivers, not because of its length, its volume of water or the extent of its watershed, but on account of its historic importance, scenic beauty and commercial and transportation importance. This outstanding place in the history and life of the United States of America comes from the fact that the Hudson and its chief tributary, the Mohawk, have carved the only low pass, through the Appalachian mountain range, a water gate which connects the Great Lakes with the Atlantic Coast of the United States.

The Hudson and Mohawk valleys form the great east-west, west-east, land and water transportation belt, from New York to Albany and from Albany to Buffalo, through New York State. This greatest national artery of communication is composed of the New York Central Railroad, including the West Shore, the Hudson River, the New York State Barge Canal (Erie and Oswego divisions), and the main New York to Buffalo highways, U. S. Routes 9 and 9W, New York State Routes 5 and 5S, and U. S. Route 20, together with some lesser east-west roads. With the exception of U. S. Route 20, all of the foregoing lines of transportation run exclusively in the Hudson watershed northward to Albany and westward to Utica and Rome, a rail distance of 251 miles (to Rome) out of the 438 miles intervening between New York and Buffalo. Therefore, approximately 57 per cent of this great national trade and travel route lies within the limits of the watershed of the Hudson River.

The following historical chapters will serve to indicate the vast national historical and commercial importance of the Hudson River watershed. This chapter aims to give detailed considera-

tion to the geographic, topographic and scenic features of the Hudson River and its country.

The Hudson and Mohawk rivers form the natural "Gateway to the West"—a gateway opening from the world's greatest port, on the Atlantic Coast, to the vast Great Lakes region. It is this gateway, with its land and water communications, which has made New York the greatest of the world's seaports. The city lies upon one of the largest and finest bays in the world, the value of which is tremendously increased by its connection with the great interior transportation belt. In all the world, there is no other such combination of great bay, great seaport and internal artery of land and water communication as we find in New York Bay, New York City and the Hudson and Mohawk rivers.

The Hudson River is over 300 miles long. It has its source on the southern slope of Mount Marcy, the highest peak of the Adirondacks. The mountain has an elevation of 5,344 feet above sea level and the headwaters of the Hudson have their source over 4,000 feet above tidewater. The chief headwater source of the Hudson is a little lake known as Lake Tear of the Clouds or Lake Tear.

The course of the Hudson River, from its source to Glens Falls, is a circuitous one, about 100 miles long, through the Adirondack region. From Glens Falls to its mouth, the Hudson runs almost due south for a distance of about 200 miles.

The Hudson River consists of seven well defined sections. The first is the New York City section, extending for about 25 miles, from New York Bay to Yonkers. In this area, the stream has an average width of about one mile. This is also the Palisades section of the Hudson, as about two-thirds of these unusual cliffs lying on the New Jersey shore is embraced within the foregoing New York City section of the Hudson.

The second Hudson River section is that embraced in the broad Tappan Zee, which is the name given to the wide lake-like sea inlet, which extends from Hastings northward to the Highlands, a distance of about 20 miles. The river is nearly four miles wide opposite Haverstraw, which is the broadest place in the Hudson's channel. This "Zee" is popularly divided into the Tappan Zee, Haverstraw Bay and Peekskill Bay. However, they

all actually constitute one lake-like area, which properly can be called the Tappan Zee region.

The third Hudson River section is that known as the Highlands of the Hudson, extending for over 12 miles through some of the most magnificent river scenery in the world.

The fourth Hudson River section is that from the northern gateway of the Highlands to the City of Hudson, where the channel narrows and becomes shallow northward nearly to Albany. The long stretch of 60 miles, from the Highlands to Hudson, is a broad tidal river.

The fifth Hudson River section is the island crowded channel, extending northward from the City of Hudson to the Albany area, a distance of about 30 miles. The channel, in this extent, has been deepened to 27 feet for the Hudson deep water ship channel, which makes it possible for seagoing ships to ascend the Hudson River to the ports of Albany, Rensselaer and Troy.

The sixth Hudson River section constitutes that part of the stream which bisects the large and important Hudson-Mohawk cities group, including the cities of Albany, Troy, Rensselaer, Watervliet and Cohoes and the villages of Menands, Green Island and Waterford. This group is embraced in the larger Hudson-Mohawk civic regional triangle, with Albany, Troy and Schenectady at its points. The Mohawk River empties into the Hudson at the northern limits of this area—between Cohoes and Waterford.

The first five Hudson River sections and the sixth, up to Troy, form the tidewater level of the stream.

The seventh section of the Hudson River consists of the freshwater stream, flowing through an agricultural country, from Glens Falls to Waterford, a distance of about 40 miles. The greater part of this area—Waterford to Fort Edward (about 32 miles)—carries the Champlain Canal 12-foot channel in the Hudson's stream. This Hudson River section is famous as the scene of the two conflicts of 1777, generally called the Battle of Saratoga, the decisive struggle of the Revolution, the conflict which gave America liberty and one of the fifteen decisive battles of the world.

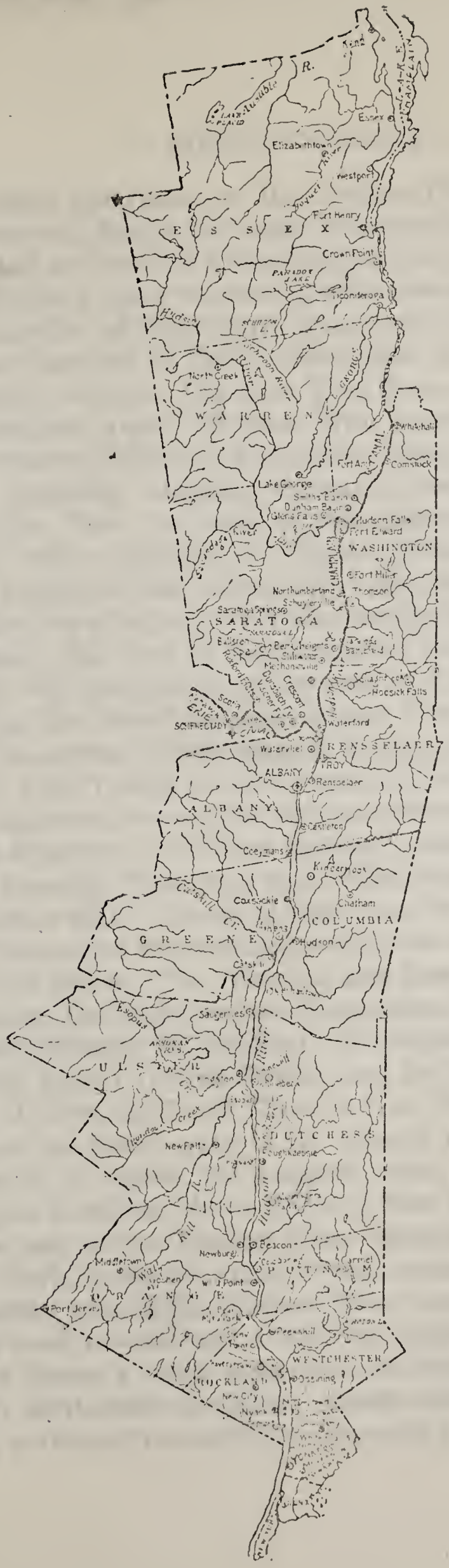
The eighth section of the Hudson River is its Adirondack region, extending northward from Glens Falls to the river's source at Mount Marcy, a distance of about 100 miles.

The Hudson is considered by scientists to be a "drowned river"—virtually a narrow fiord or inlet of the sea, extending for 166 miles from New York to Troy. During geological changes of the ages, its channel in the bed rock, throughout the lower course of the river, has sunk hundreds of feet below the level of its tidal waters. Its course in the bed rock exists through Upper New York Bay, the Narrows, Lower New York Bay, and even for some distance out into the Atlantic Ocean's present bed. It is a disputed question as to whether this sinking process is still continuing.

The fact that the Hudson is an arm of the Atlantic Ocean up to Troy is most important, particularly as regards its present and future development as a waterway. The Hudson has been deepened from Hudson City to Troy, so that a 27-foot channel now exists from New York to Albany. The Hudson and Mohawk rivers would constitute two-thirds of the channel of the proposed All-American Ship Canal, which is projected to extend between Oswego, on Lake Ontario, and Albany, on the Hudson River.

The tide has a rise and fall of one foot in the Hudson River at Albany. It is said, on account of the length (166 miles) of the tidewater stream and its comparatively narrow width, that there are always four tides in the river, between New York and Troy. Although, in this extent, the Hudson is a tidal stream, yet the salt water does not generally penetrate through the narrow channel of the river through the Highlands.

The Hudson River is a great link in the waterway connecting the waters of the Great Lakes with the Atlantic Ocean. The Hudson has water communication, for freight transportation, with Lake Champlain, through the Champlain division of the New York State Barge Canal; with Lake Erie at Buffalo, by way of the Erie, or main division, of the Barge Canal; with Lake Ontario and the St. Lawrence River, by way of the Oswego division of the Barge Canal, connecting with the Erie main line at Three Rivers; with Cayuga and Seneca lakes, by way of the Seneca River division.



THE HUDSON RIVER COUNTIES OF NEW YORK STATE

Map showing the counties through which the Hudson River runs from its source in the Adirondacks to its outlet into New York Bay. From north to south, as the river runs, the counties are: Essex, Warren, Washington, Saratoga, Albany, Rensselaer, Greene, Columbia, Ulster, Dutchess, Putnam, Orange, Rockland, Westchester, Bronx and New York.

Ice closes navigation on the Hudson River below Troy for periods varying from a few weeks to several months. Ice boating and skating are favorite winter pastimes on the river.

The Hudson River watershed embraces all or parts of 24 of the 62 counties of New York State, and two counties of New Jersey are bounded on their eastern sides by the river—Hudson and Bergen counties. The New York State counties of the Hudson's watershed are the Hudson River counties of Essex, Washington, Warren, Saratoga, Rensselaer, Albany, Greene, Columbia, Ulster, Dutchess, Orange, Putnam, Rockland, Westchester, Bronx, New York (covered in this historical work), and the Mohawk River counties of Oneida, Herkimer, Montgomery, Fulton, Schoharie and Schenectady, and also Hamilton County. Small portions of other New York counties lie within the Hudson watershed. The area of the watershed is 13,366 square miles, which is over one-quarter of the area of New York State. The watershed lies almost entirely within New York and it is the largest watershed of any stream in the state. The Hudson is not only New York's greatest river but it is the most commercially important river on the Atlantic seaboard.

The Algonquin, or "River Indians," called the Hudson Ca-ho-ta-ti-a, meaning "the river that comes from the mountains beyond Cohoes falls." Henry Hudson called it "River of the Mountains," because of the mountains which he saw bordering a large part of its course. The river has also been variously named the Shatemuck, the Mohegan, the Manhattan, Mauritius (in honor of Prince Maurice of Nassau), the Noordt Montaigne (North Mountain River) (by the Dutch), and the North River, to differentiate it from the South River of New Netherland, which was the name the Dutch gave to the present Delaware River. The Hudson is, of course, the accepted name, but the river is still sometimes called the North River in New York City.

The map of the Hudson River counties, which is published in this work, shows the course of that stream.

Another map of the Hudson River watershed's main streams is also most interesting. On it, the student can note that the Hudson forms a main stem over 300 miles in length, with a general north-south direction. About midway, in the Hudson's course, a river of considerable size meets it at right angles. This

is the Mohawk, which enters the Hudson between Cohoes and Waterford and opposite the northern limits of Troy. A group of islands lies at the junction of the two rivers and the waters of the Mohawk reach the Hudson through a number of streams, which are known as "the Sprouts of the Mohawk." The Cohoes Falls, on the Mohawk River, lie about a mile west of the mouth of the Mohawk.

The Mohawk River is 135 miles in length, which is nearly as long as is the Hudson River (150 miles) north of the confluence of the two streams. However, the Upper Hudson is larger and longer than the Mohawk and it has a larger watershed. In times of flood along the Mohawk, this river sometimes brings more water to the junction of the streams than does the Hudson. The geographical layout of the Hudson and the Mohawk somewhat suggests that of the Mississippi and the Missouri, with the exception that the positions of relative importance are reversed. The Missouri, which is a tributary of the Mississippi's main north-south stem, is much larger and longer than the "Father of Waters," above their junction, while the Mohawk is slightly smaller than the main stem stream of the Upper Hudson. The relative positions of the two tributary streams are quite similar, as regards the parent river. The Mohawk Valley comprises 3,845 square miles of the 13,366 square miles of the Hudson River watershed. As stated in the Foreword of this work, the six Mohawk River counties of the Hudson River watershed are not covered in this history, inasmuch as they have already had very complete historical description in the Author's "History of the Mohawk Valley—Gateway to the West." This history covers the sixteen Hudson River counties which are traversed or bordered by the main stream.

As is also noted in the Foreword, the geography and history of the Hudson River and Mohawk River regions are closely related to the Mohawk-St. Lawrence-Champlain-Hudson triangle.

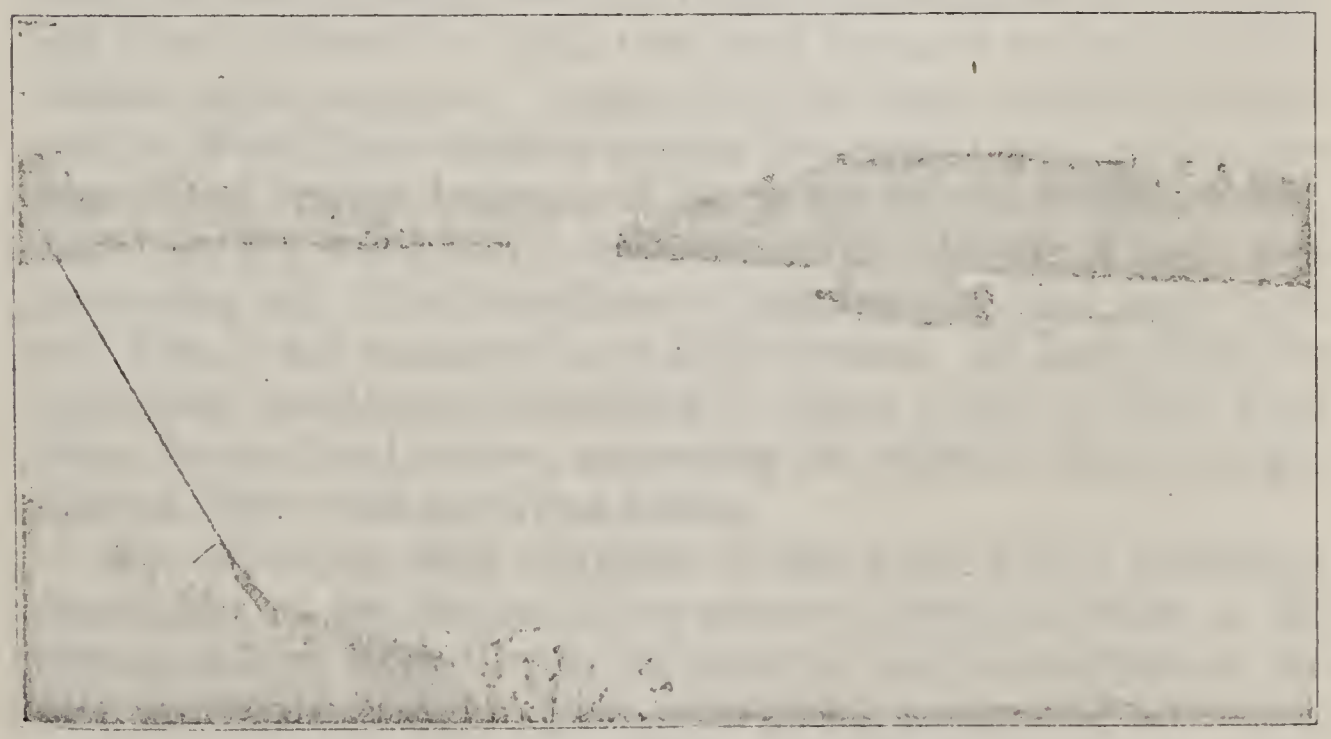
The Hudson has witnessed the entire development of navigation, from the Indians' bark canoes and log dugouts to Hudson's little ship, the *Half Moon*, the river sloops and schooners and Fulton's first successful steamboat to the great day and night Hudson River passenger boats and the mammoth ocean liners

9-10



LOOKING TOWARD THE NARROWS

The Hudson River in its course through the Highlands of the Hudson. Photographed looking north from Bear Mountain Bridge



THE UPPER HUDSON NEAR MECHANICVILLE

which dock in the Lower Hudson, at New York, Jersey City and Hoboken.

The day and night New York-Albany and New York-Troy boats form attractive features of the large and varied commerce of the Hudson River. By day, their great white hulls cleave the river's surface like giant water birds; at night, they form speeding constellations of light gliding over the river's darkened surface. The scene by day is impressive; by night, it is truly fairy-like. Incidentally, these Hudson River boats are the largest and best appointed river craft in the world.

From 1609 until 1807, the commerce of the Hudson River was carried on mainly by sloops, although the small ships and yachts of the early Dutch navigators bore a great part of the river's freight and passengers in the first half century of Dutch occupation. However, the Hudson River sloop was the great carrier on the river for over two centuries. During the latter half of the 1700s, the stage coach slightly supplemented this river traffic. However, practically all freight and passenger transportation, between New York and Albany and intervening points, was mainly borne by sloops until long after the *Clermont's* epochal voyage. From 1807 until 1851, the steamboat superseded the sloop to a considerable extent. With the completion of the Hudson River Railroad in 1851, that road began to compete for the Hudson River business. Today, the New York Central Railroad and its West Shore division carries the greater part of the passenger and freight business of the towns on the Hudson River. However, the water-borne commerce of the Hudson is large and increasing and it will continue to increase now that New York and Albany are connected by a ship channel. At these cities, as previously mentioned, connection is made with the New York State Barge Canal system, connecting the Atlantic Ocean and the Hudson River with the Great Lakes.

The following eight chapters of this work give a condensed description of the Hudson River country, from the outlet of the stream at New York City to its source in the Adirondacks at the foot of Mount Marcy. This description covers the historical, scenic, geographical, transportation, commercial and present-day features of this 300-mile stretch of river and its shorelands. These eight chapters are given to present to the reader the back-

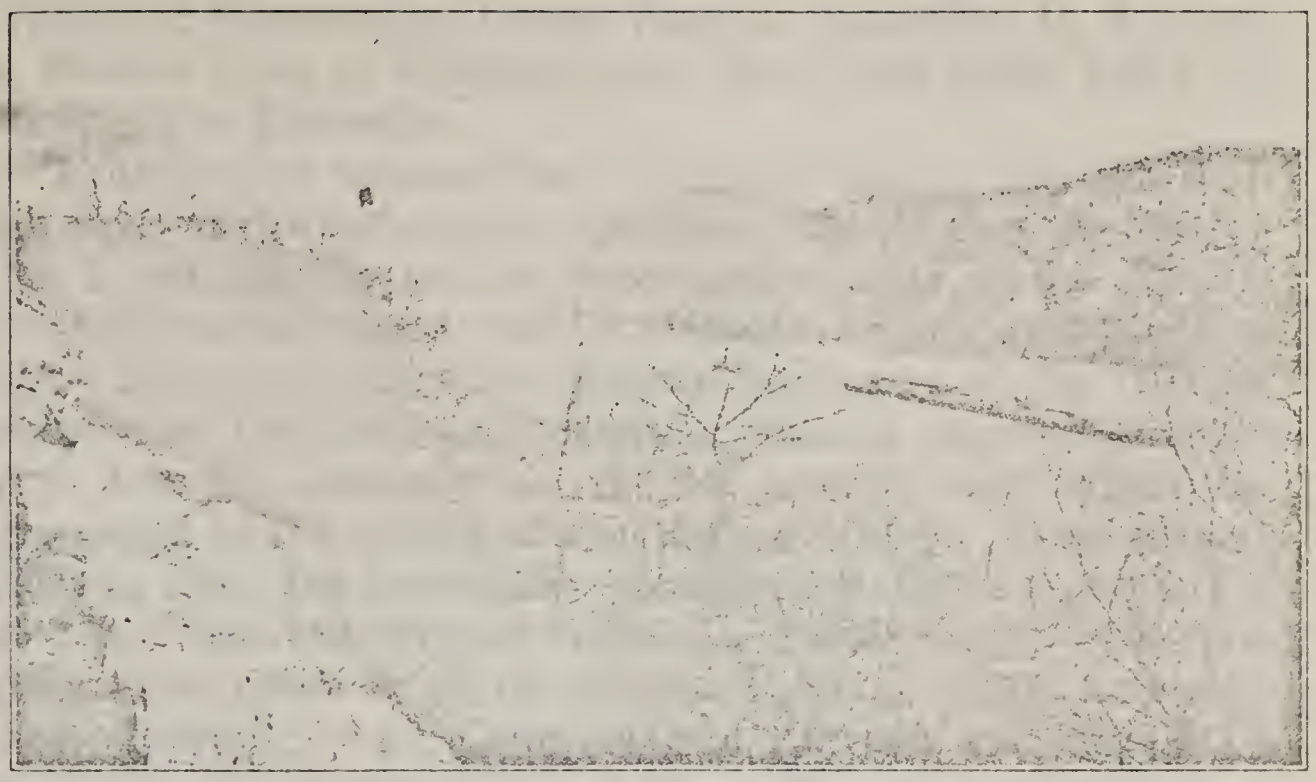
ground of the events which follow in the strictly historical section of this work, and a perusal of this descriptive section will give the reader an understanding which will better enable him to follow the somewhat complicated course of events in the historical records of the Hudson Valley.

In the following eight chapters, brief mention is made of the historical event or events of the particular section under consideration. One feature of this description is the translation of the Indian names of the various localities, streams and towns which bear them.

The description is written as following the Hudson River northward from New York City to Glens Falls, a distance of about 200 miles. This is done in order to pursue the general sequence of historical events along the river, as well as to cover the Hudson Valley's greatest population center at the start.

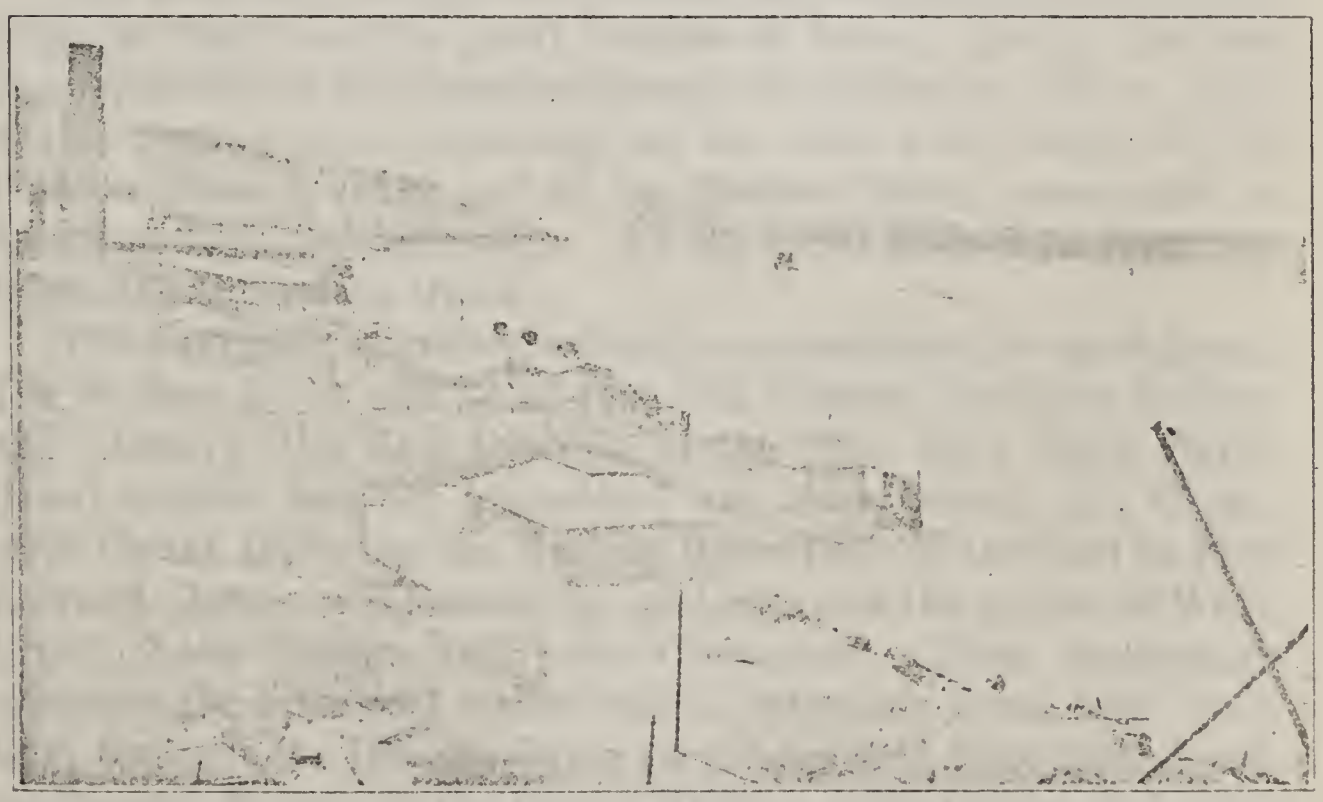
The Adirondack section of the Hudson River, from Glens Falls to Mount Marcy, is first described from the source, in Lake Tear of the Clouds, to Glens Falls—that is, as the river runs. After the description of the stream, the direction is reversed and the great highways are covered northward, from Glens Falls and Hudson Falls, to the northern limit of Essex County, the most northerly of the sixteen Hudson River counties of New York State.

The Hudson River highways run parallel from New York northward to Glens Falls. These chief roads are as follows: U. S. Route 9, the Albany Post Road, on the east side of the Hudson between New York and Albany; U. S. Route 9W, the Storm King Highway, on the west side of the Hudson, from the New Jersey state line northward to Albany. From Albany northward to Glens Falls: On the west side of the Hudson—U. S. Route 9, U. S. Route 4 and New York State Route 32, one highway, Albany to Northumberland; Route 32, Northumberland to Glens Falls. On the east side of the Hudson—U. S. Route 4, East Greenbush to and across the bridge to Waterford; New York State Route 40, Troy to Fort Edward; U. S. Route 4, Northumberland to Hudson Falls. From Glens Falls northward to Keeseville, on the Ausable River and at the northern limit of Essex County, U. S. Route 9, through the Upper Hudson Valley watershed and the eastern Adirondacks; from Hudson Falls to



THE HUDSON RIVER AT ANTHONY'S NOSE

The picture shows a view looking northeast from the Storm King Highway on the Dunderberg to Anthony's Nose on the right where the Bear Mountain Bridge road is seen cut on the rocky face of the mountain. The bridge is visible in the distance



THE HUDSON RIVER AT THE CITY OF HUDSON

The Catskill Mountains mark the horizon. The buildings cover the site of the docks built in the early days of the city

Whitehall, Ticonderoga, Crown Point to Keeseville, U. S. Route 4, Hudson Falls to Whitehall, and New York State Route 22, Whitehall to Keeseville.

In the region between New York and Albany, only the Hudson River and its shores are described. At Albany the description is extended to include Schenectady-Scotia in the Albany-Troy-Schenectady civic district triangle. From Waterford to Glens Falls, the description follows the shores of the Hudson, inclusive of the Saratoga Battlefield, scene of the conflict which gave America independence and the greatest event which has transpired in the history of the Hudson Valley. From Albany to Glens Falls, the description includes U. S. Route 9, which follows the Great War Trail of Indian and Colonial days. The foregoing areas either lie on the Hudson River or within its watershed. However, from Glens Falls northward, the description includes a considerable area of the southwestern watershed of Lake Champlain, including Lake George. This is necessary in order to cover certain historical movements as well as the great highways and waterway routes which run northward from the Upper Hudson Valley.

The following descriptions include these highways and waterways, as they were the great avenues of history during the first three-quarters of the historical period of the Hudson Valley. This is also done because practically all the cities and villages of the Hudson River country and of the Hudson Valley were built on its waterways and highways. All the great highways described follow the old Indian trails.

The navigable waterways which are described are as follows: The Hudson River and its 27-foot ship channel (between Hudson and Albany), the Erie Division of the New York State Barge Canal system, between Waterford and Schenectady; the Champlain Canal, following the Hudson River from Waterford to Fort Edward, thence to Whitehall by land cuts and the course of Wood Creek; Lake George and Lake Champlain. These waterways comprise the historical water routes, extending from New York Bay, through the Hudson River to Albany and Troy and thence northward, by way of the Upper Hudson, Lake George and Lake Champlain, to the St. Lawrence River, and westward from Troy, over the Mohawk River and other streams and Oneida Lake, to

Lake Ontario at Oswego and to Lake Erie at Buffalo. The route from Troy to Oswego has been proposed as that of an All-American Ship Canal, while that from Troy to the St. Lawrence River has also been promoted as a shipway.

The descriptive chapters also cover the railroads of the Hudson River country in a very brief manner. These main railroads are: The New York Central, including the West Shore, the Erie, Central New England, Boston and Albany, Delaware and Hudson, Boston and Maine, Ulster and Delaware, New York, Ontario and Western.

The main feature of these descriptive chapters is the location and very brief description of the historical sites in the Hudson River country, so that the story of this region can be carefully and understandingly followed in the subsequent chapters devoted to the history of the Valley of the Hudson.

In the first seven descriptive chapters, the account is confined to the Hudson River country and largely to the shorelands of the stream, as this area comprises nearly all the sites of the historical events which are later covered at length. In the last and eighth descriptive chapter, as previously stated, the account embraces historical contributory areas, essential to the complete historical picture.

The eight chapters, descriptive of the Hudson River, follow.

CHAPTER 2.

THE HUDSON RIVER, NEW YORK CITY TO YONKERS.

THE NEW YORK CITY SECTION—PALISADES OF THE HUDSON—SPUYTEN DUYVIL—VAN CORTLANDT HOUSE (1748) AND VAN CORTLANDT PARK—RIVERDALE.

This chapter is descriptive of the Hudson River from New York to Yonkers—its shorelands in particular and its valley in general. The description of the Hudson River, from its mouth to its source, runs northward, although this is contrary to the flow of the stream, which, of course, is southward. This procedure is followed because it coincides, to a large extent, with the march of historical events. In connection with this description it must be remembered that the focal historical points of the Hudson River and its country are New York and Albany. This matter has been brought out in the Foreword of this work, but it should have repetition here, as the fact intimately concerns the description which follows.

The foregoing chapter covered the Hudson River in a general way. The following eight chapters give description and details of the river, its scenic and geographic elements, its towns, historic sites and its transportation, commercial and industrial features and national importance. This description is given early in this work because the Author feels that it will clarify and identify much of the historical record which follows. It will take on added interest if the reader will frequently refer to the map of the Hudson River counties and other maps contained in this work.

In "Great Rivers Described by Great Writers" (Dodd, Mead & Company, 1908), Esther Singleton writes of the Hudson as follows:

"The Hudson is considered the most beautiful river of the United States. Its scenery is so enchanting that it has been called the 'Rhine of America.' Its hills and banks are dotted with palatial residences. To the historian, they are eloquent of the brave generals and their armies who fought for Liberty and they charm the dreamer by the legends that cluster around them. It is no trouble for him to see the Phantom Ship scudding across the Tappan Zee or to people Sleepy Hollow with vanished forms.

"George William Curtis pronounced the 'Rhine of America' even grander than the Rhine. He says: 'The Danube has, in part, glimpses of such grandeur. The Elbe has sometimes such delicately pencilled effects. But no European river is so lordly in its bearing, none flows in such state to the sea.' "

It is a mistake to call the Hudson the "American Rhine." Both are beautiful and historic rivers, but the Hudson needs no reflected glory from the European stream. For varied scenery—sublime, picturesque, rugged, wooded, mountainous, pastoral—the Hudson yields supremacy to no river in the world.

This description of the Hudson and its banks begins at New York and Jersey City, although the vastness of the Metropolitan District makes it necessary to confine the account in that section to a brief condensation. The description follows the stream northward, as previously mentioned.

The trip up the Hudson starts at its mouth, where it empties into New York Bay between the southern tip of the Island of Manhattan—at the Battery—and Jersey City. The waters of the river join those of the sea just north of the Statue of Liberty on Bedloe's Island. It was on the tip end of Manhattan that Dutch traders and sailors spent their first winter on the island in 1613-1614. Since then the occupancy has been constant.

Every variety of river, harbor and seagoing craft crowd the first ten miles of the river's course to the north. The river, in this section, averages from three-quarters to a mile in width. Both the New York and New Jersey shores rise as we go northward. The rocky shores of the "Jersey" side rise from a comparatively low elevation in Bayonne to a rocky cliff in Jersey City and thence northward into the impressive Palisades formation. This unusual rock cliff extends for about thirty miles along the west bank of the Hudson, terminating at Haverstraw.

At Weehawken, atop the Palisades, Aaron Burr killed Alexander Hamilton in a duel in 1804. A monument marks the spot where one of America's greatest statesmen met an untimely end. Of course, this event finds a place in the following historical chapters. All historic sites, to which reference is made in these descriptive chapters, have their events chronologically detailed at their proper place in this history.

After passing the pier lined shores of New York City, the passenger, on a Hudson River boat, notes Riverside Park and Drive, which extend along the river from 72d to 125th Street, where it continues by viaduct northward to Dyckman Street, a total distance of about seven miles. Its principal monuments are the Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument and Grant's Tomb. Columbia University centers at 116th Street and Broadway, only two blocks from Riverside Drive, but a view of its buildings is largely shut off from the river by apartment houses fronting the drive. This is also largely true of the Hispanic, Numismatic and American Indian Museums at 154th Street and Broadway.

The chief existing historic buildings of New York City generally date from Colonial days. From south to north, they are Fraunce's Tavern, 1711; St. Paul's Church, 1764; Hamilton Grange, 1802; Morris-Jumel mansion, 1758; Dyckman house, built after the Revolution; Van Cortlandt Manor house, 1748. None of these buildings is visible from the Hudson River.

The great Fort Lee bridge is being built at this writing (1931) across the Hudson River from Fort Washington Park, in the neighborhood of 180th Street, to the top of the Palisades at Fort Lee.

The highest ground on Manhattan Island is that on Fort Washington Heights, which is a most sightly spot rising 238 feet above the Hudson. Fort Washington was the American stronghold which stood near this summit. During the Revolution, it was the last post held by the American Army on Manhattan Island. It was captured by the British on November 16, 1776, after a bitter fight.

A bridge is projected, over the Spuyten Duyvil from Inwood Heights to Riverdale Avenue, which would carry the traffic of Riverside Drive from New York City northward to Yonkers.

The Indian name of the Spuyten Duyvil was Muscoota, but the Dutch name has been used since the early days of New Netherland. Many derivations of the "Spitting Devil" title have been given. However, the angry white-capped tides, which rushed into the original narrow channel, may have suggested the name to the Dutch pioneers. At low tide, there was a natural ford across the creek.

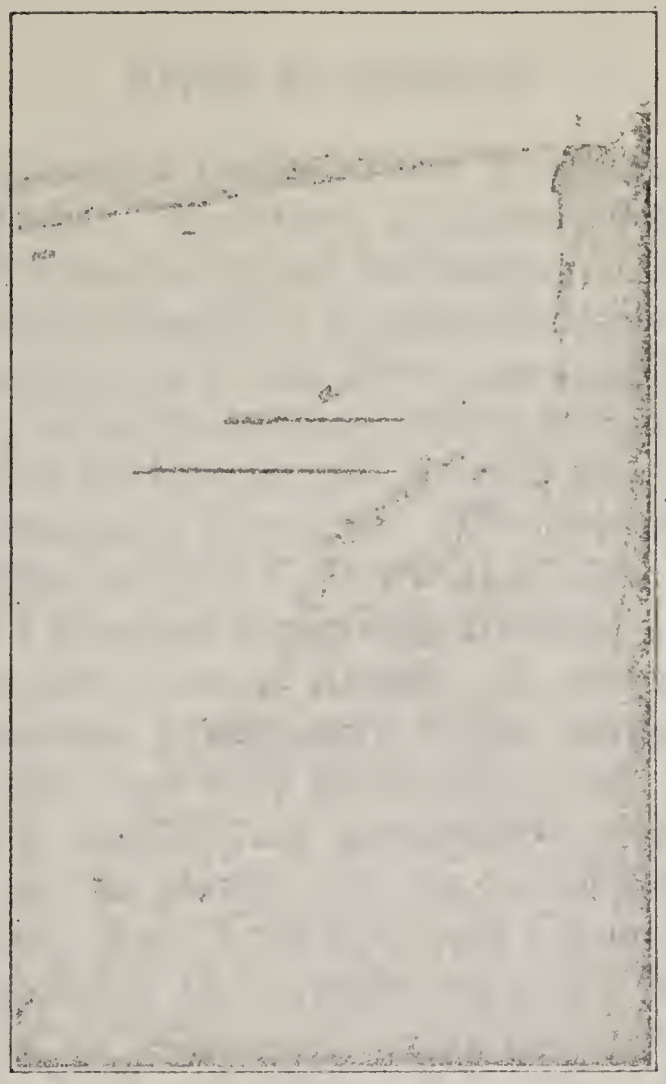
We leave the Island of Manhattan and New York City without further comment because its vast interests and features could easily fill many volumes. New York City is the center of a metropolitan district which forms the greatest civic area in the world. New York, which was permanently settled in 1613, and Albany, settled in 1614, are the oldest cities in the Thirteen Original States. The Village of Manhattan and its successors, the cities of New Amsterdam and New York, formed the seat of government of the Dutch Province of New Netherland and the English Province of New York. For a few years, following the Revolution, New York City was both the capital of the United States and of New York State. As previously stated and as later brought out, New York and Albany were the centers from which Dutch settlement of the Hudson Valley was made.

Spuyten Duyvil ("Spitting Devil") Creek and the Harlem River divide Manhattan and Bronx boroughs, which correspond to New York and Bronx counties. The Spuyten Duyvil is the westward extension of the Harlem River, which is not a river at all but a little arm of the sea connecting a sea-inlet, the East River, with the sea-inlet river of the Hudson. Both Spuyten Duyvil Creek and the Harlem River form the channel of this connecting tidal stream.

The Harlem River Ship Canal was opened in 1895. It cost $2,700,000. The Spuyten Duyvil end of the canal opens on the Hudson between the picturesque wooded heights of Inwood on the south and Riverdale on the north. An Indian village was located in Inwood Glen, at the foot of the heights, where stands the oldest tulip tree on Manhattan Island. It is over 200 years old and is protected by a fence.

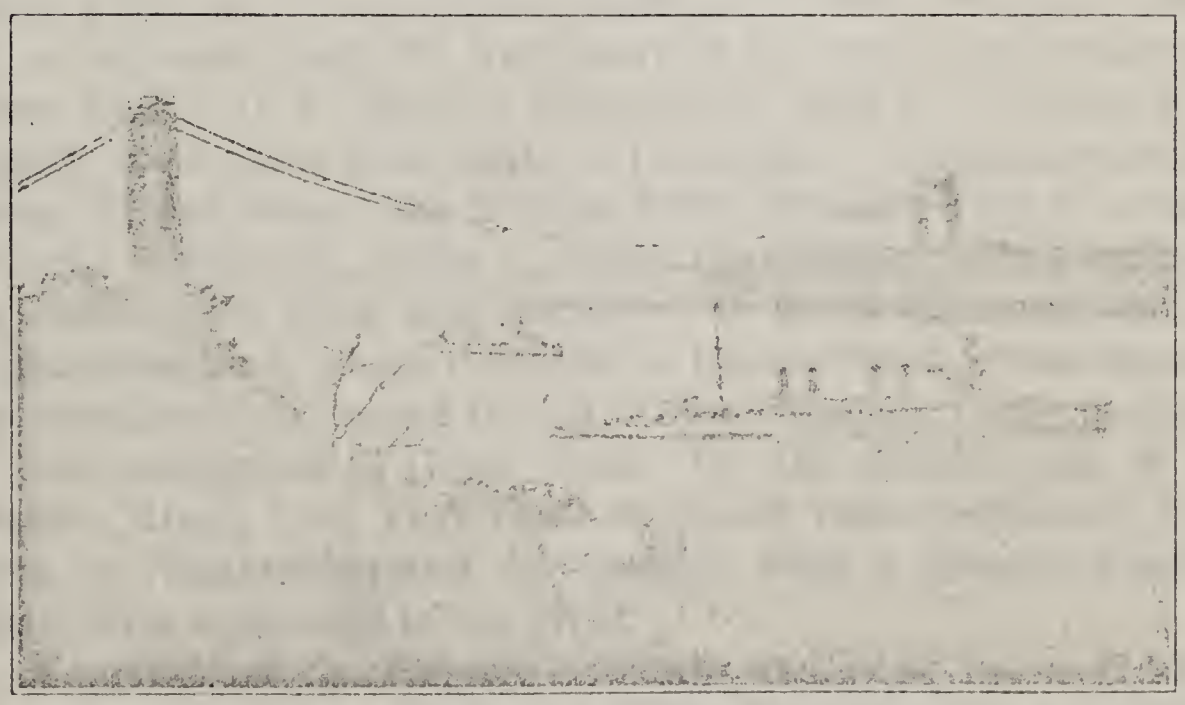
A bridge carries Broadway, over Spuyten Duyvil, from Manhattan to the Bronx. This is U. S. Route 9, or the Albany Post Road, which runs northward to Albany and thence to Rouse's

21-22



"INDIAN HEAD" ON THE PALISADES
OF THE HUDSON

This view is looking southeast toward New York. Piers of the Interstate Park are seen five hundred feet below this cliff



FORT LEE BRIDGE, NEW YORK CITY

The photograph from which this cut was made was taken by the author at the time of the visit of the Atlantic Fleet to the Hudson River in May, 1930. Ships of the fleet are seen in the river. The view is from Riverside Drive, New York City, looking toward the Palisades on the New Jersey shore. The bridge is seen in its incompleted state with suspension cables but no roadway

Point near the Canadian border, where it connects with roads to Montreal and Quebec. Broadway is known by that name, from the Battery on Manhattan Island to Ossining, a distance of about 36 miles. Beyond that point, it is generally known as the Albany Post Road. However, it is one direct road north for 150 miles from the Battery to the Rensselaer-Albany bridge, and, therefore, Broadway justifies its title of "the longest street in the world." The reader's attention is directed to "The Greatest Street in the World," by Stephen Jenkins, G. P. Putnam, New York City, publishers. This is a fine book concerning Broadway and the Albany Post Road, from New York to Albany. It covers the route with unusual completeness, particularly in the southern half of the highway, that from New York to Poughkeepsie.

The following chapters are particularly concerned with the Hudson River and its shores and the paralleling highways, in the region between New York City and Glens Falls, an extent of 200 miles embracing the straight north and south channel of the stream.

Between New York and Albany, the paralleling highways are the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9, on the eastern shore of the river, and the Storm King Highway, U. S. Route 9W, on the west shore of the Hudson. North of Albany and between that city and Glens Falls, the Hudson River highway is New York State Route 32, which runs along the west shore of the river from Albany to Glens Falls. U. S. Route 4 starts north from U. S. Route 9, at a point about three miles south of Rensselaer. It runs northward along the east side of the Hudson River, through Troy to a point opposite Waterford, where it crosses the Hudson to its west bank and follows the road, also numbered as Route 32, northward to Northumberland, where it crosses to the east bank of the Hudson and continues northward to and through Hudson Falls, just east of and contiguous to Glens Falls. On the eastern side of the Hudson River, New York State Route 40 runs northward from Troy to Northumberland (30 miles), with a general location about three miles east of the river.

Nearly all of the historic buildings and sites, in the Hudson River country, lie on the banks of the Hudson or its paralleling highways. This is also true of most of the cities and larger villages of the Hudson River Valley. The exceptions are the cities

of Westchester County, aside from Yonkers, and the cities of Middletown and Port Jervis in Orange County. The cities of Westchester County, which lie outside of the Hudson River area, are Mount Vernon, New Rochelle and White Plains.

Therefore, the description contained in this chapter covers views of the Hudson River country such as would be obtained from a river steamboat, from the paralleling highways—the Albany Post Road and the Storm King Highway—and also from the New York Central Railroad, on the east shore, and from the West Shore Railroad on the opposite shore, between New York and Albany.

North of the Spuyten Duyvil, Broadway runs past Van Cortlandt Park, with the Van Cortlandt Manor house in full view. Like all of the other New York City historic houses (with the exception of Hamilton Grange), the Van Cortlandt Manor house is now a public historical museum.

The land on which the Van Cortlandt Manor house now stands was part of the patroonship secured in 1653 by Adriaen Vander Donck. His estate was known as Colon Donck, which is Dutch for "Donck's Colony." The region was called Nepperhaem by the Indians. Vander Donck was known as the "Jonkheer," or "young heir," and this name came to be applied to his estate, which covered the city which now bears the name of Yonkers. Vander Donck died shortly after obtaining his estate, most of which was later purchased by Frederick Philipse, whom the English called "the Dutch millionaire." In the latter half of the sixteenth century, he was considered the richest man in the Province of New York. His building of manor houses at Yonkers and Tarrytown is subsequently noted. In 1693, his land was formed into the English manor of Philipsburg. About that time, he built the first bridge over the Spuyten Duyvil and he also became responsible for the maintenance of the road which crossed it. This is now the Albany Post Road and, at that time, it probably did not extend northward much beyond Ossining—possibly to Peekskill. Much of the wealth of Philipse is said to have been derived from his supposed partnership with the notorious pirate, Captain Kidd. At the time of Kidd's arrest, Lord Bellomont remarked that "If the coffers of Frederick Philipse were searched, Captain Kidd's missing treasures could easily be found." New York State

confiscated the Philipse estate in 1779, because its owner, at that time, was a Tory.

The first Frederick Philipse married a widow with a daughter named Eva, whom he adopted. Eva married Jacobus Van Cortlandt, to whom Philipse sold 50 morgens of land in present Van Cortlandt Park. Van Cortlandt built mills and a house, which is said to have been erected on the site of one built by Vander Donck, the first patroon.

Frederick Van Cortlandt, son of Jacobus, built the present stone house in 1748. Many distinguished guests were entertained in the Van Cortlandt mansion during the 136 years in which it was in the possession of the Van Cortlandt family. Washington and Rochambeau were visitors here during their preparations for a combined American-French attack on New York City in 1781. This projected movement was abandoned in favor of the Yorktown campaign, which won American independence.

The Van Cortlandt estate and other property, amounting to 1,132 acres, was bought by the City of New York in 1884 and formed into Van Cortlandt Park.

The heights of Riverdale rise on the east side of Broadway and opposite Van Cortlandt Park south of the limits of Yonkers. There are many handsome and large suburban residences with extensive and beautiful grounds in the picturesque Riverdale section. This area strongly suggests the former suburban residential area of northern New York City, which is now entirely occupied by apartment houses. The same processes are at work today (1931) in the Riverdale district and it is probable that this section will undergo the same changes which have gradually eliminated Manhattan's suburban areas since the rapid growth northward of New York City began about 1800.

Before leaving Van Cortlandt Park, it is pertinent to state that it had a considerable part in the preliminaries of the Yorktown campaign. When Washington and Rochambeau were about to attack New York, they brought regiments of the American and French armies down as far as Van Cortlandt Park. When the allied commanders decided to change their plans and march upon Yorktown, they withdrew their forces northward as quietly as possible. To confuse the British, the Americans left a guard which kept campfires burning for several days on Vault Hill in

Van Cortlandt Park. This ruse served to fool the enemy commanders. Vault Hill takes its name from the fact that the Van Cortlandt family burial vaults are located on its southern slopes. When the American Army fled from New York City in 1776, Frederick Van Cortlandt, the city clerk, hid the city records in these vaults. However, the British soon discovered them.

North-bound travelers on the Hudson River boats and on the New York Central Railroad begin to see the Palisades of the Hudson at their best north of Spuyten Duyvil Creek. They form one of the most interesting landscape features of the Hudson Valley. Practically all of the face and much of the top lands of this peculiar cliff formation, north of Fort Lee, have been purchased by the states of New York and New Jersey and formed into the Palisades Interstate Park.

The Palisades were formed by the outcrop of an inclined sheet of trap rock (diabase) which dips westward to the Hackensack River meadows. The same trap sheet forms the Piermont, Hook Mountain and Tor Mountain ridges on the western shore of the Tappan Zee and Haverstraw Bay. These mountains are considered part of the Palisade formation, which extends from Bayonne (where the rise begins) to Haverstraw, a distance of about 38 miles. The name Palisades is applied only to the continuous cliff extending, on the west shore of the Hudson, from Jersey City to Piermont, a distance of about 23 miles. The name "Palisades" was applied by the early pioneers to this rock formation because of its rough resemblance to the palisades of upright saplings and logs which formed the defenses of the Indian villages. The white settlers adopted this type of defensive work for their own houses, villages and forts.

Opposite Spuyten Duyvil Creek, the Palisades are over 300 feet high. They reach their greatest height at Lookout, opposite Hastings, where the cliff rises in a nearly sheer precipice 550 feet above the Hudson. Views of this impressive point are illustrated in this work. There is very little drainage from the Palisades summit into the Hudson, as the land generally begins to slope westward a short distance from the edge of the precipice. The drainage westward is into the Hackensack River Valley, of which splendid views may be obtained at several points on the western slopes of the Palisades. Before the lands, on the summit and at

the base of the cliffs, were opened up by the Interstate Park development and also by road construction and improvement and residential development, the Palisades summits formed a long, generally wild, wooded ridge extending northward from Fort Lee. It still retains much of this character, which, of course, is fully preserved in the park developments. However, residential construction is progressing rapidly on the westward slopes. Following the opening of the Fort Lee bridge, it will not be many years before northeastern New Jersey will form a built-up section of the vast city which now actually exists, with Manhattan Island as its center. This New York City metropolitan district probably embraced over 9,000,000 people in 1930, and it certainly forms the greatest civic district in the world.

The Palisades can justly be called one of the geological wonders of the world. There is no other rock formation on earth which exactly corresponds to this Hudson River great landscape feature, but it is interesting to know that a similar formation exists on the Moon, which is known to astronomers as the Mare Nubium. This lunar cliff is about the same height as our Palisades but it is more extensive, being 60 miles in length. Geologists estimate the age of the Palisades as being about 30,000,000 years.

U. S. Route 9W runs near the summit of the Palisades from Fort Lee northward to Piermont, a distance of about 15 miles. This is a fine drive, particularly in the 12-mile stretch north of Englewood.

The foregoing description covers the Hudson and its shores from the Battery, at the mouth of the river, to the City of Yonkers—a distance of about 20 miles.

CHAPTER 3.

THE HUDSON RIVER—YONKERS TO PEEKSKILL—THE TAPPAN ZEE REGION.

THE CITY OF YONKERS—THE CITY DISTRICT OF YONKERS, MOUNT VERNON, NEW ROCHELLE—LOWER PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, 1682, AT YONKERS—THE "LOOKOUT," 550 FEET HIGH, OPPOSITE HASTINGS—ALBANY POST ROAD, U. S. ROUTE 9, BROADWAY TO OSSINING, "THE LONGEST STREET IN THE WORLD"—LIVINGSTON HOUSE AT DOBBS FERRY, WHERE WASHINGTON PLANNED YORKTOWN CAMPAIGN—WHITE PLAINS AND THE BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS, 1776—TAPPAN, SCENE OF ARNOLD'S EXECUTION, 1780—PICTURESQUE PIERMONT, GRANDVIEW, NYACK SECTION—HARING HOUSE, 1738—SALISBURY HOUSE, 1750—SUNNYSIDE, IRVING'S HOME AT IRVINGTON—TARRYTOWN, WHERE ANDRE WAS CAPTURED, 1780—SLEEPY HOLLOW CHURCH, 1699—UPPER PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, 1683—HOOK MOUNTAIN—OSSINING—CROTON RIVER AND CROTON POINT—VAN CORTLANDT MANOR HOUSE, 1681—HAVERSTRAW—STONY POINT BATTLEFIELD PARK—KINGS FERRY — VERPLANCK'S POINT — PEEKSKILL — CAMP SMITH OF NEW YORK NATIONAL GUARD.

This chapter begins the description of the Hudson River country north of the New York City line—that from Yonkers to the Highlands. Subsequent chapters of this work cover the cities and counties of the Hudson River, so that, the references to these towns, in these introductory descriptive chapters, are necessarily brief.

Yonkers, Mount Vernon and New Rochelle form a group of cities abutting on the northern border of the Borough of the Bronx of Greater New York. Each city has a centralized business section and an individual civic character but all three municipalities merge together in their outlying sections bordering upon the adjacent city or cities. The three cities are also units of the New York City metropolitan district.

Mount Vernon was incorporated as a city in 1892. It had a population of 61,270 in 1930 as compared with 42,726 in 1920.

New Rochelle was incorporated as a city in 1899. It had a population of 54,055 in 1930 as compared with 36,213 in 1920.

The total 1930 population of the Yonkers-Mount Vernon-New Rochelle civic district was 250,448.

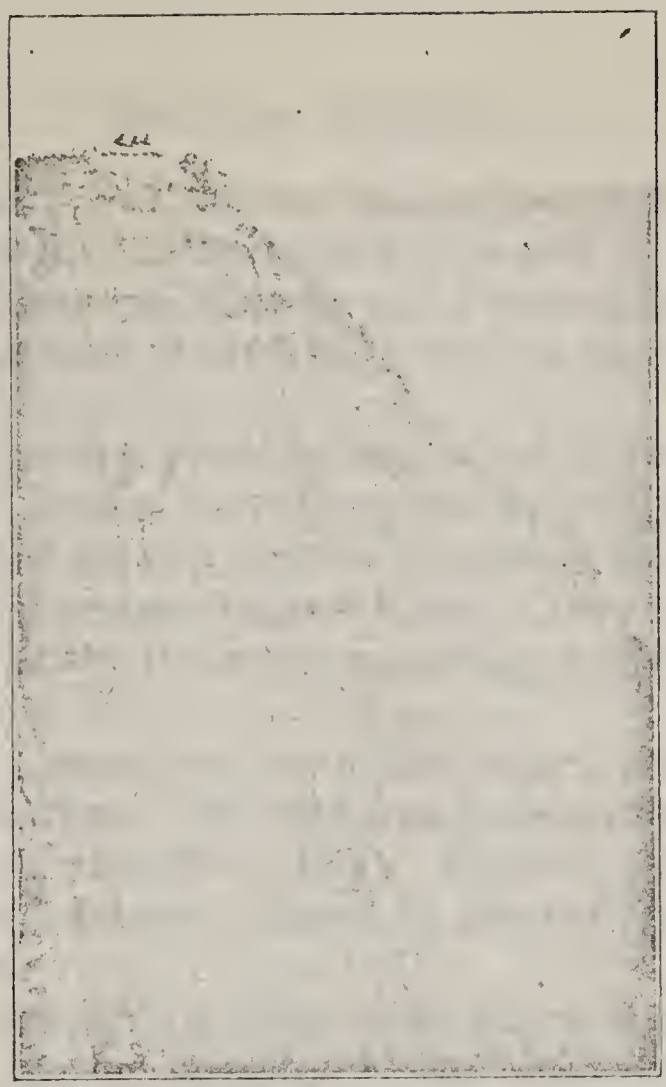
Mount Vernon and New Rochelle are largely populated by people who are engaged in business in New York City. Mount Vernon lies on the New York Central Railroad, Harlem Division, and on Route 22, which forms the Bronx Parkway. New Rochelle is on the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad and on U. S. Route 1, which runs from Maine to Miami, Florida. New Rochelle also lies on a very picturesque section of Long Island Sound. Both Mount Vernon and New Rochelle have modern and rapidly developing business centers and large and beautiful residential sections.

The Indian name of Yonkers was Ke-ke-shick. As previously stated, the name Yonkers has a Dutch derivation. It comes from Jonkheer which was the title given Adriaen Vander Donck, the first owner of the lands on which the city is built. The literal translation of Jonkheer is "Young Heir" or "Young Mister."

In 1646, Vander Donck secured a patent from Director General Kieft for an extensive tract of land in Westchester County fronting on the Hudson River. Later Vander Donck went to Holland. On his return, in 1653, he built mills on the Nepperhan (or Zaagkill or Sawmill River) at Yonkers. This year probably marks the date of settlement of the city although white men may have been previously located here, following 1646, when Vander Donck's patent was granted.

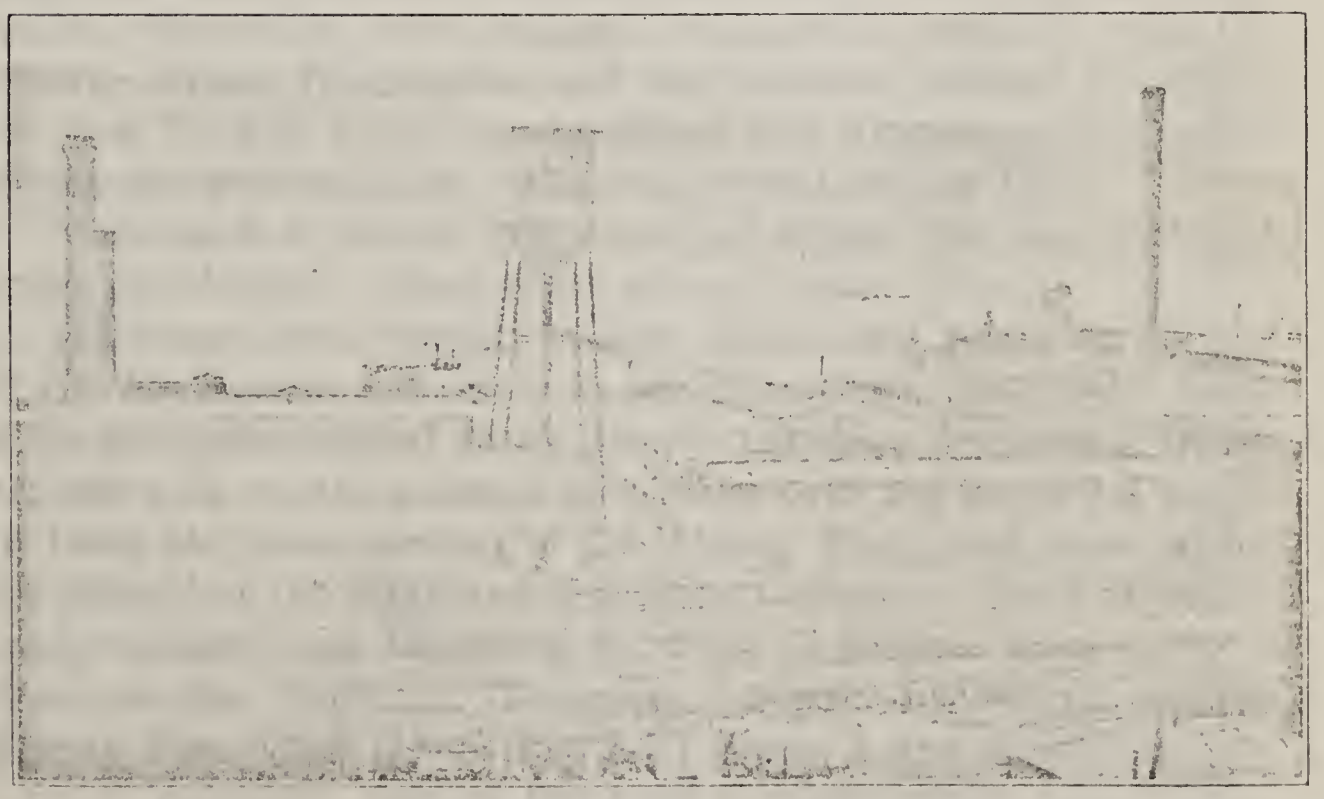
As has been previously stated, Vander Donck's lands were purchased by Frederick Philipse shortly after 1666. Philipse also built a strong stone building which served both as a mill and a trading post, following his purchase. He also built the lower Philipse Manor House in 1682. The original building is of stone and it has an extensive stone addition which was erected in 1745. The house of 1682 was one of the finest which had been built in the Province of New York up to that time. It is one of the most interesting and historically important buildings in New York State. For many years it served as the Yonkers City Hall. In

31-32



THE LOOKOUT ON THE PALISADES

This sheer cliff is five hundred feet above the Hudson. The view is looking northeast toward the Tappan Zee. The Lookout is opposite Hastings on the Hudson. The Storm King Highway runs directly alongside



THE PALISADES FROM HASTINGS

Factories line the water front at Hastings and Yonkers, a few miles below. A private yacht is seen going up the Hudson. The Palisades reach their highest elevation (about five hundred feet) opposite Hastings. Tracks of the New York Central Railroad are seen in this picture which was taken from the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9

1909, Mrs. William F. Cochran, the widow of the well-known philanthropist bought the house and it is now in the possession and care of the American Historic and Preservation Society and it forms one of the most interesting historical museums along the Hudson River.

Yonkers is a rapidly growing city, which is covered in detail in a later chapter devoted to Yonkers and Westchester County.

The high hills of the city rise to a maximum height of 425 feet above the sea level of the Hudson River. They afford splendid views of the city, of the Palisades opposite and of the Tappan Zee northward.

Yonkers has important manufacturing, commercial and transportation interests. The city was incorporated in 1872. It had a population of 135,123 in 1930. Yonkers' growth has been largely due to the increase of the city's population of commuters to New York City.

Yonkers is connected by ferry with Alpine and the Palisades Interstate Park on the opposite or west shore of the Hudson. The park is very attractively developed in this area.

Broadway, or U. S. Route 9, is known as North Broadway, north of Getty Square, the "busy corner" of Yonkers. It runs northward on the summit of a high hill, known as Boar or Hog Hill. American soldiers frequently camped there during the Revolution, when they were engaged in guerrilla warfare with the enemy. When Washington and Rochambeau planned an attack on New York in 1781, the American and French armies moved southward and the allied right wing rested on Hog Hill.

Yonkers is a city of hills, some of which rise over 400 feet above the Hudson. They afford splendid river views.

Highway improvements in New York State began at the end of the Eighteenth and early in the Nineteenth centuries. They were generally carried on by private turnpike companies, which exacted tolls for the passage of vehicles over the improved roads. In 1806, the lower section of the Albany Post Road came under the control of the Highland Turnpike Company, which straightened, widened and improved it, when it became known, for a time, as the Highland Turnpike. North Broadway, or the Albany Post Road (U. S. Route 9) forms a fine residential section of Yonkers. One of the most famous estates was "Grey-

stone," the suburban home of Samuel J. Tilden, unsuccessful Democratic presidential candidate in 1876.

The lower river road northward is Warburton Avenue, Yonkers, which runs to the Hastings village line. It gives a fine view of the Hudson River and the Palisades on the west shore. Opposite Hastings, the Palisades reach their greatest height at Indian Head and Lookout (550 feet above the river). From the eastern shore, or from the waters of the river, the great cliffs in this section are tremendously impressive.

Hastings is virtually connected with Yonkers by its southern residential section. It is 18 miles from New York, 125 miles south of Albany and 421 miles from Buffalo. It had a 1930 population of 7,041. It was incorporated as a village in 1879 and is largely a residential town for people engaged in business in New York City. The upper streets of the town rise to considerable heights above the Hudson River.

After Fort Washington, New York City, was captured by the British in 1776, Lord Cornwallis, at the head of 3,500 British troops, crossed the Hudson at Hastings to attack Fort Lee, which Washington hastily evacuated.

For a time, Hastings was the home of David Glasgow Farragut, the great Civil war U. S. naval commander of "damn the torpedoes" fame.

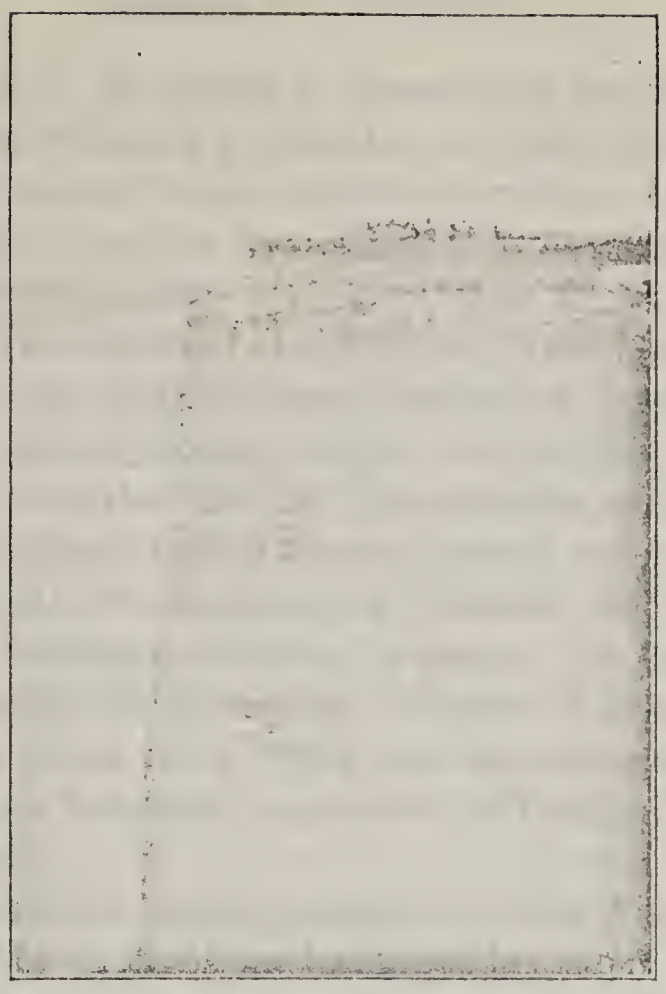
Just above Alpine on the west shore of the Hudson and about opposite Hastings, the territory of the State of New Jersey ends and that of New York State begins. At that point, Bergen County, New Jersey, joins Rockland County, New York.

Dobbs Ferry is two miles or more north of Hastings and 20 miles from New York City. It is 123 miles from Albany and 419 miles from Buffalo. These, like all the other distances from New York and Buffalo which are given in these chapters, are railroad distances. The highway distances are only slightly more than the railroad distances. It is impossible to give the exact highway distances, of the various Hudson River towns, from New York, Albany and Buffalo.

Dobbs Ferry is mainly a residential town for residents, who commute to work in New York City. This commuting is mainly over the New York Central Railroad and, to some extent, by

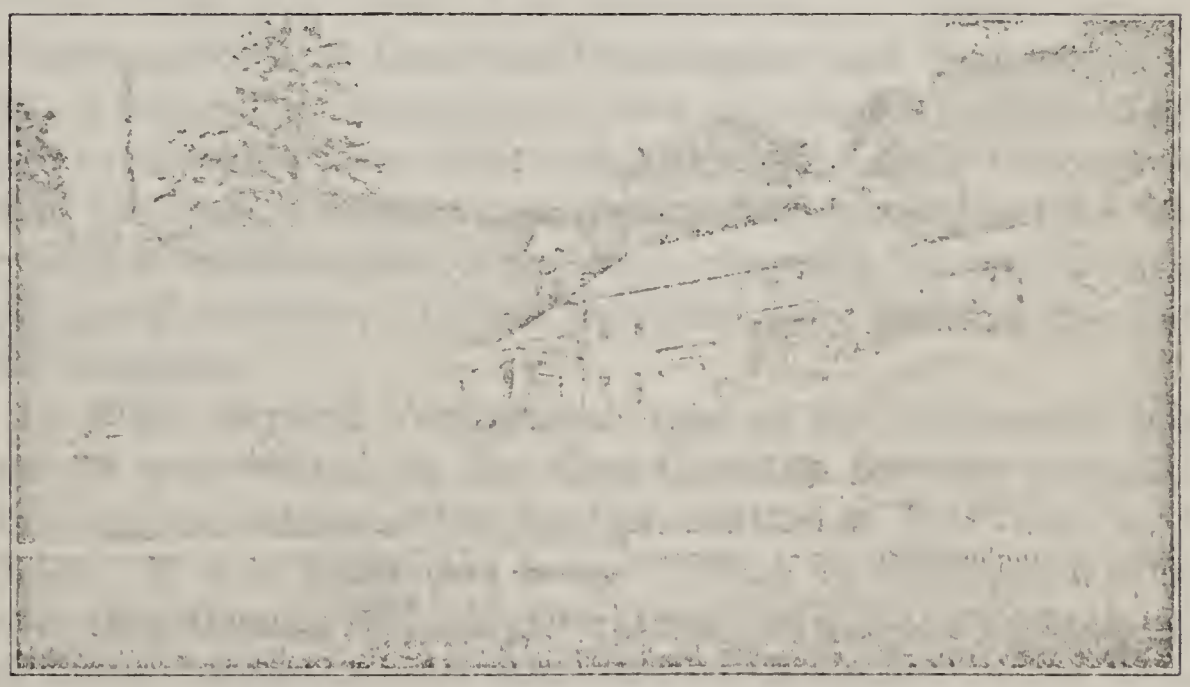
1755076

35-34



THE LOOKOUT ON THE PALISADES

The view is taken from the Storm King Highway looking southeast toward the city of Yonkers on the opposite (east) shore of the Hudson. The sheer character of this five hundred feet high cliff is seen in the picture



AN OLD MANSION AT SNEDEN'S LANDING

This handsomely situated house is finished in orange stucco with azure blue woodwork. Sneden's Landing is one of the most picturesque places along the Hudson. It was connected with Dobbs Ferry by ferry in Colonial days and the road from which this picture was taken was a main highway to Philadelphia and the South

automobiles over U. S. Route 9, Broadway or the Albany Post Road. Dobbs Ferry had a population of 5,691 in 1930.

Dobbs Ferry takes its name from Jeremiah Dobbs, a Swede, who started a ferry across the Hudson in the Seventeenth Century. The ferry connected present Dobbs Ferry with Sneden's Landing on the west shore of the Hudson River opposite. A main road from the Long Island Sound section of Connecticut ran to Dobbs Ferry in Revolutionary days. At Sneden's Landing, the ferry connected with the road to Philadelphia and Virginia. Because of these reasons, Dobbs Ferry formed one of the most important Hudson River crossings of Colonial and Revolutionary days. Sneden's Landing of today is one of the most picturesque places in the Hudson River region, although it is no longer of any importance as a place on a main line of transportation, which ran from Sneden's Landing to present Palisades, Tappan station and Old Tappan.

The River Indians called present Dobbs Ferry Wooc-quasquck, meaning "the place of the bark kettle."

During the Revolution, Dobbs Ferry was in the center of what was known as the "Neutral Ground," extending northward from Spuyten Duyvil Creek to the Croton River. This section was greatly ravaged by the guerrillas of both sides during the long war.

The Philip Van Brugh Livingston house at Dobbs Ferry was the headquarters of Generals Washington and Rochambeau in 1781, during the negotiations and maneuvers which finally ended in the American victory at Yorktown. Only the rear section of the present large house, was in existence at the time when the allied commanders were here engaged in deciding the destinies of America. It was here that they planned the Yorktown campaign.

In 1783, General Washington was at the Livingston house when he was visited by Sir Guy Carleton for the purpose of arranging the details of the final evacuation of New York by the British. It was from this house (which is illustrated in this work) that General Washington, Governor Clinton and the military escort, under General Knox started the march down Broadway to reoccupy the City of New York, following its evacuation by the British.

The fact that Dobbs Ferry was in the center of the "Neutral Ground" of the Revolution has been previously mentioned. After the Long Island, Manhattan and Westchester campaigns of 1776, the American soldiers located a line of outposts from the Hudson River, at the mouth of the Croton River, eastward to Long Island Sound. These posts were garrisoned and held by the Americans to prevent the British from attacking the Highlands which were considered the heart of American defense during the Revolutionary War. At the same time, (1776) the British established a line of outposts extending from Kingsbridge to and through Fordham, Morrisania, Westchester, Eastchester and Pelham Manor to Long Island Sound. This was the winter line.

In the summer time, these British posts were extended northward to present Yonkers, Valentine's Hill and New Rochelle. Thus, in the winter, there was a "Neutral Ground," about twenty miles wide, between the two posts which, in the summer, was decreased to about fifteen miles in width. The Americans, at their northern outposts, were known as "the upper party" and the British, on their southern line, as "the lower party." As noted in later chapters, this was brought out in the capture of Major Andre at Tarrytown. Besides the regular soldiers and militia of both sides, this region was infested by guerrillas and bushwhackers who robbed, burned and destroyed throughout the ill-fated section. The guerrillas even tortured and murdered people on occasion. These bands, which operated from the British side, were known as "Cowboys," while those which lurked within or near the American posts were known as "Skinners." The bandits frequently changed their "loyalty," as occasion required.

It is pertinent to note here that there is no section of the United States which is of greater historic importance than that of the Hudson River, from Dobbs Ferry northward to Newburgh —a distance of about 40 miles. This is the Tappan Zee-Highlands region which is covered in this and the next chapter. The section was the key of the defense of the American Revolutionary armies. It was successfully held by American troops throughout the Revolution with the exception of a few weeks in 1777, when Clinton broke through at the head of a British detachment which went north up the Hudson. Clinton retreated down the Hudson from his "fartherest north" (near Kingston), when he learned

of Burgoyne's surrender. In this river section, some of the most vital and dramatic events of the Revolutionary War were enacted, which had much to do with the winning of the war, the making of the American republic and the worldwide establishment of Democratic ideals.

On July 6, 1781, the French Army, under Count De Rochambeau, joined the American Army, under General Washington, at Dobbs Ferry. The two commanders first planned an advance on New York City but, on the advice of Lafayette, they changed their program to attack Cornwallis at Yorktown, Virginia. From Dobbs Ferry, the combined American and French armies marched to the victory at Yorktown which ended the war.

Following his arrest and detention in 1780, Major Andre was taken across the Hudson, from Dobbs Ferry to Sneden's Landing and thence by road to Tappan where he was tried as a spy and executed. This followed his treasonable negotiations with the American general, Benedict Arnold, and his capture at Tarrytown. Andre was confined at Tappan in an old stone farmhouse which is still standing and which is known as "the '76 House" or "Andre Prison." It was built in 1752. Major Andre was tried in the Tappan Dutch Church which stood on the site of the present Reformed Church. During the trial, General Washington made his headquarters in the Stratemaker house, which was built in 1700 and which is still standing in Tappan Village. In the western part of Tappan, stands a small hill on which there is a monument marking Andre's execution. Tappan lies about two miles west of the Hudson River at Piermont.

Five miles east of Dobbs Ferry is White Plains, where, on October 28, 1776, the American and British armies fought an indecisive battle, which is described in the Revolutionary chapters of this work.

White Plains had a population of 35,604 in 1930. The city is the capital of Westchester County, which had a population of 344,436 in 1920 and of 516,744 in 1930. White Plains is connected with New York City and intervening communities by the Bronx Parkway, which is New York State Route 22. This broad automobile boulevard is beautifully parked through the city of White Plains. In the northern section of the city, the beautiful Westchester County Community Center is located. It was com-

pleted in 1930. White Plains is mainly a residential town for people who are engaged in business in New York City. In recent years, its business section has undergone an architectural development suitable, in its character, to a city of a hundred thousand people, which White Plains will become within the next three or four decades.

At White Plains in front of the State Armory, stands a monument marking the site of the Westchester County Courthouse, which stood there in Revolutionary days. Here, on July 10, 1776, the New York Provincial Congress proclaimed the birth of the independent State of New York. The Congress had fled to White Plains from New York City, following the occupation of that place by the British after the disastrous American defeat on Long Island.

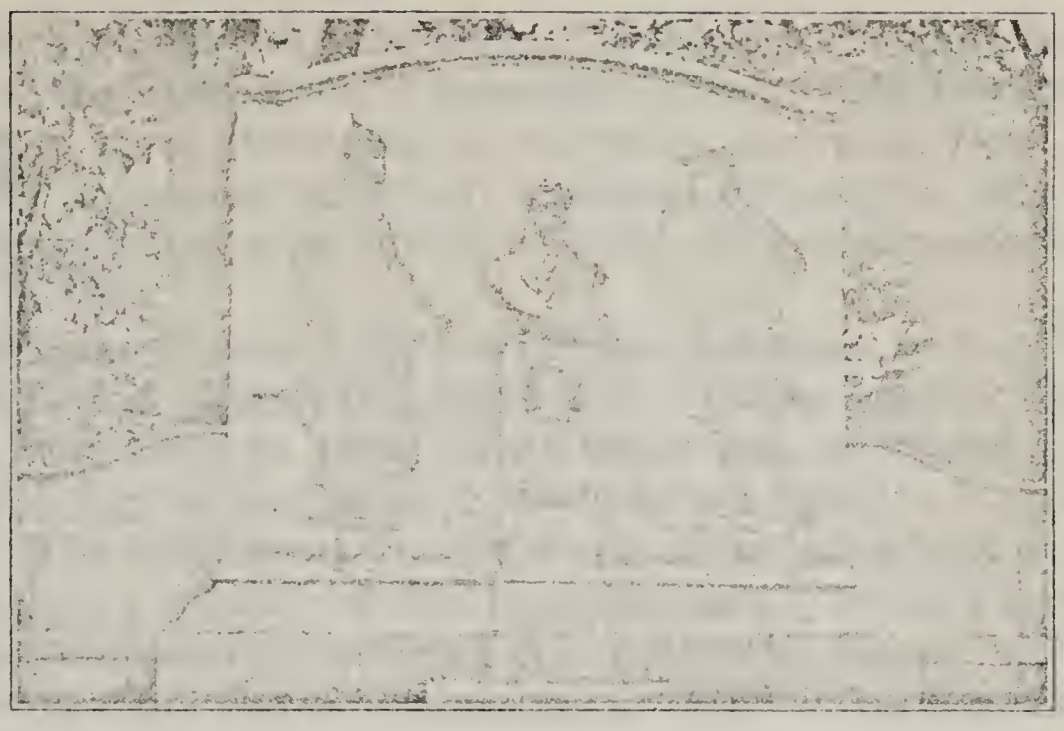
We will now return to the banks of the Hudson and resume our northward journey up the shores of that river.

North of Dobbs Ferry, the Hudson widens into the Tappan Zee, a lake-like expansion of the river which is three miles across in its broadest sections. Haverstraw Bay is, in reality, the northern section of this arm of the sea. It is separated from the Tappan Zee by Croton or Teller's Point. The Zee (sea) is about twenty miles in length. Strong winds frequently swoop down from the mountainous shores causing a high surf which is dangerous to small craft. The channel of the Hudson lies in the eastern side of the Tappan Zee. It is nearly a mile in width. The western two-thirds of the waters of the Zee are shallow. In some parts of the western shore at low tide, a person can wade eastward for nearly a mile before getting beyond one's depth.

The name Tappan comes from the tribe of Tup-han Indians which lived on the southwestern section of the shores of the Zee. It is said that Tup-han meant "cold spring," in the language of these one-time "River Indians."

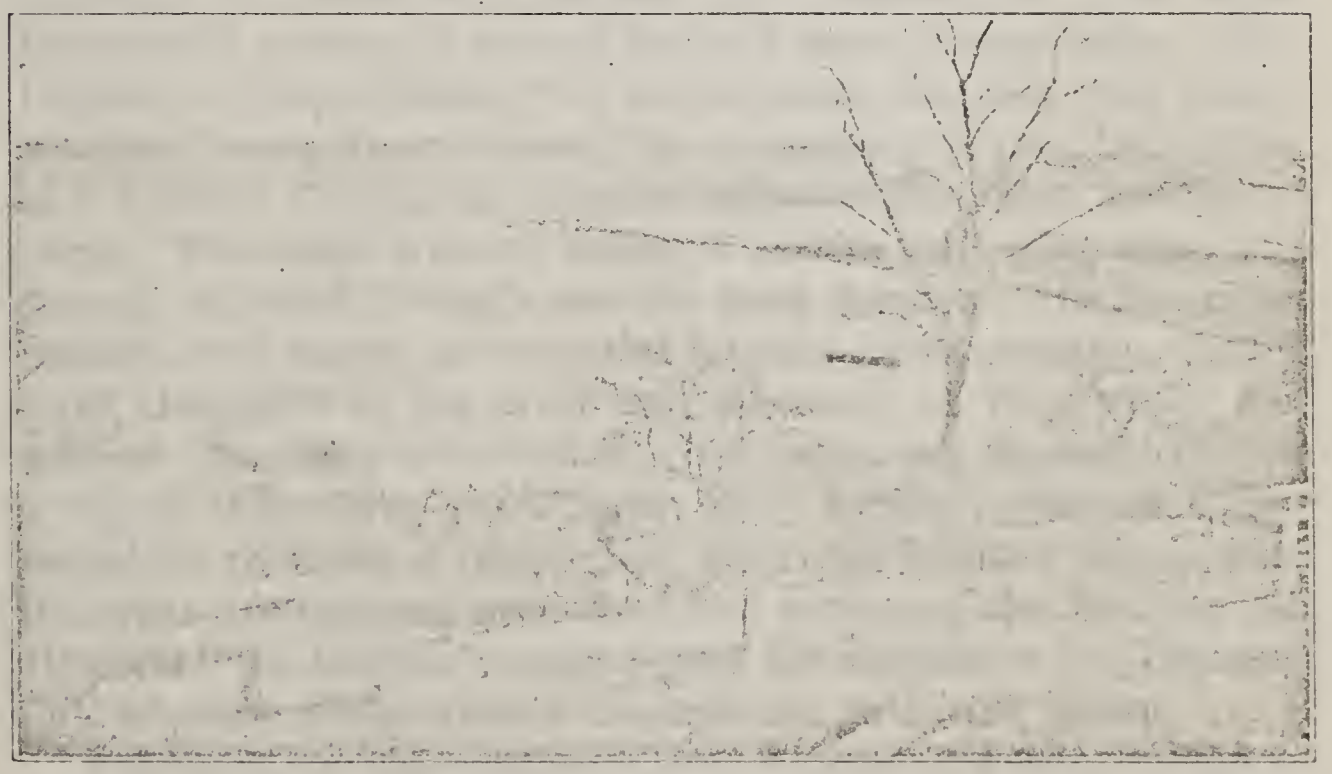
Seals have occasionally been seen in the Tappan Zee. In 1916, "the shark year," sharks were seen in the Hudson off Tarrytown and Yonkers. In Colonial times, whales occasionally swam up the Hudson as far north as Albany. "The farthest north" of a seal in the river, was when one was seen on Rogers Island near Catskill, over 100 miles north of the mouth of the river.

41-42



THE WASHINGTON IRVING MEMORIAL AT IRVINGTON

This interesting monument stands on the west side of the Albany Post Road just south of the entrance to the road leading to Irving's home "Sunnyside," which lies close to the New York Central Railroad and the Hudson River



THE OLD ERIE PIER, PIERMONT

The picture shows the pier, constructed by the Erie Railroad, projecting for a mile across the Tappan Zee, which is over two miles wide at this point. In the early days of the railroad, passengers were taken by train to the end of the pier, where they transferred to steamboats bound for New York City. The end of the pier is now the western terminus of the Piermont-Irvington ferry. The home of Washington Irving is close to the eastern shore of the Hudson on the left of this picture, which was taken from the Storm King Highway (U. S. Route 9W) at a point two hundred and fifty feet above the Hudson

Irvington lies two miles north of Dobbs Ferry and on the east shore of the Hudson. It is connected by ferry with Piermont on the west shore, Irvington is 22 miles north of New York and 121 miles south of Albany (railroad distances). The place was incorporated as a village in 1872. It had a population of 3,061 in 1930.

Irvington is named for the famous American writer, Washington Irving, (born 1783, died 1859). Irving lived at "Sunnyside" from 1836 to 1859. This house was remodeled by the author, when he purchased it, to conform largely to its original form. The building stands on the site of the house built by Wolfert Acker, a member of Stuyvesant's Council, in the latter part of the Seventeenth Century. He named the house "Wolfert's Rust," the latter Dutch word meaning "Rest." The name became corrupted into "Wolfert's Roost." Jacob Van Tassel became the owner prior to the Revolution. Van Tassel was an American patriot and the British burned the place during the war although it is said that the women of the Van Tassel family unavailingly defended the house with tongues and broomsticks. The house formed the setting of one of Irving's most famous tales, "The Legend of Sleepy Hollow," in which pretty Katrina Van Tassel, and her lovers, Brom Bones, the roustabout young Dutchman, and Ichabod Crane, the Yankee schoolmaster, play prominent parts. The whole Hudson Valley is replete with song, story and legend, of which Irving's are the most famous. He has given romance and charm to the entire Hudson River country. Irving loved the spirit of the river and especially of the Tappan Zee section. Nowhere is the spirit of the past more characteristic of a region than along the Tappan Zee. Legend, song and story reveal the romance of the section. On a still summer night, when the mists are forming over the broad waters of the Zee, one can almost see the Indians' canoes plying the surface or the Phantom Ship slipping along silently through the gathering gloom.

Piermont, on the western shore, is about opposite Irvington. It lies in Rockland County about three miles above the New Jersey line. In 1930, it had 1,756 people. The village was incorporated in 1847.

The Sparkill (Spar Creek) enters the Hudson at Piermont with a winding course through extensive marshes which lie south

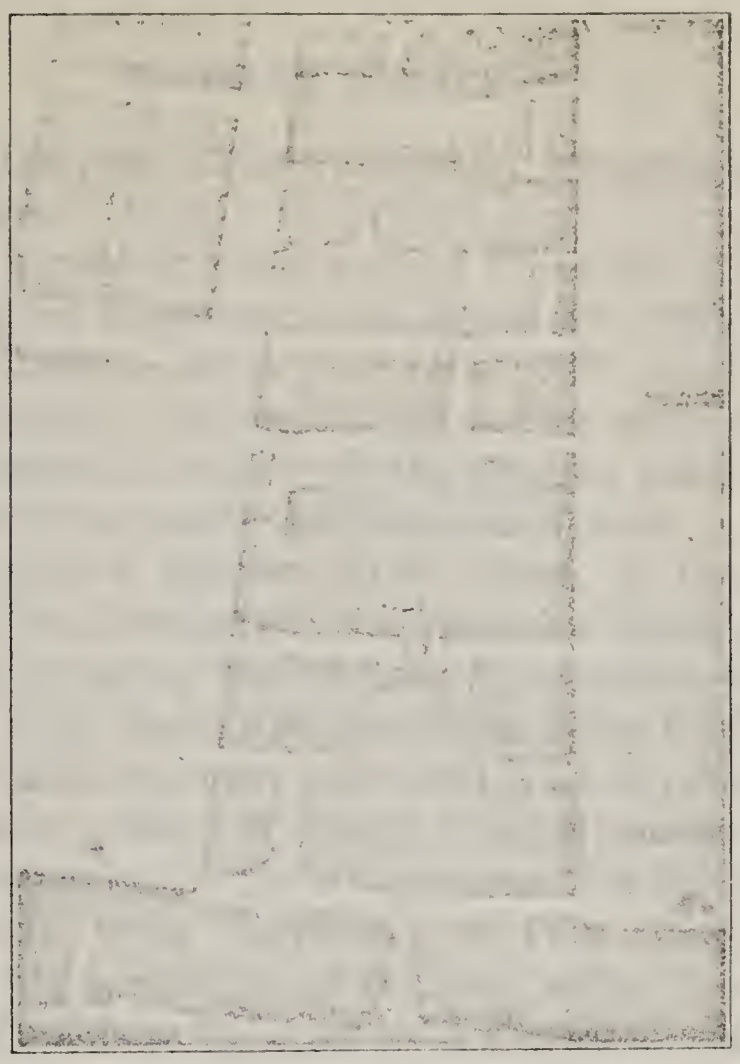
of the old Erie pier, which extends a mile from the western shore across the broad waters of the Tappan Zee to the deep channel of the Hudson. The pier is now used as the western terminal of the Irvington-Piermont ferry. The first line of the Erie Railroad was built in 1841, from Piermont, through the narrow Sparkill Valley to Goshen, N. Y. The railroad line then ran out to the end of the pier, which was built by the railroad company. From the pier, the Erie's passengers and freight were transported to New York City by steamboats for many years or until the railroad finally secured a terminal in Jersey City.

Piermont or Pier Mountain here rises, on the western shore, 700 feet above the tide waters of the Tappan Zee. It forms part of the Palisades range which extends along the entire western shore of the Zee. On its summit, a splendid panorama is visible of the lower Hudson River, and northeastern New Jersey. The entire extent of the Tappan Zee is to be seen from this unusual vantage point.

Rockland Cemetery caps one of the summits of the Piermont, which rises about 600 feet high above the river's surface. This is the burial place of Major General John C. Fremont, known, in United States history, as "the Pathfinder." He is famous as a Mexican War commander, the "Conquerer" of California and also as the first (but unsuccessful) presidential candidate of the Republican party against James Buchanan, Democrat, in 1856. The State of New York erected the handsome monument, which stands over his grave in this cemetery, which is, perhaps, the most sightly one in New York State.

The Haring house stands in Piermont. It was built of stone in 1735 and is an interesting example of a Dutch farmhouse of the period. The property has been in the possession of the same family for a period of over 200 years. The house treasures a cannonball which was fired at the place from the British warship *Vulture*, in 1780, during the Revolution.

An attractive and very beautiful residential section lies on the western shore of the Tappan Zee, between Piermont and Hook Mountain, five miles north. Many handsome residences and beautifully landscaped grounds line the shoreline in this area, which is one of the most attractive and picturesque in the Northeastern United States. In the Grandview section, the mountain



HARING HOUSE CANNONBALL

This missile was fired at the house from the British warship *Vulture* during the Revolution as a reprisal because a British landing party was driven off by American sharpshooters. The ball has been preserved in the Onderdonk-Haring families, owners of this house, ever since it was fired in 1780



HARING HOUSE, PIERMONT

This house was built of red sandstone in 1734 and it has a most interesting history

rises steeply in the rear of the residential property to heights of 600 feet and more.

At Sparkill, a mile or more west of Piermont, a viaduct carries the Storm King Highway, U. S. Route 9W (West) over the Sparkill (Spar Creek). This road runs north along the face of Piermont at a height of several hundred feet above the Hudson; thus giving an unusual outlook on the Tappan Zee to the thousands of motorists who travel this route each year.

Along the western Hudson River shore, in the Grandview section, much of the brownstone was quarried which built houses in New York City during the famous "brownstone era."

Nyack is on U. S. Route 9W, the Storm King Highway. New York State Route 59 extends westward, from Nyack to Suffern, a distance of twelve miles. By ferry, from Nyack to Tarrytown, this road has connection at the latter place with Route 19, which runs southeasterly, from Tarrytown to Port Chester on Long Island Sound, a distance of about fourteen miles.

Nyack lies about four miles north of Piermont. It is the largest of the five villages of Nyack, Upper Nyack, South Nyack, Grandview and Piermont, which form a seven-mile-long Hudson River shore community with a 1930 population of 10,389. The Nyacks—Nyack, Upper and South—had a 1930 population of 8,239. The three corporations are actually one city. Nyack was incorporated as a village in 1833. It is connected with Tarrytown by ferry which crosses the Tappan Zee at a point where it is about three miles wide. Nyack is largely a residential community for New York City business men. The town is also the trading center of Rockland County, which had a population of 59,529 in 1930.

The Nyack branch of the Erie Railroad has its terminus at Nyack. The West Shore Railroad runs through Tappan, West Nyack and other stations and through a tunnel to the Hudson's shore south of Haverstraw.

The brownstone Salisbury house, which was built in 1750, stands on the shores of the Hudson in South Nyack.

Hook Mountain, with an elevation of 730 feet above the Hudson River, rises steeply from the western shore about two miles north of the center of Nyack. The mountain is one of the most picturesque along the Hudson. The summit and its adjacent

shores are incorporated in the Palisades Interstate Park. Here is a good public bathing beach which is well patronized in the summer months.

Ice boating, skating and ice sailing are winter sports on the Tappan Zee.

Returning to the east shore of the Hudson, we find Tarrytown which is located three miles north of Irvington. It is 25 miles north of New York and 118 miles south of Albany over the New York Central Railroad.

Tarrytown and North Tarrytown are separate village corporations but they are actually one city. They had a combined population of 14,156 in 1930 as compared with 11,734 in 1920. The recent population figures of the two corporations follow: Tarrytown (1920), 5,807; (1930), 6,740; North Tarrytown (1920), 5,927; (1930), 7,416. Tarrytown was incorporated in 1870 and North Tarrytown in 1875.

The Tarrytown-Nyack ferry boats pass comparatively near the Tarrytown lighthouse, which is the first in the river going northward. It lies a short distance off the eastern shore. The Tarrytowns are principally residential villages for New York business people. A large assembling plant for Chevrolet cars is located at Tarrytown.

The name Tarrytown is derived from the Dutch name Tarwendorp, meaning "wheat town."

The Pocantico Kill or Creek runs through Sleepy Hollow (Dutch, Slaeprigh Hol) in North Tarrytown. The original bridge across the stream stood east of the present one. It was there that the Headless Horseman threw his noble pumpkin head full at the fleeing Yankee schoolmaster, Ichabod Crane, in Irving's immortal tale, "The Legend of Sleepy Hollow." This is a most entrancing story of Hudson River Dutch life of the Eighteenth Century and the reader gains from it a rosy picture of the wholesome, lusty life of the period on the shores of the Tappan Zee.

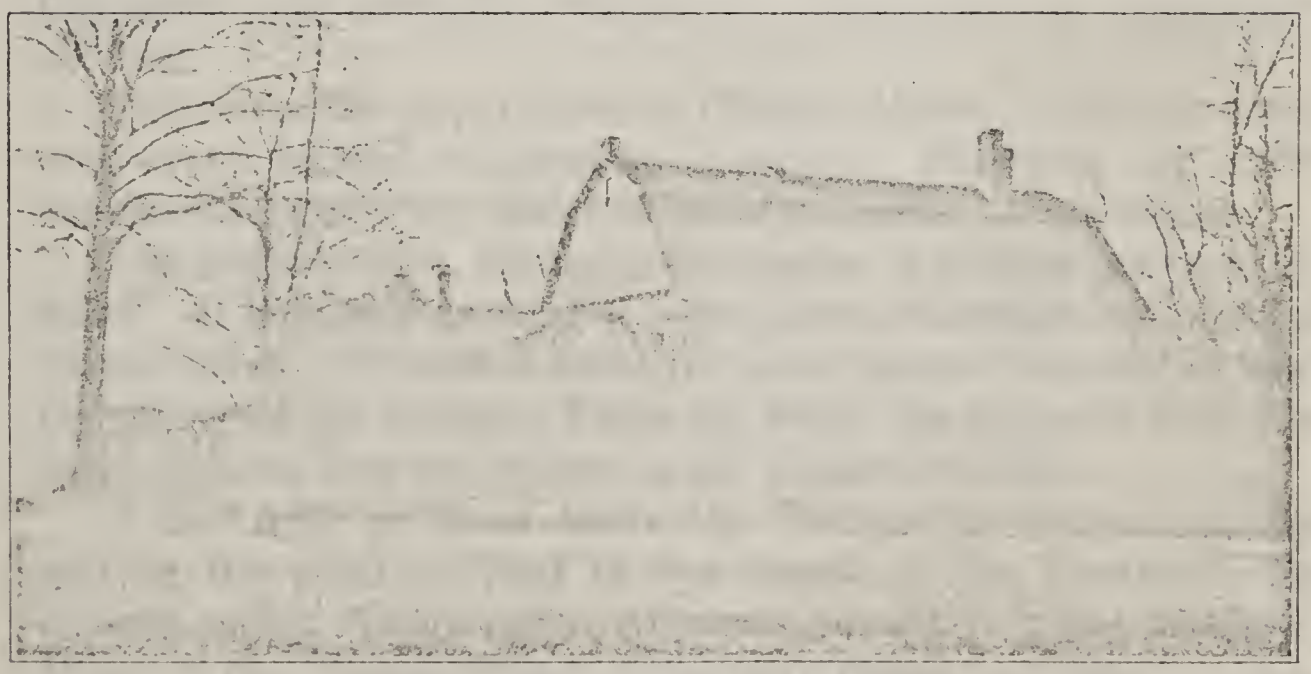
Sleepy Hollow is a beautiful bit of landscape. It still retains some of the mystic character which Irving describes so charmingly.

Frederick Philipse (Vredryck Flypsen), the Dutch patroon of Philipse Manor, has been discussed in the previous chapter in the



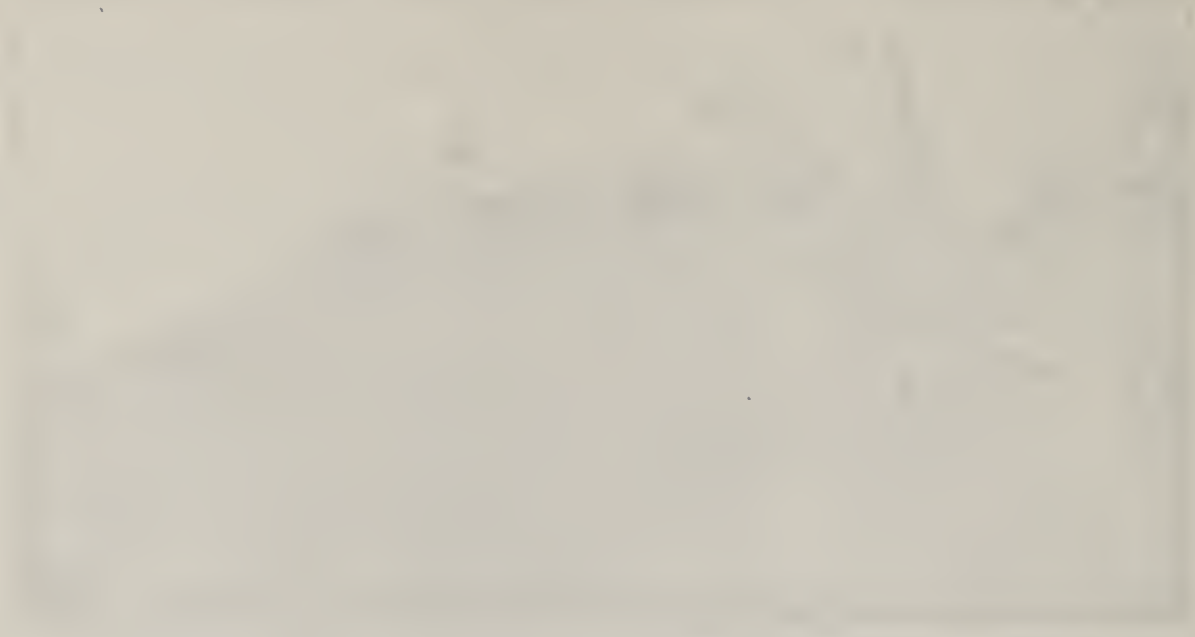
VAN CORTLANDT MANOR HOUSE, ON THE CROTON RIVER

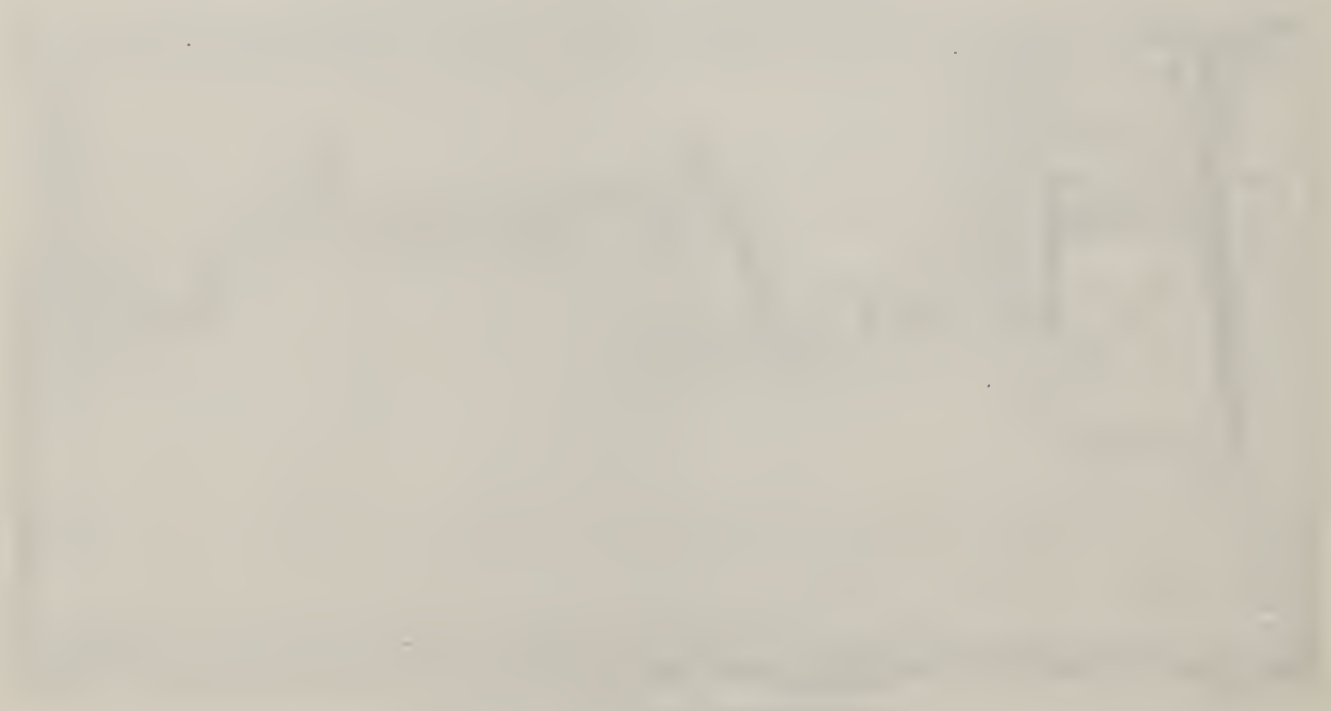
This fine old stone house was built in 1681. It is one of the most famous of the historic houses of the Hudson



SALISBURY HOUSE, NYACK

This interesting stone house was built in 1750. During the Revolution it was fired on by the British man-o'-war, *Vulture*, on the same day that the Haring House was bombarded





paragraphs relating to Van Cortlandt Park and Yonkers. He was the wealthiest man and the greatest landowner in the province of New York in the period centering around 1700. The exact date of the settlement of the Tarrytown area is not known but Dutch farmers are supposed to have located here as early as 1640.

At Sleepy Hollow, Philipse built Philipse Castle in 1683. It is a most attractive and interesting ancient stone house and it was probably the largest one which was erected in the Province of New York up to that year. It stands a short distance west of the old stone Dutch Church which is located on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9. Philipse bought his Tarrytown lands from the Indians in 1681.

The Sleepy Hollow Dutch Church bears the date of 1699. It is the oldest church building in New York State and one of the oldest in the United States. Dutch was the language used in the church services up until the year 1800. Washington Irving is buried in the Sleepy Hollow Cemetery, in which the church stands. Here is a monument to the Revolutionary American soldiers of Philipse Manor. The Sleepy Hollow Church and Cemetery are annually visited by thousands of automobile tourists.

Here were the upper mills of Philipse Manor, while the lower ones were located at present Yonkers. Farmers, for miles around, brought their wheat to these two mills to be ground.

The Indian name, Po-can-ti-co, means "a stream between the hills." It is known as the Pocantico River, although it is a creek in character. Pocantico Lake, a small body of water, is near the source of the stream. From the creek, the adjacent hills take their name as they are known as the Pocantico Hills.

A half mile or more above the Tarrytown railroad station and on the point of land at the mouth of the Pocantico, the Indians had a village called Aliponck, meaning "place of elms." Many of the Hudson River towns were planted or grew up near Indian villages, whose inhabitants were either driven off or else killed off by the rum and diseases of the white settlers—such as smallpox.

A monument, on Broadway in Tarrytown, marks the site of the capture of Major John Andre, the British Army adjutant

general, on September 23, 1780. He was taken up by John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac Van Wart, three young American militiamen, who were playing cards by the roadside when Andre came riding southward from his interview with Benedict Arnold, the American traitor, at Haverstraw. Arnold's escape and Andre's execution at Tappan are covered in a chapter in this work covering the Revolutionary events of 1780 in the Hudson Valley. The monument was erected by the people of Westchester County and dedicated on October 7, 1853. The monument was remodelled in 1880, when the present statue was erected.

Along the Tappan Zee and on the heights rising therefrom, are located many of the world's finest country houses and estates. These mansions line both shores of the Hudson for a hundred miles or more north of New York City. A great proportion of these estates are on the shores of the river along Westchester County, which is famous for its country homes.

The residence of John D. Rockefeller is on the Pocantico hills near North Tarrytown. Gen. John C. Fremont (mentioned under Piermont) was a resident of North Tarrytown for a number of years. Admiral John C. Worden lived in the little village of Sparta just north of North Tarrytown. He commanded the Union turret ironclad, the *Monitor*, in its famous fight with the Confederate ironclad, the *Merrimac*, on March 9, 1863.

Ossining lies on the west bank of the Hudson about six miles north of Tarrytown. It is 31 miles north of New York City and 112 miles from Albany. The place was settled by Dutch and English in 1690. The Sint Sinck Indians lived here and called the locality Os-sin-ing, meaning "stony place." The Dutch called it Sing-Sing and the name so remained until 1890, when the village was renamed Ossining, because the townspeople objected somewhat to having the town name dominated by that of the Sing Sing state prison here located. The village was incorporated in 1813. The town rises on rather steep hills which have elevations of from 200 to 300 feet above the Hudson. It is largely a residential place for New York City business people. However, the town also has considerable industrial development, with a large printing plant.

53-54

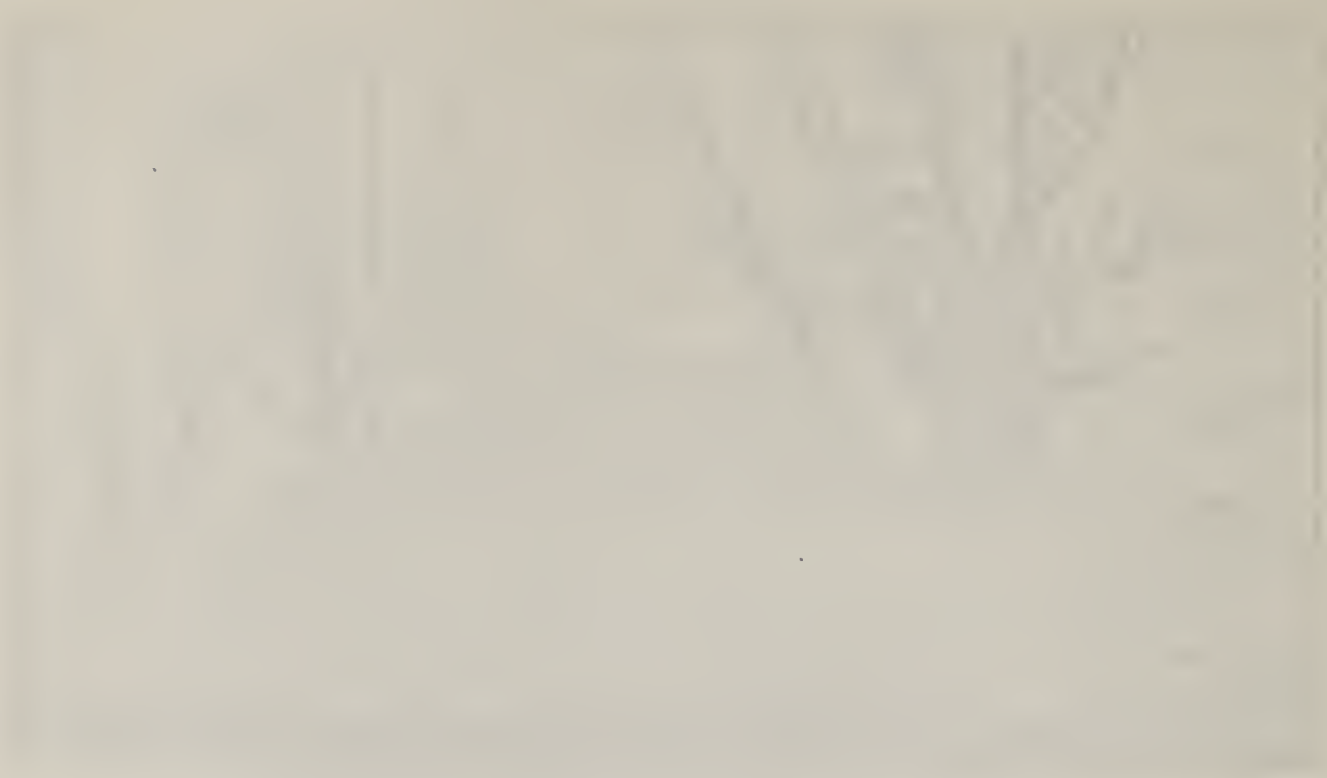


SLEEPY HOLLOW CHURCH, NORTH TARRYTOWN

This Colonial Dutch church is said to have been built in 1699, although the structure may have been completed as early as 1650. The old graveyard contains the remains of many of the early Dutch settlers



THE CASTLE, IRVINGTON



The great Sing Sing prison buildings are located directly on the shore of the Hudson. An incongruous feature of the institution is that its official name is Mount Pleasant prison, which was the former name of the township in which the prison is located.

Ossining is one of a number of villages in New York State which is actually a city in point of size. In 1930 it had a population of 15,581.

The Croton River enters the Hudson about a mile above Ossining. The Croton is famous because its watershed forms the source of the first great water supply system of New York City, which was opened in 1842. The first of the great dams, which impound the river's waters, is located about four miles northeast of the mouth of the stream. Here the Croton aqueduct starts its course of twenty-five miles southward to High Bridge in New York City. The watershed of the Croton River covers about 350 square miles. The name Croton is said to mean "the wind," in the Indian tongue.

The Van Cortlandt Manor house is located on the Albany Post Road and on the north shore of the Croton River. It was built of stone in 1681 and it was originally loopholed for defense against Indian attack. The house is most important historically. The Van Cortlandts were among the great patroons, or feudal landowners, of the Hudson River's Dutch and Colonial period. The Van Cortlandt Manor embraced 87,000 acres in Westchester County alone.

Croton, or Teller's Point lies to the north of the outlet of the Croton River into the Hudson. It extends for two miles westward into the broad waters of the Tappan Zee and separates that body of water from Haverstraw Bay to the north. However the river-lake-sea inlet, although it has been given these two names, is actually one body of water. Tradition has it that a great Indian battle was fought at the end of the point. It was known as Teller's Point throughout the Revolution and the name is somewhat used even today. The southern outposts of the American Revolutionary Army of the Highlands extended from the Croton River eastward to Long Island Sound, as previously mentioned. The British warship, *Vulture*, carried Major Andre to Croton Point for his conference with the American traitor, General Benedict Arnold. Andre was rowed to Haverstraw, where he met

and conferred over night with Arnold. The *Vulture* anchored off the Point but Colonel Livingston, of the American Army, bombarded the British ship with a little four-pound cannon and compelled it to weigh anchor and drop so far downstream that Andre could not again board her. He was compelled to return to New York by land and was captured at Tarrytown, as previously mentioned. On the discovery of his treason, Benedict Arnold escaped to the *Vulture*. The Andre-Arnold conspiracy is one of the most dramatic features of American history and the region of the Tappan Zee and the Highlands is intimately concerned in this thrilling story of a series of events which came close to ruining the American cause.

Harmon lies at the base of Croton Point. It is 35 miles from New York City and 108 miles from Albany. Harmon is (1931) the northern terminus of the electrified section of the New York Central Railroad. All north-bound New York Central trains stop at Harmon, to change from electric to steam locomotives and all south-bound trains stop to change from steam to electric motive power.

Croton-on-Hudson lies a mile north of the Harmon station. The village was incorporated in 1898. In 1930, it had a population of 2,436 as compared with 2,286 in 1920.

Haverstraw lies on the west shore of Haverstraw Bay, just above Croton Point. This northward extension of the Tappan Zee is three and three-fourths miles wide, at Haverstraw and this is the greatest breadth of this interesting and picturesque body of water as well as of the Hudson River at any point. The place takes its name from the Dutch word, Haverstroo, meaning "oat straw," which name the Dutch settlers gave the place because of the large amount of wild oats which originally grew on the Hudson's shore at this point.

Haverstraw was incorporated as a village in 1854. It had a 1930 population of 5,599. Great brickmaking yards are here located. The greatest amount of brick used in the construction of New York City buildings was made along the shores of the Hudson.

The Palisades range ends south of Haverstraw in a series of knobby peaks of which High Tor, with 820 feet elevation above the Hudson, is the highest.

From Nyack, U. S. Route 9W, the Storm King Highway runs northward over Hook Mountain to Rockland Lake and thence over and through the Palisades range and along its face nearly to Haverstraw. The highway is several hundred feet above the river and affords fine views of Haverstraw Bay.

A boulder marker, on Route 9W below Haverstraw, locates the spot on the river shore below where Andre and Arnold held their ill-fated conference on the proposed betrayal of West Point by Arnold to the British.

Stony Point is located on the west shore of the Hudson and about three miles above Haverstraw. It is 42 miles north of Weehawken (opposite 42nd Street, New York) by the West Shore Railroad. It forms a steep, rocky promontory projecting into the Hudson River. In a bold, midnight attack, General Anthony Wayne captured the fort and its British garrison on July 16, 1779. The Americans were unable to hold the post, however, and it was soon reoccupied by the British. The site of the fort and the whole point are now included in the Stony Point State Park.

Verplanck's Point is on the eastern shore of the Hudson River and about two miles above Stony Point. Verplanck's Point separates Haverstraw Bay from Peekskill Bay to the north. In Colonial and Revolutionary times, a great east-west ferry crossed the Hudson from Stony Point to Verplanck's Point. In the fall of 1780, General Benedict Arnold spent nearly a whole night in conference with Major John Andre, the British adjutant general, at Haverstraw, with regard to Arnold's treasonable proposition to deliver West Point. Because the British ship *Vulture* had been compelled to drop downstream, Andre could not board the vessel. He, accordingly, went from Haverstraw to Stony Point, crossed the Kings Ferry to Verplanck's Point and started on horseback to return to New York City. As previously noted, he was captured at Tarrytown and hung at Tappan.

In the fall of 1782, the American Revolutionary Army, 10,000 strong, under the command of Washington, moved southward, from its camp near Newburgh, to Verplanck's Point, where it was joined by the French Army, which was marching from Virginia to New England to embark for its return to France. Here, the French forces crossed the Hudson and the two armies held a

short reunion, prior to the Frenchmen resuming their march to the seacoast.

Peekskill took its name from Jan Peek, an innkeeper of New Amsterdam, who owned land here. The settlement of the village was begun about 1764. The Kitchiwonks Indians had a settlement here called Sackhoes.

On March 22, 1777, a British force landed at Peekskill to destroy American Army stores which were located there. Colonel Marinus Willett, with 250 American soldiers, attacked and repulsed the invaders.

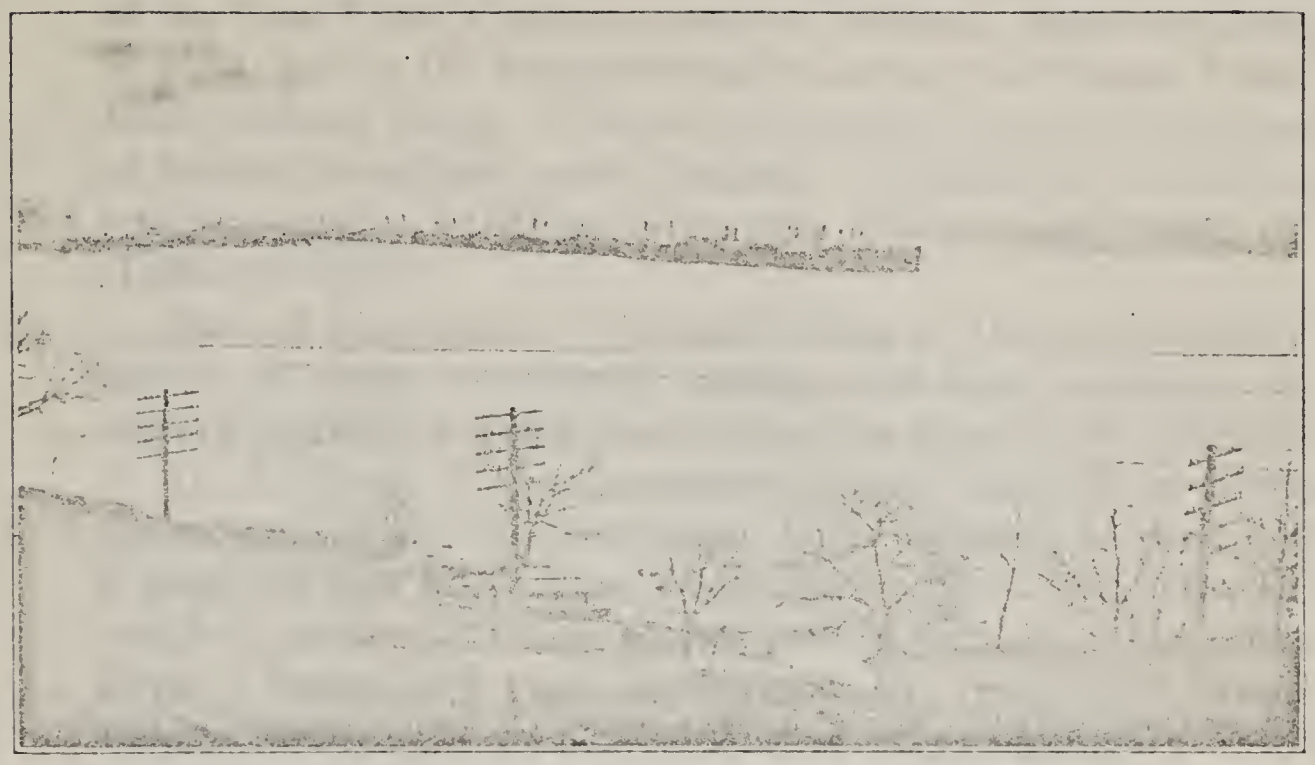
Continental Village was the name of an American Army camp, which was located near Peekskill during the Revolutionary War. It was burned by the British during their movement up the Hudson River in the fall of 1777. It was rebuilt later but no vestige of it now remains. Vaccination for the prevention of smallpox was first generally practised in America at Continental Village.

Peekskill was General Putnam's headquarters in October, 1777, when General Clinton's British troops sailed up the Hudson River in an attempt to form a junction with General Burgoyne's British Army then at bay on Bemis Heights. In 1781, Peekskill was General Washington's headquarters for a short time when the American Army moved southward to Dobbs Ferry, where it formed a junction with the French Army for the expedition against Yorktown.

Peekskill is 41 miles from New York and 102 miles from Albany. It was incorporated as a village in 1816. In 1930 it had a population of 17,758. The town is the trading center of northern Westchester County. It is a residential place for people who are engaged in business in New York City. The place has considerable industrial and commercial interests. The great Fleischman Yeast works are located south of Peekskill. The residential streets of the village rise on the commanding heights looming above the river and they give wonderful views of the broad stream and the southern Gateway of the Highlands, just to the south of which Peekskill is located. The Dunderberg lies opposite Peekskill on the western shore and forms the west side of the Gateway.

Roa Hook forms the east side of the Gateway about two miles

59-Lec



WORLD WAR SHIPS IN PEEKSKILL BAY



IN PEEKSKILL'S BUSINESS SECTION

north of Peekskill. Here Camp Smith, the state training camp of the New York National Guard is located. American soldiers, in 1776, strung the first great boom across the Hudson from Roa Hook to Jones Point. It was there located to prevent the passage of British warships up the Hudson. It broke of its own weight and was not in existence when the British Army went up the Hudson in 1777.

One of the sights of Peekskill Bay is that afforded by the scores of ocean steamships which have been anchored, in its waters, near its western shore, since the close of the World War.

U. S. Route 6 runs eastward from Peekskill to Danbury, Conn., and thence to Providence, R. I. Westward, U. S. Route 6 runs for five miles from Peekskill, to Bear Mountain Bridge which it crosses and runs thence to Port Jervis on the Delaware River. Route 210 runs southwestward, from Bear Mountain Bridge through the wonderful wild vacation country of Palisades Interstate Park, to Route 17, a few miles north of Tuxedo.

The flora of the Tappan Zee region is interesting, particularly in the great variety of its splendid trees which here thrive and grow to a great size. These trees include the fine American evergreens—pines, hemlock, fir, spruce and cedar, as well as those typical American deciduous trees—elm, maple, oak, willow, linden (or basswood), plane (or sycamore), poplar, ash, birch and beech. Typical of the Tappan Zee region are the beautiful tulip, black walnut and locust trees. The tulip tree flourishes here abundantly. Four trees, which are natives of Asia, thrive luxuriantly on the shores of the Tappan Zee. They are the horsechestnut, the weeping willow, the ailanthus and the gink. The latter tree is unusual as it has a leaf of a fern-like type—different from that of any other tree in the world. The Carolina flora intrudes into the Tappan Zee region and here we find the Carolina poplar, catalpa and magnolia trees flourishing, as well as other specimens. The once fine chestnut trees of this region have been killed by the blight.

The bird life of the Tappan Zee is interesting. It is said that more varieties of birds visit this section than any other in the United States.

This concludes the description of the Tappan Zee region of the Hudson River, extending from Yonkers northward to Peekskill.

CHAPTER 4.

THE HUDSON RIVER—PEEKSKILL TO NEWBURGH—THROUGH THE HIGHLANDS OF THE HUDSON.

DUNDERBERG—IONA ISLAND—ANTHONY'S NOSE—BEAR MOUNTAIN PARK AND BRIDGE—PALISADES INTERSTATE PARK—BATTLES OF FORTS CLINTON AND MONTGOMERY, OCT. 6, 1777—HIGHLAND FALLS—WEST POINT, THE AMERICAN MILITARY STRONGHOLD OF THE REVOLUTION—UNITED STATES MILITARY ACADEMY—CONSTITUTION ISLAND—PICTURESQUE HIGHLANDS, MAGNIFICENT RIVER VIEWS—COLD SPRING—CROW'S NEST—STORM KING AND STORM KING HIGHWAY—SIPHON TUNNEL OF NEW YORK CITY WATER SUPPLY, 1,114 FEET UNDER HUDSON.

The following chapter covers the Hudson River, in its course through the Highlands from Peekskill to Newburgh, a distance of about sixteen miles.

Dunderberg (Dutch, "Thunder Mountain") rises 916 feet above the tidewater of the Hudson at the Southern Gateway of the Highlands. It is an impressive "berg," rough, wooded and characteristic of the rocky Highlands. The Storm King Highway, U. S. Route 9W, runs along the face of Dunderberg.

From the Dunderberg northward, the Hudson has no shallows. Both shores rapidly fall into deep water. From Stony Point to the Dunderberg, the river channel has depths of 50, 60 and 70 feet. Through the Highlands, the river is deeper, running maximum depths of 100 feet or more. The deepest section is just north of West Point where the water is 216 feet deep. Northward of that point, in the three mile course to Cornwall-on-Hudson, depths of from 60 to 119 feet exist.

The Hudson's water is of varying degrees of saltiness south of the Highlands but it is generally fresh north of West Point. In seasons of exceptional drought, when the supply of fresh water has been curtailed, the salt ocean water has been known to run as far north as Kingston, over ninety miles from the mouth of the

river at the Battery. This, of course, is possible because the channel of the river is at sea level in the 150 miles from New York to Albany.

In sailing through the Highlands of the Hudson, the traveler sees what are probably the finest river views in the world. It is a panorama of changing river, rocky wooded islands, bold heights, cliffs and mountains, which frequently rise over a thousand feet clear from the river's margin. From the bordering heights, the vistas are truly magnificent.

At the Southern Gateway of the Highlands, the traveler, going northward, comes in touch with the beautiful, wild, rugged region which here encompasses New York State's main stem of transportation—the New York-Albany-Buffalo national trunk line. It is remarkable that actual wilderness country should approach so closely to the world's greatest city—for the New York metropolitan district—with nearly 10,000,000 people—is the largest civic region on earth.

The contrast of rugged mountain regions with the highly developed Hudson River country, between New York and Albany, makes the voyage up the Hudson doubly interesting and picturesque.

The Highlands of the Hudson are a northeastward continuation of the Blue Ridge range. The Ramapas run northward into the Highlands just north of Haverstraw.

The Highlands date their birth from the Ordovicic period—the third—of geological time. What is known to geologists as the great Taconic revolution marked the close of Ordovicic time. Then a high range of mountains was upheaved along the southeastern sector of New York State and northward and southward of that area. These once great mountains are now represented by the Highlands of the Hudson, the Berkshires, the Green Mountains and the Piedmont Plateau in Virginia. At the end of this upheaval, all of New York State was above the sea, with the exception of its present western area. The Hudson has cut its channel through the Highlands by the erosion of its waters during the ages.

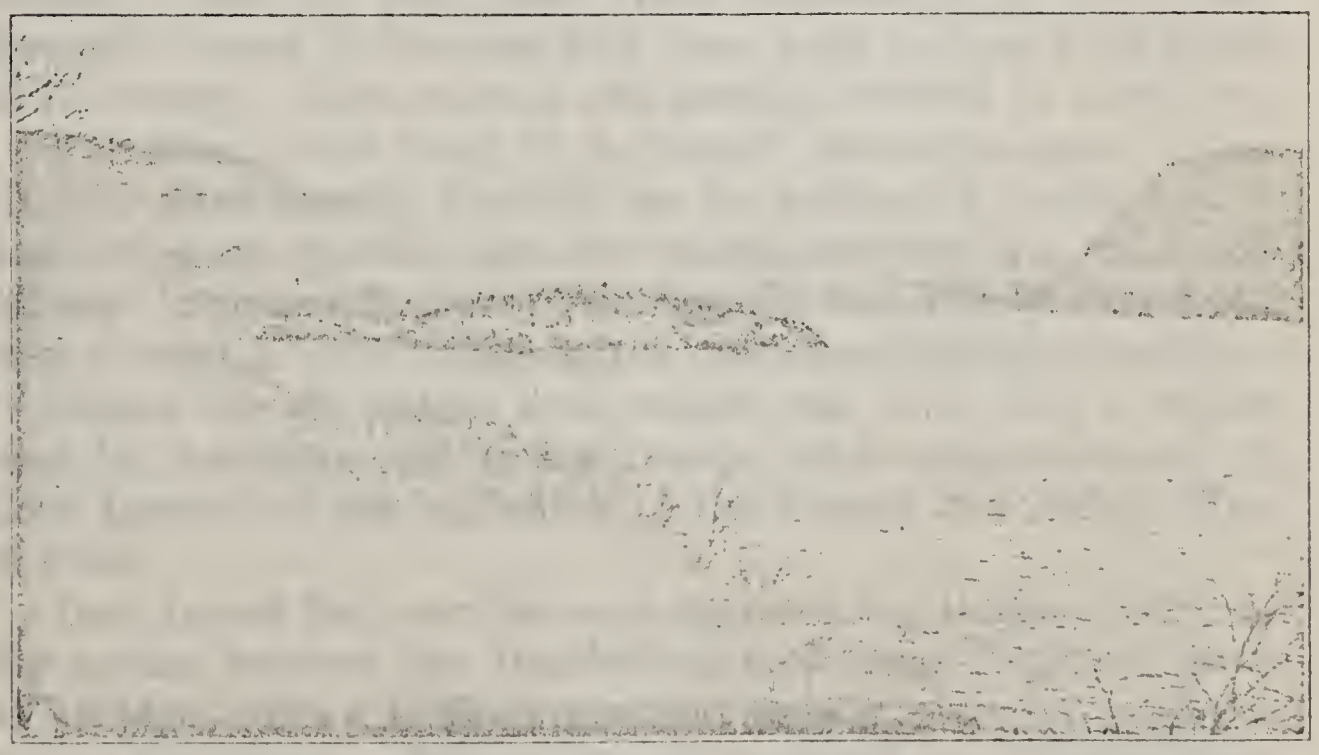
The Highlands have been a favorite subject for landscape painters and, in the Nineteenth Century, a group of American artists formed what was known as the "Hudson River school"

65-66



BEAR MOUNTAIN AND THE INN

In Bear Mountain Park, the famous summer playground of the Interstate Park. Bear Mountain rises 1350 feet above the adjacent Hudson



BEAR MOUNTAIN, IONA ISLAND, BEAR MOUNTAIN BRIDGE AND ANTHONY'S NOSE

The view is looking north from the Storm King Highway along the face of the Dunderberg. Iona Island is a United States Government reservation used for the storage of ammunition. This is an excellent view of the Highlands of the Hudson

and devoted themselves to depicting the beauties of the stream and its picturesque shores, which are particularly glorious in their Autumn foliage.

Several species of small, prickly cacti, bearing tiny, pretty flowers, cover certain rock areas in the Highlands. They may also be found on rocks on the north shore of Long Island Sound.

The Storm King Highway, U. S. Route 9W, runs through the Highlands generally at an elevation of several hundred feet above the river, thus affording splendid views of the Hudson and its magnificent and impressive mountain scenery in this region. U. S. Route 9C runs northward from U. S. Route 9, the Albany Post Road, from Peekskill northward along the Hudson to Bear Mountain Bridge and thence northward to Garrison. This road will be extended to Beacon and thence northward to Wappingers Falls, where it will meet the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9. The eastern and western shore roads, through the Highlands of the Hudson, afford comprehensive outlooks upon this scenic region. Before the development of the Storm King Highway, the western shore north-south route lay west of the Highlands and ran over present New Jersey Route 2, and New York State Routes 17 and 32, northward from Hackensack, N. J., to and through Central Valley and Vail Gate, both in New York State to Newburgh. This route is still heavily traveled by motorists.

The Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9, leaves the shores of the Hudson after leaving Peekskill on its northward course and it does not again approach the river closely between that point and Albany. Between Peekskill and Fishkill, the Albany Post Road runs through narrow valleys in the east shore Highlands country. It follows the old Indian trail, which was made into a wagon road by American and British troops, under the command of Lord Loudon, at the beginning of the French and Indian War in 1754.

Iona Island lies near the west shore of the Hudson River in the section between the Dunderberg and Bear Mountain park and bridge. It is a U. S. government storage place for ammunition and explosives. A good view of the island is obtainable from U. S. Route 9W, the Storm King Highway.

Above Dunderberg, the Hudson makes a turn westward and part of this course is called the Horse Race.

Anthony's Nose lies on the eastern shore about two miles or more above Dunderberg. Anthony's Nose has an elevation of 1,228 feet above the Hudson. The Bear Mountain Bridge road runs from Peekskill to the Bear Mountain Bridge, which connects Anthony's Nose with Bear Mountain Park. The bridge rises several hundred feet above the Hudson and the views therefrom are superb.

Bear Mountain is 1,350 feet above the sea level of the Hudson and it is a most imposing height. Anthony's Nose is said to have been named after Anthony Van Corlaer, the doughty trumpeter of Governor Stuyvesant. The Sugar Loaf hills rise on the east shore to the north of Anthony's Nose.

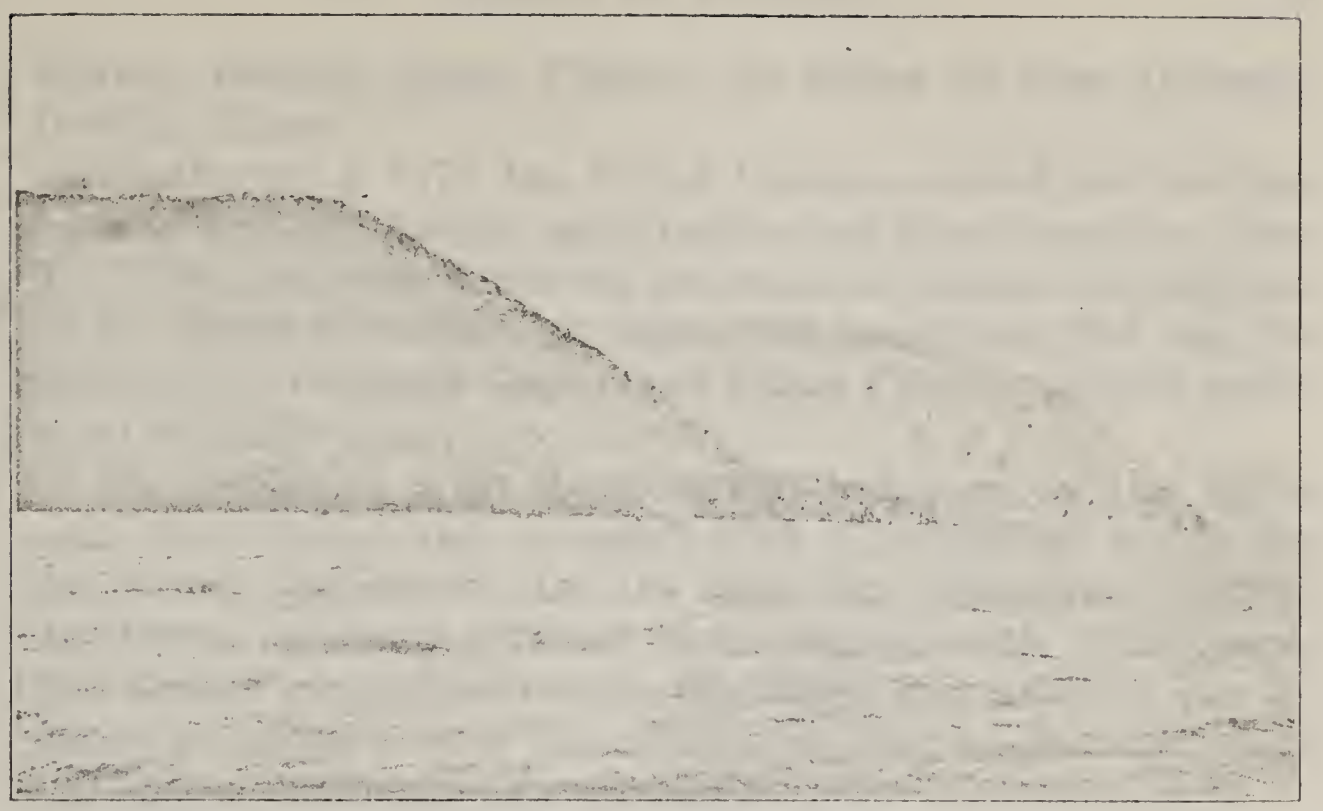
Bear Mountain lies in the Palisades Interstate Park. The Inn is a picturesque building which stands on a field many acres in extent. In this mountainous region, this great green is remarkable for its level character. Highland Lake lies at the rear of the Inn. It is alive with canoes and boats in the summer season. Countless thousands of people visit Bear Mountain Park during the summer and fall. The greater part of the Palisades Interstate Park lies to the west of Bear Mountain Park. Roads and lakes have been created and it is a region of wild beauty which forms a great vacationland, particularly for the millions resident in the New York metropolitan district.

Fort Montgomery is the station of the West Shore Railroad for Bear Mountain Park. It is 43 miles from Weehawken, New Jersey, which is opposite 42nd Street, New York City.

In the fall of 1777, the British general, Sir Henry Clinton, moved a force of 3,600 troops up the Hudson to form a junction with Burgoyne's invading army above Albany. The chief American defenses of the Highlands, at that time, were Forts Clinton, Montgomery and Constitution. They were built in 1775-1776. Fort Clinton stood 123 feet above the Hudson about opposite the southern limits of Bear Mountain Park. Fort Montgomery was a mile northward and both posts were on the west shore. The Storm King Highway passes both sites. Fort Constitution stood on the eastern river shore on present Constitution Island and just above West Point.

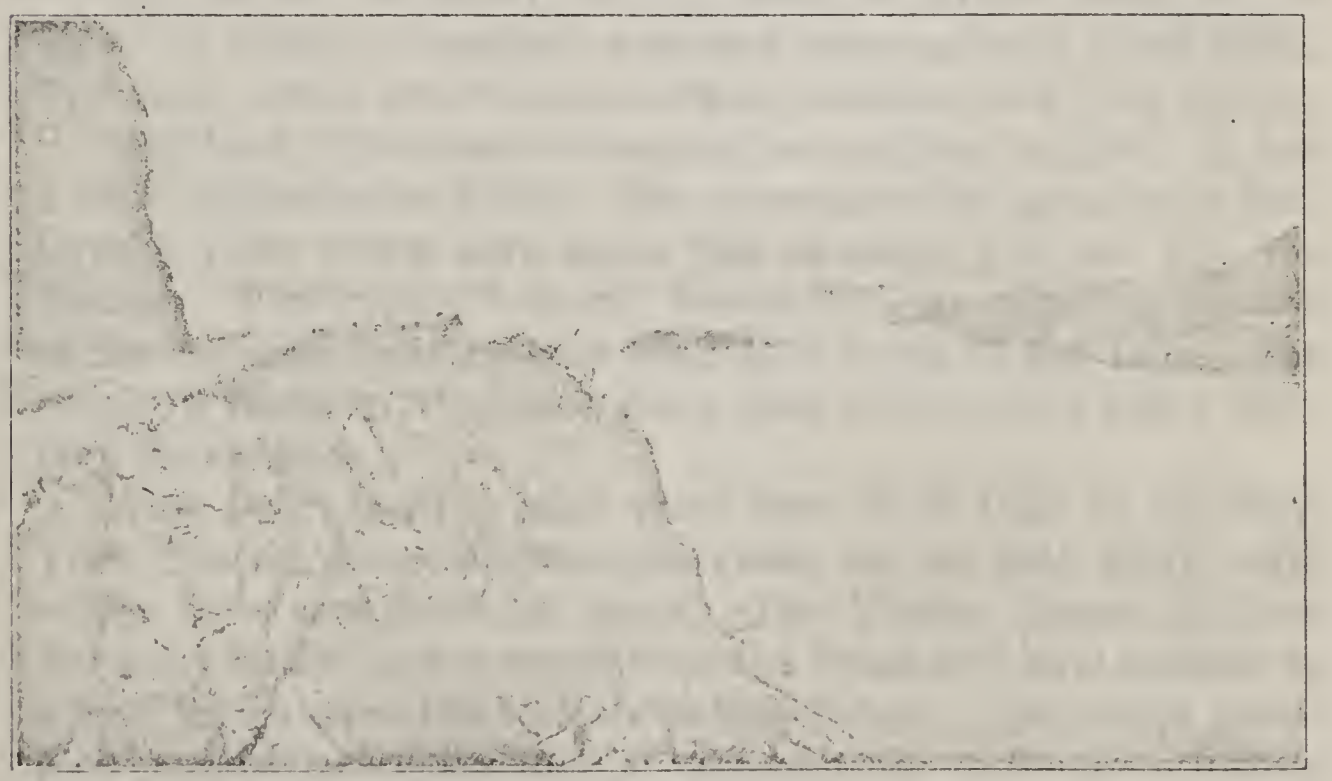
In October, 1777, Forts Clinton and Montgomery were commanded by Major General and Governor George Clinton and his

69-70



TARGET HILL AND STORM KING

Two famous mountains of the Highlands, seen from the dock at Cold Spring on the east shore of the Hudson. The Storm King Highway is plainly visible cut in the rocky face of these towering heights



(Photo by the author)

HIGH SPOT ON STORM KING HIGHWAY

The photograph shows the curve of the road around the face of Storm King at a point where the highway (U. S. Route 9W) is six hundred feet above the Hudson. The view is toward the north, looking over Newburgh Bay with Bannerman Island in the middle distance

brother, General James Clinton, the father of later Governor DeWitt Clinton.

On October 6, 1777, the British troops assaulted the two forts by land and the British boats bombarded them from the river. The 2,000 American defenders put up a hot fight and a desperate all-day battle followed. At night, the Americans fled into the mountains. Generals George and James Clinton escaped northward with 200 men.

On October 7, 1777, the victorious British expedition sailed past West Point and occupied Fort Constitution which the Americans abandoned. On the same day, Burgoyne's British Army was decisively defeated in the second battle of Saratoga. The British occupation of the Highlands was brief as the invaders retreated to New York City after they reached Rhinebeck and learned of Burgoyne's surrender.

The deep ravine of picturesque Popolopen Creek lies directly north of Bear Mountain. Iron is mined in the Highlands several miles westward and it comes to the Hudson River for shipment by huge baskets traveling on great cables which pass over the Storm King Highway, U. S. Route 9W, in this section.

On the river section of the Highlands, lie three villages besides the U. S. Military Academy post and community at West Point. The three towns are Highland Falls, Garrison and Cold Spring.

Highland Falls was incorporated as a village in 1906. It had a 1930 population of 2,910. The town takes its name from Buttermilk Falls which here has a fall of about 100 feet into the Hudson. Picturesque Ladycliff Seminary is an imposing feature of the landscape on the bold bluff just north of the falls. The northern limits of Highland Falls abut on the West Point Military Reservation.

West Point is fifty miles from New York City by the New York Central Railroad from Garrison, on the east shore, with which it is connected by ferry. The United States Military Academy buildings are situated on the broad and level sunmit of a bluff which rises 160 feet above the Hudson. An abrupt precipice bounds the eastern side of this plateau, while the northern river side slopes more gently to the stream at the place where its course rounds the Point and curves into a bay at the western extremity of the northern river shore. As previously stated, the

Hudson reaches its greatest depth—over 200 feet—at this place. Steep heights hem in the plateau on which the Academy buildings are located.

The northern edge of the plateau commands an outlook upon the Northern Gateway of the Highlands—a view that is superb and impressive beyond the powers of description. Looking northward, the spectator sees Cro' Nest (1,396 ft. elevation) and Storm King (1,340 ft. elevation) on the western shore. The Storm King Highway is seen rising to a height of 600 feet above the river on the sheer face of Storm King. From this point, some of the most magnificent river views in the United States, are obtainable. The village of Cold Spring is seen on the eastern shore. Just north of the town, rises Bull Hill and farther north, and opposite Storm King, is Breakneck Mountain with a height of 1,196 feet. One after another, these rocky, wooded heights rise sheer from the brink of the Hudson.

Rugged Constitution Island lies in the right foreground of this magnificent picture, which is seen from West Point, through this river mountain pass. Newburgh Bay lies to the north of the Gateway.

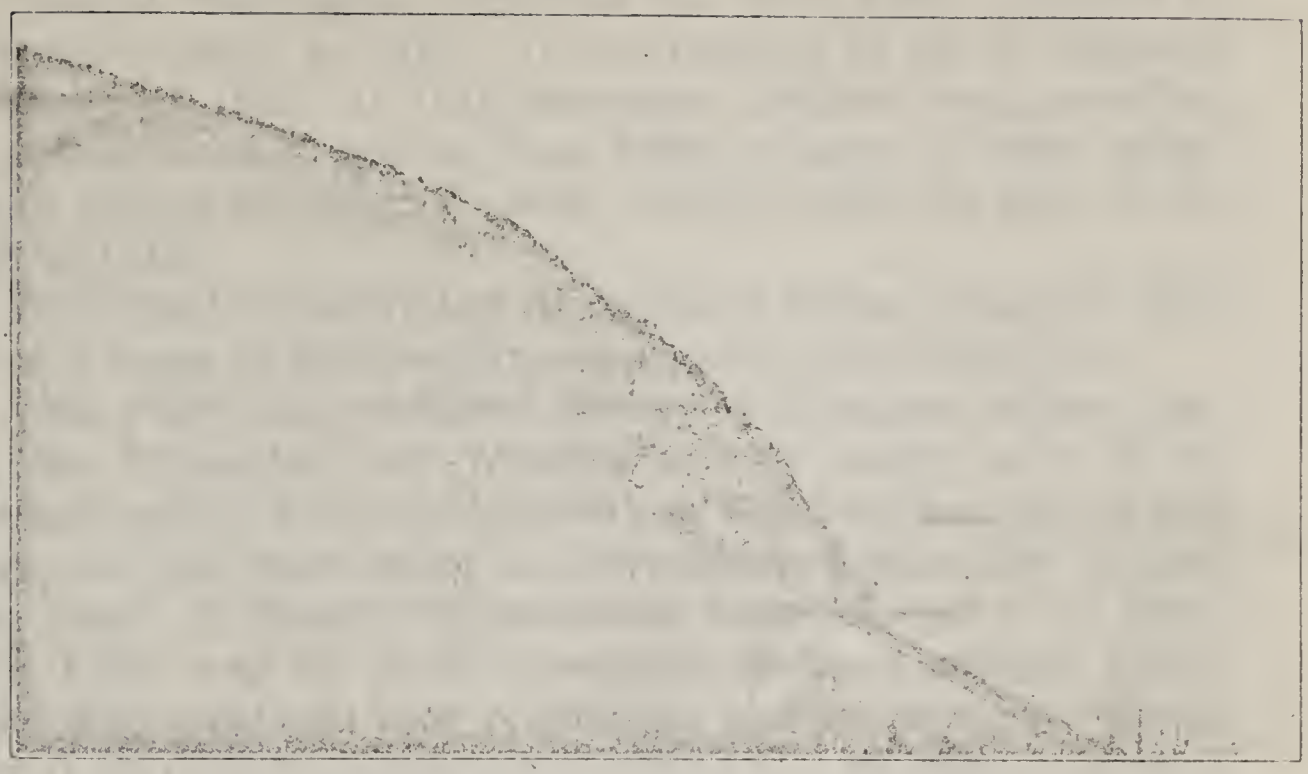
At the Northern Gateway of the Highlands, the river breaks through great mountains of rock which form a vast gorge in the mountain chain which here crosses the Hudson in a northeasterly direction, making a connection between the Ramapos and the Berkshires, ranges of the Atlantic Coastal mountain system. The river, at the Point, is only one-quarter mile wide.

West Point is one of the most beautiful spots in the world, particularly on a pleasant Indian summer day when the glorious autumn foliage of the mountains is in its most beautiful aspect.

A plain, known as German Flats, lies at the northern end of the plateau at West Point. On it is the cemetery which forms a burial place for many distinguished soldiers of the United States. Farther to the north is Washington's Valley, where the house stood which Washington occupied for a time in 1779. Fort Putnam stands at an elevation of 569 feet above the Hudson near the Stadium. It has been somewhat restored.

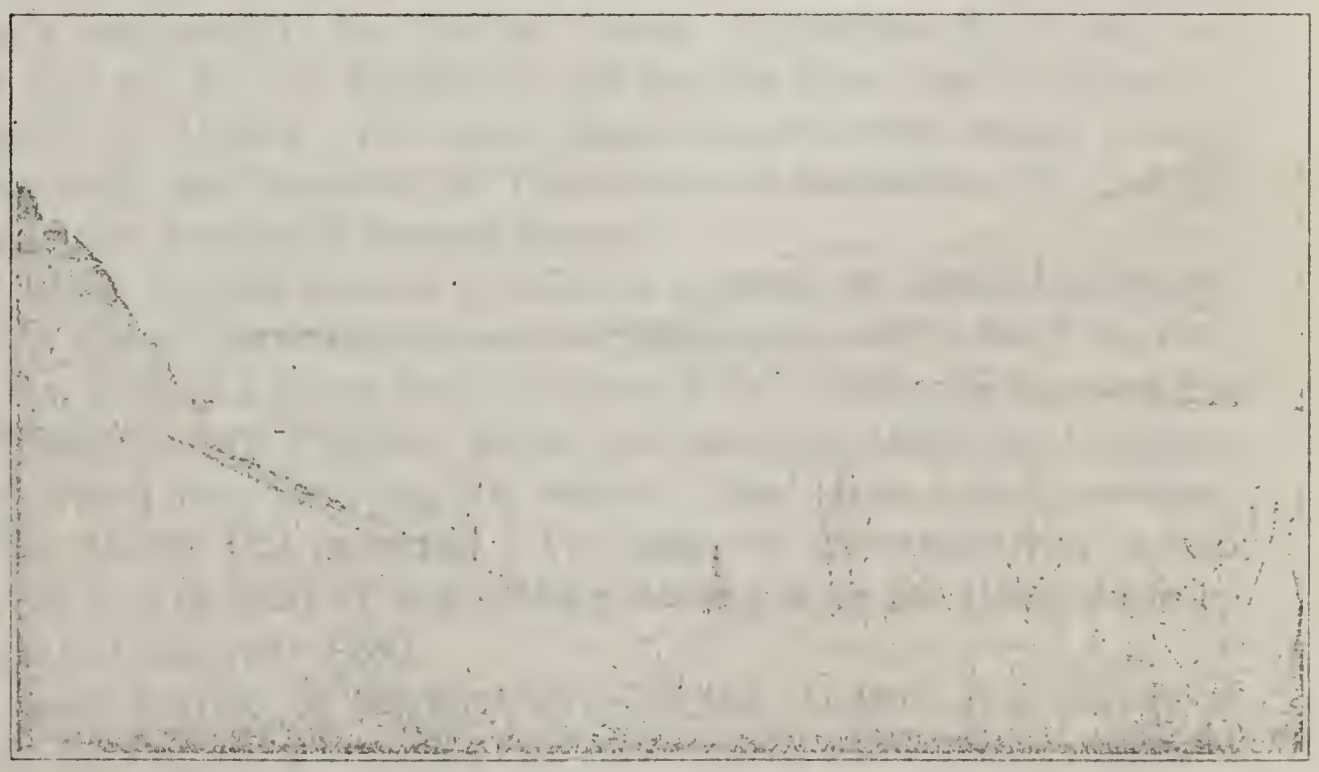
The United States Military Academy at West Point is described in a later chapter of this work.

73-74



STORM KING MOUNTAIN AND HIGHWAY

The road, which has been cut on the rocky face of the mountain, rises to a height of 600 feet above the Hudson. Storm King has an elevation of 1340 feet above the river



NORTHERN GATEWAY OF THE HIGHLANDS

Storm King Mountain on the left. Breakneck Mountain, 1196 feet above the Hudson, is on the extreme right. Bannerman Island and Newburgh Bay are seen in the distance. The view was taken from the Storm King Highway looking north

General Washington suggested the West Point Academy to Congress as early as 1783. It was founded by act of Congress on March 16, 1802. In 1816, the cadets' uniform was prescribed by a general order, and the West Point uniform of today, which closely follows the original model, vividly recalls the days of the War of 1812.

West Point attracts many thousands of visitors annually, with whom it is one of the most famous places in North America.

West Point was considered the key of American defense during the Revolution and Washington was keenly alive to its strategic value. Fort Constitution was first built here on the east shore, and the construction of Forts Webb, Wyllys and Putnam (the latter on Mount Independence) soon followed. By 1779, West Point was the great stronghold of the American Army, which was encamped near Newburgh, just to the north, during several years of the latter part of the war. On May 1, 1778, a great chain of logs was stretched across the river here, where it remained as a barrier to the passage of British vessels until the end of the conflict.

In the fall of 1780, Gen. Benedict Arnold was in command of the post, which he plotted to betray to the British for £10,000 and a command in the British Army. September 25, 1780, was the day set for the British to sail up the river and for the surrender by Arnold. However, Major Andre, with whom Arnold conspired, was captured at Tarrytown on September 23 and the whole plot gradually became known.

When Arnold learned of Andre's capture, he entered his barge at the waterside at Garrison, drew his pistols and ordered his men to row him to a place below Teller's Point, where he boarded the British warship *Vulture*, which had brought Andre up the river and which was awaiting his return. And thus Arnold escaped, while Andre was executed. The story of the conspiracy is told in full in a chapter of this history dealing with the Revolutionary events of the year 1780.

Cold Spring, on the east shore of the Hudson, is a village of Putnam County which lies two miles north of Garrison, opposite West Point. It is 52 miles north of New York and 91 miles south of Albany. Putnam County is named for Gen. Israel Putnam,

the Revolutionary general, who was active in this section during the War for Independence.

Cold Spring was incorporated as a village in 1846. In 1930, it had a population of 1,779. Nelsonville, with a 1930 population of 471, adjoins Cold Spring on the east. A concrete road (Route 301) connects Cold Spring with the Albany Post Road, two miles to the eastward. Cold Spring has a very picturesque situation amid the Highlands.

The West Point Foundry, near Cold Spring, was the place where the famous DeWitt Clinton locomotive was made. It drew the first regular steam-drawn train of the present New York Central Railroad over the first link of the road—the Mohawk and Hudson, running from Albany to Schenectady in 1831. The locomotive is now on exhibition in the Grand Central Station, New York City.

Parrott rifled cannon and ammunition were made at a foundry to the south of Cold Spring, during the Civil War, when they were used extensively in the Union armies.

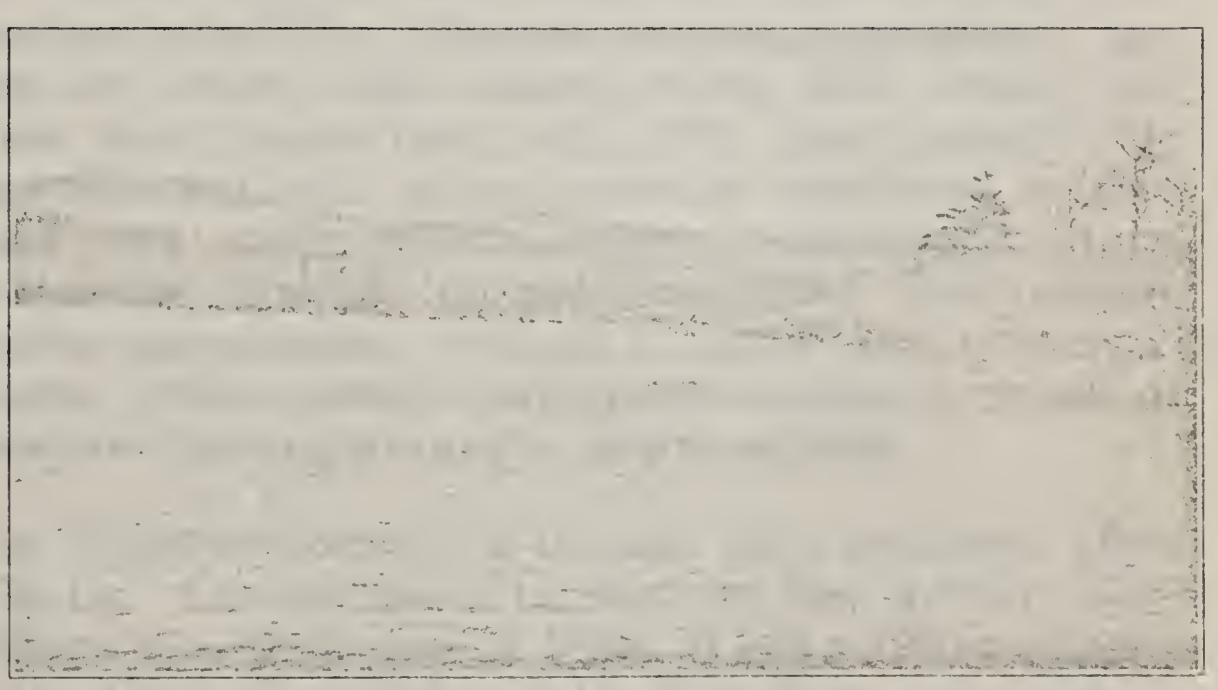
Storm King is the western side of the Northern Gateway of the Highlands. The northern terminal summits on the eastern shore form the highest peaks of the Highlands. They are New Beacon (1,685 feet) and Old Beacon (1,471 feet). They take their names from the fact that the Americans burned signal fires on their summits during the Revolution. Both of these peaks are seen to advantage from Newburgh on the western shore. The northern line of Putnam County starts from the Hudson and runs in a general easterly course on these summits, from which the adjacent City of Beacon takes its name.

The Highlands of the Hudson form a very picturesque mountain region. There are many fine estates and country homes scattered throughout this mountain section, some of them being located upon seemingly difficult heights to reach.

Before concluding the description of the Hudson Highlands, it is pertinent to mention a great work with which this section is concerned but which is not in evidence. The tunnel of the Catskill water supply system of New York City passes under the Hudson from Storm King, on the western shore, to Breakneck Mountain, on the eastern shore. This is done by means of a great syphon tunnel which lies 1,114 feet below the surface of

the Hudson. The river here runs in a deep channel in the rock, which, however, is filled with silt to a depth of hundreds of feet. In order to reach a proper rock channel for the tunnel it was necessary to bore it at the great depth mentioned. The Catskill water supply system was inaugurated in 1917. The supply comes from the Ashokan Reservoir, west of Kingston, and from the Schoharie or Gilboa Reservoir in the Upper Catskills. The system is described in a chapter of this work dealing with the period of the construction of the system. From Breakneck Mountain, the water supply tunnel runs southward to New York City.

This concludes the description of the river's course through the Highlands of the Hudson.



HESSIAN POND, BEAR MOUNTAIN PARK

This lakelet lies on the plateau at the foot of Bear Mountain. It takes its name from the fact that the bodies of a number of dead Hessian soldiers were thrown into the pond, following the assault on Fort Montgomery, American Post, in 1777. The pond is used for boating by the thousands of people who throng the park in the summer. Peaks of the Highlands are seen in the distance

CHAPTER 5.

THE HUDSON RIVER—NEWBURGH TO HUDSON.

CORNWALL—THE RIVER CHANNEL TO POUGHKEEPSIE—NEWBURGH—FIRST SETTLEMENT OF PALATINE GERMANS AT NEWBURGH—CAMP OF AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY ARMY AND WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS, 1779-1783 — HASBROUCK HOUSE (1750) WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS—STATE MUSEUM AND TOWER OF VICTORY IN STATE PARK, NEWBURGH—BEACON—FISHKILL, AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY CAMP—DEVIL'S DANSKAMMER—POUGHKEEPSIE, FORMER STATE CAPITAL, WHERE CONSTITUTION OF UNITED STATES WAS ADOPTED, 1788—POUGHKEEPSIE BRIDGES—ESTATE OF GOVERNOR ROOSEVELT—KINGSTON, SETTLED BY DUTCH, 1652—SENATE HOUSE, 1676, WHERE NEW YORK STATE LEGISLATURE MET, 1777, STATE CONSTITUTION ADOPTED—WALLKILL RIVER—ASHOKAN RESERVOIR OF NEW YORK CITY WATER SUPPLY—ROKEBY, MONTGOMERY PLACE, LIVINGSTON MANOR HOUSE—SAUGERTIES, GERMANTOWN, NORTH GERMANTOWN, SITES OF PALATINE GERMAN SETTLEMENTS, 1710—CATSKILL MOUNTAINS—CATSKILL, SCENE OF STORY OF "RIP VAN WINKLE"—CITY OF HUDSON.

The Village of Cornwall is the next town northward above Cold Spring. Cornwall lies at the northern base of Storm King. The village was incorporated in 1884. It had a 1930 population of 1,912. Cornwall-on-Hudson is the West Shore station for the village, which lies between U. S. Route 9W, the Storm King Highway, and Route 32. Moodna Creek enters the river at Cornwall-on-Hudson.

From this point northward to Kingston, a distance of nearly 40 miles, the Hudson is a broad, tidal river. Channel depths of from 30 to 90 feet are found and the river varies in width from three-eighths of a mile to one mile. At Newburgh Bay, it is a little over a mile wide. At Poughkeepsie, the stream is three-

eighths of a mile wide, with a maximum depth of 70 feet on the west shore.

The Central New England Railroad makes connection with the New York Central at Dutchess Junction, on the east shore, 57 miles north of New York and 2 miles south of Beacon.

Newburgh is on the Storm King Highway, U. S. Route 9W. From Newburgh, Route 215 runs westward to Wurtsboro on U. S. Route 6N, which runs between Port Jervis and Kingston. Route 32 runs southward, from Newburgh back of the Highlands, to Route 17 at Harriman, thence southward to Suffern, Ridgefield and Edgewater, where connection is made with New York by ferry.

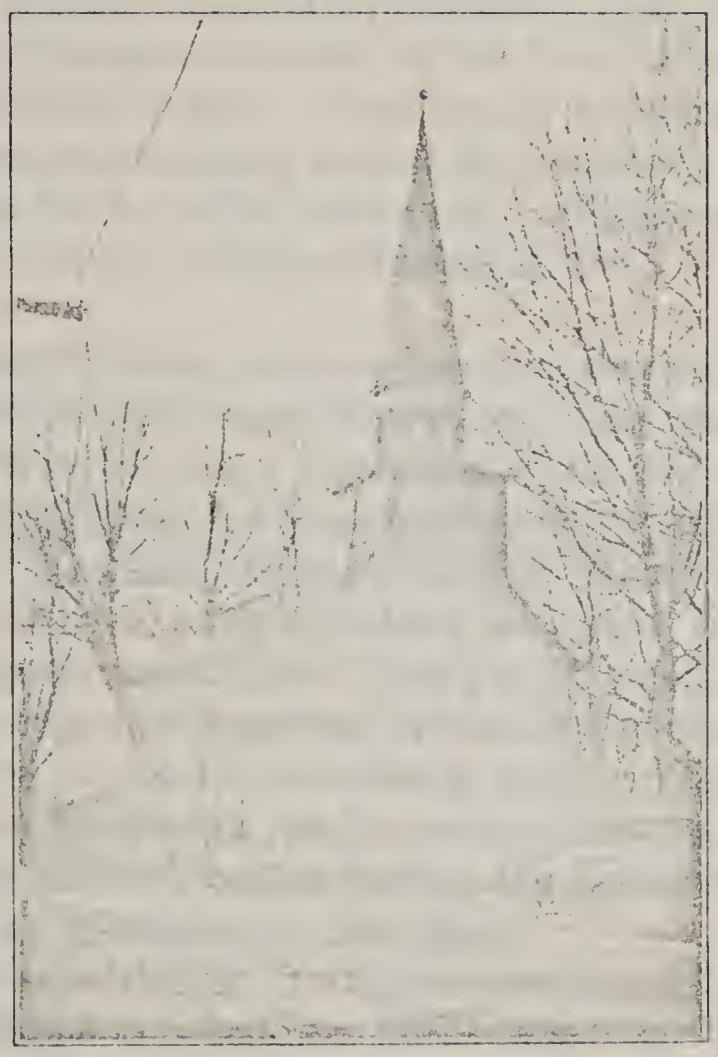
Newburgh, on the western shore of the Hudson, is 57 miles from New York and 85 miles from Albany, over the West Shore Railroad, with which a branch of the Erie Railroad here makes connection. A ferry connects the City of Newburgh with the City of Beacon. The Hudson River day line boats stop at Newburgh during the season. Orange Lake, which is about one mile in length, lies about four miles northwest of Newburgh. Cronomer Hill, a small mountain-like peak, rises to an elevation of 728 feet on the northwestern limits of Newburgh. The streets of the city rise to a height of 300 feet above the river and they often afford beautiful views.

Newburgh is in a region of great scenic and historic interest. Hudson's *Half Moon* anchored here, on September 14, 1609, on his northward voyage, and again, on September 29, 1609, on his return sail down the river which bears his name. The city was first settled by Palatine Germans in 1709. It was incorporated as a city in 1865. Newburgh had a 1930 population of 31,253.

Newburgh's greatest historical interest lies in its connection with the encampment of Washington's American Army near here during the Revolution.

The American Army encamped at New Windsor, which is on the outskirts of the present city, in June, 1779, and in the fall, winter and spring of 1780-1781 and from April, 1782, until November, 1783, or during the greater part of three years. General Washington made his headquarters at the Ellison house in New Windsor in 1779, 1780 and 1781. In 1782, the General and his staff moved to the Hasbrouck house, on present Liberty Street,

81-82



FIRST REFORMED DUTCH CHURCH,
FISHKILL, ERECTED IN 1765

This church was used as an American Army prison during the Revolution. The New York Provincial Congress met here in 1776

Newburgh. Here he remained until he left with a portion of the American Army to reoccupy New York City, on its evacuation by the British in 1783.

Washington's Newburgh headquarters is located in a State Park adjacent to the Historical Museum, which has here been erected by the state. The Tower of Victory stands to the northeast of the old stone house which was built in 1750. The Tower was erected jointly by the United States and New York State governments in commemoration of the final success of the American Revolutionary Army. Washington's headquarters and the State Museum are annually visited by thousands of tourists.

Newburgh is the chief town and trading center of Orange County, which had a 1930 population of 130,318. Goshen is the county seat.

Gen. James Clinton, famous Revolutionary commander, was born at Little Britain, near Newburgh. He was the father of Governor DeWitt Clinton, "the father of the Erie Canal" and an unsuccessful candidate for the presidency in 1812, when Madison was elected. Maj.-Gen. George Clinton, who was a brother of Gen. James Clinton, was also born at Little Britain. George Clinton was governor of New York for 21 years, and from 1804 until 1812 he was vice president of the United States.

Beacon, the city on the east shore, shares in the Revolutionary prominence of Newburgh, as its eastern suburb of Fishkill was also an active military center during the period when the American Army was encamped at that place.

Fishkill was settled by Dutch pioneers about 1690. The Fishkill Dutch Church was built in 1765. The New York State Congress met in this building in 1776. In 1780, Fishkill was a main depot of the American Revolutionary Army. Here were magazines, hospitals, workshops and large barracks for the American soldiers. Here Baron Steuben, the German American Revolutionary general, had his headquarters at the Verplanck house in 1783. It was here that the Society of the Cincinnati, composed of Revolutionary American officers, was organized in 1783. It is said that there are more graves of Revolutionary soldiers in Fishkill than in any other place in the United States.

The Fishkill (Fish Creek) enters the Hudson at Beacon. The stream is about 25 miles long. The use of the word creek after

the syllable "kill" is unnecessary, as "kill" is Dutch for creek. The little Village of Fishkill (with a 1930 population of 552) is on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9. It is connected by Route 52 with the City of Beacon, about three miles westward.

Beacon takes its name from the adjacent Beacon Mountains. The city was formed in 1913, when Fishkill Landing and Matteawan were united. Beacon is a considerable industrial and trading center. The Matteawan Hospital for the Criminal Insane is located at Beacon.

An inclined railway runs to the top of Mount Beacon, from which splendid views are obtained.

Beacon is 59 miles from New York and 84 miles from Albany. The city had a 1930 population of 11,925.

Route 9D runs north from Beacon to connect with U. S. Route 9 at Wappingers Falls. Route 52 runs westward from Beacon through Fishkill to Stonehouse, thence, by Route 55, to Route 22 at Pawling.

A low rocky point juts from the west shore of the Hudson about three miles north of Newburgh. This is the Devil's Dans-kammer. The latter is a Dutch word for "dance chamber," and the place was so named because the Indians held wild dances at this point during the period of early settlement.

New Hamburg, on the east bank of the river, which is the New York Central station for Wappingers Falls, is 65 miles from New York and 78 miles from Albany. Wappingers Creek enters the Hudson at New Hamburg. The name Wappingers comes from the tribe of River Indians which was located in this vicinity.

Wappingers Falls is on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9, about two miles from New Hamburg. Wappingers Falls was incorporated as a village in 1871. It had a 1930 population of 3,336.

Poughkeepsie is the county seat of Dutchess County. It is 73 miles from New York and 70 miles from Albany. It became a city in 1854. Poughkeepsie had a 1930 population of 40,122. Dutchess County had a 1930 population of 105,222. Poughkeepsie has extensive manufactures and is an important commercial and trading center. It is generally regarded as the halfway point between New York and Albany.

1586



WAPPINGERS FALLS—AT THE PUBLIC SQUARE

Vassar College is located about three miles from the center of Poughkeepsie. It is a famous college for young women, founded by Matthew Vassar in 1865.

The railroad bridge at Poughkeepsie crosses the Hudson at a height of 212 feet above that stream. It carries the tracks of the Central New England Railroad across the river and to its terminus at Campbell Hall in Orange County. The vehicular bridge, across the Hudson at Poughkeepsie, was opened in 1930.

Poughkeepsie is on the New York Central and the Central New England railroads.

Poughkeepsie is noted as the scene of the famous intercollegiate rowing races which are held here during the latter part of June.

Poughkeepsie is an Indian word meaning "safe harbor," applied with reference to the outlet of a small stream, the Fallkill, which here enters the Hudson. Poughkeepsie was settled by the Dutch about 1690. After the burning of Kingston by the British, on October 13, 1777, Poughkeepsie became the capital of the new State of New York. In January, 1778, the State Legislature met here to accept the Articles of Confederation, which were signed by the Thirteen Colonies. Poughkeepsie, New York and Albany alternated as the state capital until 1798, when the latter city became the permanent seat of government.

While in session at Poughkeepsie in July, 1782, the New York State Legislature recommended a general convention of the states to consider a new constitution to replace the Articles of Confederation. The movement thus initiated at Poughkeepsie took form in the Constitutional Convention which was held at Annapolis, Md., in 1786. New York had previously refused to recognize Congress as a central government after the Revolution, although all the other states had given it their official adherence. Thus New York State functioned practically as an independent nation, from the close of the Revolution in 1783 until it adopted the Constitution of the United States at Poughkeepsie in 1788, when a convention of representatives of the state then assembled here. The Constitution was adopted only after a long and bitter fight in which Alexander Hamilton led the battle for its adoption.

Samuel F. B. Morse, inventor of the telegraph, and Benson J. Lossing, historian, were residents of Poughkeepsie.

During the Revolution, there was a "Continental Ship Yard" at Poughkeepsie, where American war vessels were built until the British captured New York City in 1776, when the outlet to the sea was blocked. After that time, the yard built American war sloops for the defense of the Hudson.

Dutchess County takes its spelling, with a "t," from the fact that it was named in honor of the Duchess of York, wife of the Duke of York, later James II. "Dutchess" was the spelling used in that day and it has persisted in the (nearly) 250 years since the formation of the county. Dutchess County was not named from the Dutch, who comprised the majority of the early settlers, although the spelling of the county's name would tend to give that impression.

The Marlboro Mountains lie on the west bank of the Hudson River about opposite Poughkeepsie. The northern and highest summit rises to a height of 1,105 feet above the river about a mile west of Highland.

The Village of Highland is on the west side of the Hudson opposite Poughkeepsie, with which it is connected by the vehicular bridge opened in 1930. John Burroughs, the famous American naturalist, lived at West Park, a little hamlet on the west shore about six miles north of Highland.

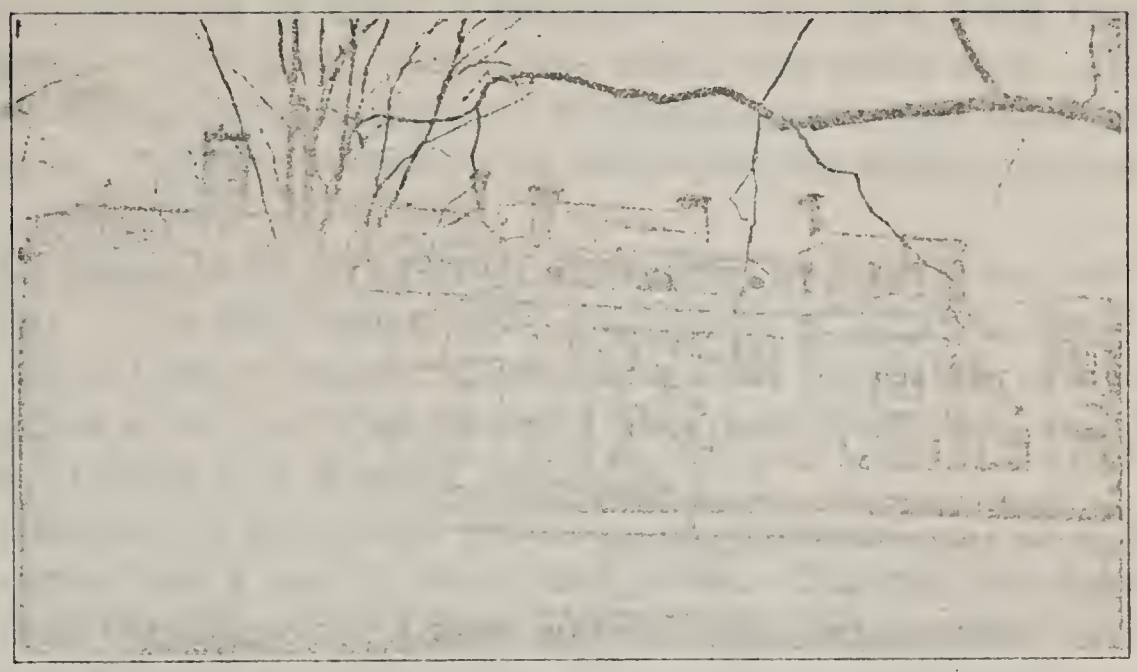
Hyde Park is a small village about five miles north of Poughkeepsie. Between the two places, the Albany Post Road is lined with some of the finest estates along the Hudson River. One of these is the handsome residence of Governor Franklin D. Roosevelt, set in a park of unusual landscape beauty.

Esopus is a small village on the west shore, located 80 miles north of New York. Here is the home of the late Judge Alton B. Parker, the unsuccessful Democratic candidate for president in 1904, when Theodore Roosevelt was elected.

Two miles south of Kingston the twin peaks of Huzzy Hill rise 933 feet and 869 feet above the tidal waters of the Hudson. They lie about two miles west of the river and they are the last high hills, lying close to the river, between this point and Troy, about 60 miles northward.

On the east shore, the Albany Post Road runs northward, through the little Village of Staatsburg, to Rhinebeck.

89-90



HOME OF GOVERNOR FRANKLIN D. ROOSEVELT, HYDE PARK



"ROSEMOUNT", ESOPUS
Home of the late Hon. Alton B. Parker

Rhinebeck was incorporated as a village in 1834. It had a 1930 population of 1,517. Rhinecliff is the New York Central station for Rhinebeck, which lies about two miles east. Rhinecliff is connected by ferry with Kingston on the west shore of the Hudson. William Beckman, an early German settler, named the place Rhinebeck.

Kingston is 88 miles from New York and 53 miles south of Albany. The city had a 1930 population of 28,166. It is the capital of Ulster County, which had a 1930 population of 80,079. Kingston is on the West Shore, Ulster and Delaware, and New York, Ontario and Western railroads.

Kingston is important industrially, commercially, as a trading center and a port of river navigation. The city also forms a point of departure for Lakes Mohonk and Minnewaska and the mountain country to the west. Kingston is the headquarters for many river steamboats. The Hudson River day line stops at Kingston.

The Rondout River enters the Hudson at Kingston. It forms the entrance to the valley of the Wallkill River, which is a larger stream, with a total length of 100 miles from its source to the Hudson. The Wallkill Valley and its railroads afford access to the coal country of Pennsylvania. The Wallkill River joins the Rondout at Creeklocks, about three miles south of Kingston. The Wallkill Valley drains the greater part of southern Ulster County and the western half of Orange County.

The Algonquin Indians called the Kingston neighborhood Seepus, which is a Lenape word said to mean "river" or "water route." It had reference to the important Rondout, Wallkill and Shawangunk waterway system, which connects with the Hudson at Kingston. The Indians called the entire west shore of the Hudson River, from the Highlands north to Catskill, by the name of Seepus. The Dutch varied the name to Sopus, which they applied to a wide area up and down the river from Kingston. Later the name became formally "Esopus," but "Sopus" persisted for nearly 200 years after Hudson's voyage in 1609.

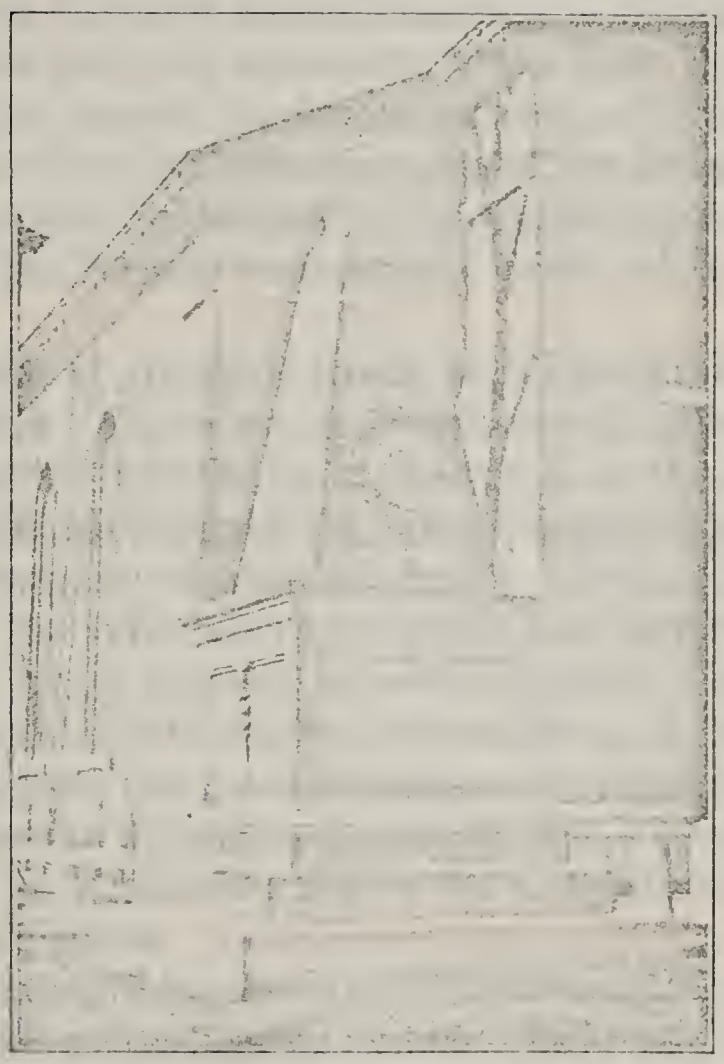
The Rondout and Rondout Creek section of Kingston was called At-kar-kar-ton by the Indians. The name means "smooth water" and doubtless refers to the smooth waters of Rondout Creek as contrasted with the more turbulent Hudson.

Kingston is one of the most historically important cities on the Hudson River. It was settled in 1652 by Dutch pioneers from Fort Orange—present Albany. The traveler going northward up the Hudson comes to the southern area of Albany Dutch colonization at Kingston, 53 miles south of the capital city. The Hudson River shores were settled generally by Dutch from present Albany in a region stretching north and south for 100 miles from that city—Schuylerville on the north and Kingston on the south.

Dutch colonization of the Hudson Valley was effected from present New York and Albany, a fact which is abundantly set forth in detail in the historical chapters of this work. Sopus—Kingston—suffered from Indian wars in 1658 and 1663. In the latter year the Indians massacred 24 people and took 45 prisoners. Atrocities perpetrated by the white settlers started the trouble in both years. Governor Stuyvesant formed the settlement into a parish called Wilt-Wyck—Dutch for "wild place." A palisaded fort was built at the Rondout section of present Kingston. This was called Rondhuit, Dutch for "standing timber," referring to the upright logs of the stockade. Toward the close of the Seventeenth Century many French Huguenots settled at Kingston and in its surrounding country. Kingston grew into a populous town and its section into a rich and populous region prior to the Revolution.

The New York State Convention or Legislature was driven from New York, when the British occupied that city in 1776. The Legislature met at several places, gradually moving northward, and from February to May, 1777, it was in session in the present "Senate House" (built in 1676) at Kingston. Here the New York State Constitution was adopted on April 30, 1777, and George Clinton, first governor of the state, was inaugurated in the same year.

The British Army, which went up the Hudson with the purpose of joining Burgoyne's army of invasion, reached Kingston on October 13, 1777, and burned that village and the Village of Rondout. The British went a few miles farther north and then retreated to New York, on learning of Burgoyne's surrender on October 17, 1777.



MONUMENT TO GOVERNOR GEORGE CLINTON IN THE DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH GRAVEYARD, KINGSTON

The Senate House is now a public state museum. The state has also built a fine stone museum at the rear of the Senate House, both of which hold interesting and valuable historical collections. The Senate House is one of the most important historical buildings in the State of New York and in the United States as well. It was partly destroyed when the British burned Kingston, in 1777, but was later restored. It is a fine example of a Seventeenth Century stone house of the Hudson Valley.

The Ashokan dam and reservoir, of the New York City Catskill water supply system, lie five miles west of Kingston. They impound the waters of 646 square miles of the Esopus, Schoharie and Catskill streams' watershed. The Catskill water supply system is one of the largest engineering works of its kind in the world.

At the mouth of Rondout Creek at Kingston, the Hudson is over a mile wide. There are shallows, a half mile in width on the western shore, while the main channel is on the eastern shore, as it is generally throughout the river's course from New York to Hudson, a distance of over 100 miles. From Kingston north to Saugerties, the river averages about one-half mile in width. The channel is quite narrow at several places. However, it is generally navigable, with depths of from 30 to 60 feet.

Above Kingston, the Catskill Mountains come into view with their line of peaks silhouetted against the western sky. The artists' colony of Woodstock lies in the Catskills about 10 miles northwest of Kingston.

After destroying Kingston, the British invading army of 1777 moved up as far as Livingston Manor. This was their farthest north, as the enemy forces here learned of Burgoyne's surrender and turned back and retreated to New York.

Rokeby, originally part of the Livingston Manor, is just south of Barrytown, a little village which is 94 miles north of New York and 49 miles south of Albany.

Montgomery Place lies just north of Barrytown. It was built by Janet Livingston, sister of Chancellor Livingston and widow of Maj.-Gen. Richard Montgomery.

Tivoli is 99 miles from New York and 44 miles south of Albany. It was incorporated as a village in 1872. In 1930, it had a population of 726.

Near Tivoli, is Clermont, the Livingston Manor house, and Idele, the home of Chancellor Livingston, which was built in 1783. Robert Livingston secured a patent for Livingston Manor in 1685, and in 1715 it embraced 160,000 acres. This was one of the great Hudson River patroonships, the creation of which is covered in the historical chapters of this work. Following its destruction in the British invasion in 1777, Clermont was rebuilt in 1778. It was the birthplace of Robert R. Livingston (1747-1813), one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and it was burned by the enemy on that account. Livingston was secretary of foreign affairs (1781-1783), first chancellor of New York State, minister to France (1801-1804), where he negotiated the purchase of the great Louisiana Territory by the United States from France.

Chancellor Robert R. Livingston and Clermont take on added historical interest because Livingston financed Robert Fulton's invention of the steamboat and Fulton named his first Hudson River steamboat *Clermont* after the Livingston Manor house.

Upper Red Hook lies on the Albany Post Road about two miles east of Tivoli. Here the Mohawks and Mohicans fought a great battle, in 1628, for the mastery of the Hudson Valley. The Mohawks were victorious and drove the Mohicans eastward into the Connecticut River Valley. Thereafter, the Mohawks were masters of the Hudson River country until their power waned under the overlordship of the increasing white population.

From Red Hook, Route 199 runs eastward for 24 miles to Millerton, near the Connecticut state line, where it has connection with Route 121, continuing eastward to Canaan, Conn., on U. S. Route 7.

Opposite Tivoli is the Village of Saugerties, on the west bank of the Hudson and in the County of Ulster.

Saugerties is 99 miles north of New York and 42 miles south of Albany. The place was incorporated as a village in 1831. In 1930, Saugerties had a population of 4,049.

The name, Saugerties, is said to have had the following derivation. About three miles north of the town is West Camp, which marks the site of one of the four locations of the Palatine Germans who were located on both banks of the Hudson in this section in the year 1710. Two camps were on the west shore and

two on the east shore at or near North Germantown. These German pioneers were engaged in lumbering and in making tar, pitch and turpentine for the British Navy—"naval stores," as they were then called. Many of these men were sawyers, or "saegers" in the German language. The west shore section became known as "Saeger," or the place of the sawyers. Phonetic corruption by three races—German, Dutch and English—has given the town its present spelling of Saugerties. West Camp is on the Saag Kill, as the Dutch called it.

From Saugerties north to the City of Hudson, the river is from one-quarter of a mile to a mile in width. The channel is from one-eighth of a mile to a mile in width. There are mud flats on the eastern shore and the channel shifts to the western shore with depths of from 30 to 60 feet.

Germantown and North Germantown occupy the sites of two locations of the Palatine Germans in 1710 on the eastern shore of the Hudson. Germantown is 104 miles from New York and 39 miles from Albany. These Hudson River Palatine locations of 1710 constituted the first considerable settlement of Germans both in New York and in the United States. The subject is covered in the historical chapters of this work. In 1712, many of the Palatines removed from this Hudson River section to the Schoharie River. From there, a number of them later moved to Pennsylvania, where they formed the nucleus of the numerous element of "Pennsylvania Dutch," which had later large accessions of the Palatines. However, many Palatines remained in the Hudson Valley, where their descendants constitute a considerable element of the population.

Greendale, on the New York Central Railroad, is connected with Catskill by ferry.

Route 23 runs west, from Catskill through the Catskill Mountains, passing Cairo, Durham, Windham, Prattsville and Gilboa Reservoir to Grand Gorge on Route 10. Route 23A runs, south of Route 23, westward from Catskill through Palenville, Tannersville, Hunter, and Lexington to Prattsville. This route follows the upper headwaters of the Schoharie River. Both Routes 23 and 23A are splendid scenic Catskill Mountain routes.

Catskill is 110 miles from New York and 31 miles south of Albany (West Shore Railroad distances). It was incorporated

as a village in 1806. Catskill had a 1930 population of 5,053. It is the capital of Greene County, which had a 1930 population of 25,770. The town is a trading center for Greene County as well as for the summer resorts in the Catskill Mountain region to the west.

Catskill is a Dutch word meaning "cat creek." The stream enters the Hudson here and the town takes its name for the "kill" or creek, where, it is supposed, numerous wildcats were found during the period of early settlement by the Dutch. The stream drains a considerable part of northern Greene County. The Indian name of the Catskill section was Ma-wig-nack, meaning "where two streams join," referring to the junction of the Catskill and the Kauterskill near the village. The Dutch settled Catskill about 1645.

Catskill is east of the central section of the Catskill Mountains, which is a favorite summer vacation section. The mountains afford a beautiful spectacle to travelers on the New York Central Railroad and the Hudson River boats. The highest peak is Slide Mountain, with an elevation of 4,205 feet. Magnificent panoramas are spread out to the view for spectators on the summits of the mountains. The mountains are wooded to their tops and the romantic scenery includes rocky cliffs, small lakes, tumbling brooks, cascades, deep ravines and some farm lands in the valleys. One of the picturesque features of the Catskill is the cloves (Dutch for "pass"), with steep cliffs, some of them from 1,000 to 1,700 feet in height.

The Catskills and the Village of Catskill form the scene of the most famous American legend and play—"Rip Van Winkle." Washington Irving was the author of the sketch. The celebrated American actor, Joseph Jefferson, took the story to London, where the American playwright, Dion Boucicault, collaborated with Jefferson. Boucicault took Irving's sketch and, with its aid, rewrote and rearranged a former play called "Rip Van Winkle." Boucicault's play closely follows Irving's story until the last act. It was first produced on the stage of the Adelphi Theater in London in September, 1865, and, since that time, it is said to have been acted more times than any other play. It is still occasionally acted and it has been the subject of several screen presentations.

The Village of Catskill formed the suppositious home of Rip Van Winkle, a ne'er-do-well, and his shrewish wife. The story of his hunting trip up the slopes of the Catskills, his meeting with Henry Hudson's spirit band playing ninepins in a mountain glen, his drink of the magic "schnapps," his twenty years' sleep and awakening, are all too well known to need detailing here. Jefferson's great talent made Rip a lovable character and one known to a great part of the people of the United States, just as Irving's genius has made "Rip Van Winkle" and the "Legend of Sleepy Hollow" seemingly an actual and picturesque part of the story of the Hudson and its valley.

The shores of the Hudson, above and below Catskill, are lined with great ice houses, which furnish a considerable part of the ice supply for New York City.

The City of Hudson is 114 miles from New York and 29 miles from Albany. It had a 1930 population of 12,413.

Hudson is on U. S. Route 9. New York State Route 23 runs eastward from the city to Hillsdale, on Route 22, and to Great Barrington, Mass., on U. S. Route 7, in the heart of the Berkshires.

Hudson has important industrial interests and it is a busy trading center. The Hudson River day line boats stop at Catskill.



WARREN STREET, HUDSON

Which runs for over a mile westward to the Hudson. The building on the right is a good example of the Hudson Valley type of later Dutch architecture



CHAPTER 6.

THE HUDSON RIVER—HUDSON TO ALBANY—RENSSELAER.

ISLAND SECTION OF RIVER, NORTH OF HUDSON—27-FOOT SHIP CHANNEL, HUDSON TO ALBANY—KINDERHOOK—LINDENWALD, 1797, HOME OF PRESIDENT MARTIN VAN BUREN—COXSACKIE—RAVENA—CASTLETON CUTOFF BRIDGE AND SELKIRK FREIGHT YARDS OF NEW YORK CENTRAL RAILROAD—CASTLETON—MOHICAN INDIAN COUNTRY.

Hudson is the capital of Columbia County, which had a 1930 population of 41,680.

Hudson was the third city to be chartered (1795) in New York State, the others in order being New York and Albany. It grew rapidly at first and, because of its extensive water commerce, it was the second port in New York State prior to 1800. Since that year, the development of the city has been slow.

Athens, on the west shore, opposite Hudson, is a village which was incorporated in 1805. It had a 1930 population of 1,616. Hudson, Athens and Catskill are connected by ferries.

From the City of Hudson north to Albany and Troy, is the island section of the river. From Hudson to Troy, is a reach of about 35 miles, and in it the river takes on varying beautiful aspects and is markedly different from the wide tidal reaches of the lower Hudson. This upper reach, outside of the towns, is one of pastoral loveliness. The shores of the river are generally low but they are backed by gently rolling hills of moderate altitudes. Green islands, with elm lined banks, are numerous in the stream. Some of these islands are of considerable size. The largest is Papscanee, which is six miles in length. The ride up the river, or by train, from Hudson to Albany, presents a succession of charming and changeful pictures. In this section, the main channel of the Hudson follows the western shore. There are numerous lesser channels in the area. It is in this section that the deep-water

27-foot ship channel has been dug in the Hudson River northward to Albany and Rensselaer.

The Village of Kinderhook is on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9, 20 miles south of Albany. It lies adjacent to the Village of Valatie, about a mile or more northward on U. S. Route 9. Kinderhook was incorporated as a village in 1838. It had a 1930 population of 821. Valatie was incorporated in 1856. It had a 1930 population of 1,246. Kinderhook Creek enters the Hudson at Stockport, a station on the New York Central Railroad about five miles north of the City of Hudson.

The Village of Kinderhook is principally noted as the birthplace and home of Martin Van Buren, President of the United States. Van Buren was born here in 1782 and died in 1862. Van Buren was governor of New York in 1827; secretary of state, 1828; minister to England, 1831; vice president, 1832; president, 1836-1840; unsuccessful Democratic candidate for the presidency in 1840. Van Buren was also unsuccessful presidential candidate of the Free Soil party (which was opposed to slavery) in 1848.

After his retirement from the presidency, Van Buren bought Lindenwald, a handsome stone house located about two miles southeast of Kinderhook. It was built in 1797 by Judge Van Ness, who was the second of Aaron Burr at the time he killed Alexander Hamilton in the duel, which is covered in the historic chapters of this work. Washington Irving was a frequent visitor at Lindenwald, both during the ownership of Van Ness and Van Buren.

The New York-Albany route embraces the homes or birthplaces of three presidents of the United States—Arthur (1885-1889) and Roosevelt (1901-1909), at New York, and Van Buren (1837-1841), at Kinderhook.

The homes of six vice presidents also lie on this route—Aaron Burr, George Clinton, Daniel D. Tompkins, Martin Van Buren, Chester A. Arthur and Theodore Roosevelt. The homes, birthplaces or business locations of seven unsuccessful presidential candidates are also located on the New York-Albany route—Burr, Clinton, Van Buren, Greeley, Tilden, Parker, Roosevelt.

President Van Buren is buried at Kinderhook, where a monument marks his grave.



LINDENWALD, HOME OF PRESIDENT MARTIN VAN BUREN, LOCATED TWO MILES SOUTHEAST OF KINDERHOOK

Coxsackie lies on the west shore of the river six miles north of Hudson. The village was incorporated in 1867. It is 120 miles north of New York and 22 miles south of Albany. It had a 1930 population of 2,195.

Ravena, which was incorporated as a village in 1914, is the next town northward, on the west shore. It is 128 miles north of New York and 14 miles south of Albany. Ravena had a 1930 population of 1,962.

Castleton-on-Hudson is 134 miles north of New York and 9 miles south of Albany. It was incorporated as a village in 1827. It had a 1930 population of 1,506. Castleton takes its name from the fact that a Mohican Indian "castle," or palisaded village, was located near the town.

One of the most interesting and important of the engineering works in the Hudson Valley is the Castleton cut-off bridge of the New York Central Railroad. The bridge is about 12 miles south of Albany. It was officially opened on November 24, 1924. The bridge and cut-off form a connection with the Hudson River division of the Central, the West Shore and the Boston and Albany railroads, and the Mohawk Division of the Central, by way of the great freight yards which lie west of Albany. The yards are 6 miles long and extend from Selkirk to Feura Bush on the West Shore Division of the Central. The cut-off is for freight trains. It avoids the heavy grade between Albany and Schenectady now followed by the Central's passenger trains. The question arises as to whether the Central's passenger trains will not also eventually follow the easier grade.

In 1628, the Mohawks drove the Mohicans from their locations near Albany. Prior to that year, the chief council fire of the Mohicans was located at present Schodack, about 7 miles south of Albany on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9, about a mile north of the junction of U. S. Route 9 and U. S. Route 20, which runs eastward to Boston. Schodack comes from the Mohican word Es-qua-tak, meaning "fireplace of the nation."

This brings to a close the description of the Hudson River country between Newburgh and Albany-Rensselaer.

CHAPTER 7.

THE HUDSON RIVER—THE ALBANY-TROY CITIES DISTRICT.

ALBANY, THE CAPITAL CITY—CITIES OF TROY, RENSSELAER, WATERVLIET, COHOES; VILLAGES OF MENANDS, GREEN ISLAND, WATERFORD—THE ALBANY-TROY-SCHENECTADY CIVIC TRIANGLE WITH 400,000 POPULATION, THIRD LARGEST CIVIC DISTRICT IN NEW YORK STATE—HISTORIC HOUSES: FORT CRALO, 1642, RENSSELAER, OLDEST HOUSE IN NEW YORK STATE; SCHUYLER MANSION, ALBANY; VAN SCHAICK HOUSE, COHOES—FEATURES OF THE CAPITAL CITY—ALBANY, CENTER OF DUTCH COLONIZATION OF UPPER HUDSON VALLEY—ALBANY-RENSSELAER PORT—ERIE AND CHAMPLAIN BARGE CANAL CONNECTIONS—TROY CITY FEATURES—WATERVLIET ARSENAL—COHOES FALLS—MOUTH OF THE MOHAWK AND THE MOHAWK VALLEY—ALBANY-TROY, GREAT INTERSTATES CROSSROADS OF LAND, WATER AND AIR TRANSPORTATION—ALBANY, HEADQUARTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY ARMY OF THE NORTH.

The following chapter gives a condensed description of the Albany-Troy group of eight cities and villages on the shores of the Hudson River, which includes the cities of Albany, Rensselaer, Watervliet, Cohoes and Troy and the villages of Menands, Green Island and Waterford. The chapter also includes the Greater Albany-Troy-Schenectady municipal district, which includes the foregoing cities and villages and also the City of Schenectady and its suburb, the Village of Scotia—a total of ten cities and villages comprised within a triangle with Albany, Troy and Schenectady at its points. On this triangle, Albany is 15 miles from Schenectady, which is 11 miles from Troy, which is 7 miles from Albany.

These cities and villages are a development of the original Dutch settlement at present Albany in 1614. As previously stated, Albany was the center of Dutch colonization of 100 miles

of the shores of the Hudson River, extending over 50 miles below and over 40 miles above the capital city.

The Hudson-Mohawk municipal district consists of three municipal groups of which Albany, Troy and Schenectady are the centers. They comprise the following towns and their combined 1930 populations: Albany, Rensselaer, Menands, 140,070; Troy, Cohoes, Watervliet, Green Island, Waterford, 119,292; Schenectady-Scotia, 103,086. The total combined populations of this Hudson-Mohawk civic district, in 1930, amounted to 362,448.

In 1931, a movement was inaugurated by Mayor John Boyd Thacher of Albany, to create a capital city or Hudson-Mohawk civic zone, comprising 562 square miles, which would include the foregoing ten cities and villages as well as more distant outlying territory. This municipal area is planned for regional development with the Port of Albany as the center.

The foregoing group of Hudson-Mohawk rivers, cities and villages lie near the junction of the Mohawk with the Hudson. The Mohawk Valley is as important to the Albany-Troy area as is the Hudson Valley. It was largely the fact that here was the geographical gateway to the Mohawk Valley that caused the Dutch to locate at present Albany. The Mohawk River and its paralleling trails formed the route over which the Indians journeyed to Albany with their furs, and it was this fur trade which gave the original importance to the Albany settlement. The Indians went generally by canoes, on the Mohawk River, to present Schenectady, from where they portaged their fur packs over the Schenectady trail to Albany—a distance of about fifteen miles. Historically, commercially, industrially and socially, Schenectady is linked to Albany. Although it is not on the Hudson River, the City of Schenectady receives condensed mention where it is essential in the following chapter. Albany, Troy and Schenectady form a municipal district which has a community of interests and a distinctive regional character. This is touched upon in this and following chapters. However, no extensive description is here given regarding Schenectady, as it had full coverage in the author's "History of the Mohawk Valley—Gateway to the West," which was published in 1925 by the S. J. Clarke Publishing Company, publishers of this work.

Of course, historical consideration must be given to other great Indian trails, besides those of the Mohawk Valley, which centered at present Albany and in the present Hudson-Mohawk municipal district. These Indian trails ran along both shores of the Hudson River to Canada, eastward into present Massachusetts and Vermont, and southwestward into the valleys of the Susquehanna and Delaware rivers, as well as westward through the Mohawk Valley. Over all these trails and waterways, the Indians came to Fort Orange with their furs to barter with the Dutch traders. The Indian trade which came to Fort Orange, from all points of the compass, was the beginning of the growth, at this great crossroads, of the City of Albany and of the Hudson-Mohawk municipal district.

The Hudson-Champlain, St. Lawrence, Mohawk historical region triangle is frequently mentioned in this work. The points of this historical triangle are Albany, Montreal and Oswego. Within the limits of this historical triangle, the great formative events of American Colonial history took place. Albany was intimately concerned in practically all of these epochal happenings. Chief of these events were—first, the conquest of Canada by General Amherst in 1760. His army of 10,000 American and British soldiers went from Albany to Montreal by way of the Mohawk and St. Lawrence rivers. The second chief event was the American victory of Saratoga in 1777, when the destinies of North America were decided upon the banks of the Hudson. This and the following two chapters cover the important lower half of the right side of this great historical triangle, upon which the reader now enters.

The Hudson-Mohawk cities group has important industrial, commercial and transportation interests, chief of which are the following: Central location on the great north-south New York to Montreal route, with rail, water and automobile lines, covering the Hudson River and Lake Champlain; location on the Boston-Buffalo route, with railroad and automobile connections, from Boston to Albany, and railroad, automobile and waterway connections between Albany and Buffalo. The latter route is of international importance, as it runs through the only low pass in the Atlantic coastal mountain chain, which affords the only water connection between the Great Lakes and the sea, which

connection is made by the New York State Barge Canal, Erie division, with the tidewater of the Hudson at the Hudson-Mohawk cities group. This civic district also has important highway and railroad connections southwestwardly with the Susquehanna Valley. The foregoing shows that the Albany-Troy-Schenectady city group lies at one of the most important crossroads in America. The New York-Montreal and the Boston-Albany routes are also followed in airplane travel. These air routes will increase in importance as they run through mountain ranges at low altitudes.

The fact that Albany is the capital of the State of New York also gives great importance to the Hudson-Mohawk cities group.

Taking Albany as a center, the highway distances are as follows: Southward: New York 148, Poughkeepsie 74, Newburgh 92, West Point 104, Kingston 59, Catskill 36, Hudson 31. Northward: Saratoga Springs 32, Glens Falls 51, Lake George 60, Whitehall 72, Ticonderoga 99, Plattsburg 163, Rouses Point 187, Montreal 238, Quebec 410. Westward: Schenectady 15, Amsterdam 31, Little Falls 73, Utica 95, Rome 110, Syracuse 143, Rochester 221, Buffalo 286, Chicago 832, San Francisco 3,103. Southwestward: Oneonta 80, Binghamton 142. Eastward: Pittsfield 36, Springfield 85, Worcester 137, Boston 201.

The railroads, running northward up the shores of the Hudson River from New York and Jersey City to Albany, are the New York Central and West Shore railroads, which also run westward from Albany through the Mohawk Valley and on to Buffalo, whence the Central continues to Chicago. The Boston and Albany and Boston and Maine come in from the east. The Delaware and Hudson runs north along the Upper Hudson and Lake Champlain with connections with Montreal. The latter railroad also runs southwestwardly from Albany to Binghamton. Albany is one of the great railroad centers of the Northeastern United States.

The highways running into Albany northward are U. S. Route 9, the Albany Post Road, on the east shore of the Hudson River, and U. S. Route 9W, the Storm King Highway, on the west shore of the river.

U. S. Route 9 runs north from Albany through Loudonville, crosses the Mohawk River at Crescent, continues northward

through Saratoga Springs to Glens Falls, Lake George and thence to Plattsburg and on to Rouses Point on the Canadian border. U. S. Route 4 runs north, from U. S. Route 9 south of Rensselaer, through Troy to Waterford. From there, U. S. Route 4 and New York State Route 32 run north to Northumberland. North of there, U. S. Route 4 runs north to Whitehall, whence N. Y. Route 22 continues north to Plattsburg.

West of Albany, New York State Route 5 runs through the Mohawk Valley on the north side of the Mohawk River to Utica, thence westward to Syracuse and Buffalo. Route 5S extends westward, from Route 5 at Schenectady, along the south side of the Mohawk River, to Rome, and thence to Route 5 at Oneida. U. S. Route 20 extends westward from Albany by way of the Cherry Valley Turnpike. This route goes westward to the Pacific Coast and eastward to Boston. Route 7 runs from Hoosick westward through Troy, Cohoes and Schenectady and thence southwestward into the Susquehanna Valley and on to Binghamton. These are the chief automobile highways radiating from the Hudson-Mohawk cities group. They show that this civic district lies at one of the great railroad and automobile route crossroads of the Northeastern United States.

The distances of the Hudson-Mohawk civic group of towns from Albany follow: Watervliet 6, Troy 7, Cohoes 9, Waterford 11, Schenectady 15. This Hudson-Mohawk urban district extends along the Hudson River for a distance of about 15 miles, as the distances above given are from city center to city center.

The Hudson-Mohawk cities group takes on great importance as a center of water transportation. The deepening of the Hudson River, between Hudson and Albany, to a depth of 27 feet, has made the Hudson a shipway between New York and Albany and Rensselaer. At Troy, there is a state dam and lockage connection with the New York State Barge Canal system which extends northward to Lake Champlain and westward to Oswego on Lake Ontario and Buffalo on Lake Erie. The route from Troy to Oswego, through the Mohawk Valley, has been projected as the All-American Ship Canal route. The waterway development of the Albany-Rensselaer-Troy section indicates a considerable growth in commerce and population within the next quarter century. In fact, the Hudson-Mohawk cities may experience a

growth similar to that which followed the development of the Houston Ship Canal, when that city grew from 78,800 in 1910 to 138,276 in 1920, and 289,428 in 1930. The greater part of Houston's growth is considered to be due to its recent ship canal connection with the Gulf of Mexico, 50 miles away.

Extensive port development is (1931) in progress on the Hudson at Albany and Rensselaer.

In 1930, the total population of the Hudson-Mohawk group of eight cities and villages (Albany, Rensselaer, Watervliet, Troy, Menands, Green Island, Cohoes and Waterford) was 259,362. Inclusive of Schenectady, the population of this triangular civic district was 355,014. In 1920, the population of the eight towns was 243,560, and inclusive of Schenectady it was 332,283.

Following is the 1930 population of these towns: Albany, 127,358; Rensselaer, 11,224; Watervliet, 16,086; Cohoes, 23,201; Menands, 1,488; Green Island, 4,331; Troy, 72,752; Waterford, 2,922. Schenectady's 1930 population was 95,652. The Village of Scotia, on the northern shore of the Mohawk River, opposite Schenectady, had a 1930 population of 7,434. Inclusive of other suburbs and settled contiguous territory, the Schenectady civic district had a population of about 110,000 people.

In the decade from 1920 to 1930, Albany showed the greatest growth, increasing from 113,344 in 1920 to 127,358 in 1930.

Inclusive of the Village of Scotia, the larger Hudson-Mohawk civic area had a 1930 population of 362,488. Inclusive of population adjacent to the cities and villages, which is not included in the corporate limits of the towns, it is probable that the 1930 population of the greater Hudson-Mohawk civic district was nearly 400,000. This would make this "metropolitan district" rank third in population in New York State, with New York City first, Buffalo second, and the Albany-Troy-Schenectady cities group third. This municipal district forms a trading center for the central and upper Hudson Valley, the Mohawk and Schoharie valleys, the Lake Champlain and Vermont areas, the upper Delaware and Susquehanna valleys and Western Massachusetts. It has increasingly important transportation, commercial, financial, industrial, power, agricultural, educational, cultural, social and

governmental interests. The area forms one of the important manufacturing centers of the Northeastern United States.

Going northward from New York up the Hudson River, the traveler comes to the first city of the group, which is opposite Albany, and which, with that city, forms virtually one city of a combined population, in 1930, of 138,582.

Rensselaer is 142 miles north of Albany by rail and 147 miles by the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9, which here crosses the Hudson River to Albany. Albany and Rensselaer also have railroad and other vehicular bridge connections, inclusive of the New York Central Railroad bridge.

Dutch pioneers first settled the city about 1628. Rensselaer takes its name from the great manor of Rensselaerwyck, which covered the greater part of the present counties of Albany and Rensselaer. It was granted to Killian Van Rensselaer, a diamond merchant of Amsterdam, in 1636, and formed the largest landed estate in Colonial New York.

Fort Cralo, or Van Rensselaer Place, was built of stone probably about 1642. It was erected by the director of Rensselaerwyck to form the eastern manor house of Rensselaerwyck. The western manor house was located in Albany. Fort Cralo is one of the oldest buildings in New York State. It is the fifth of the manor houses of the Hudson River Dutch patroons lying between New York City and Albany. The place is now a historical museum, open free to the public.

The first version of "Yankee Doodle" was written at Fort Cralo in Rensselaer in 1757 by Doctor Shuckburgh, a surgeon in the British Army. It was written in a spirit of ridicule of the American Provincial Militia. However, instead of being angered, the militiamen pronounced the song as "nation fine" and immediately adopted it as the national American air. New words were later written to the tune, which became the "Yankee Doodle" of the Revolution and the only national song that the Americans had at that time.

Rensselaer was known as Greenbush up to the time of its incorporation as a city in 1897, when the name was changed. The original Dutch name was "Greenbosch," meaning "green woods."

Rensselaer has important manufactures and railroad repair and machine shops. It is probable that the city will experience important industrial development because of its ship channel and port facilities, inasmuch as it has a great amount of land particularly adapted for manufacturing plants.

There is increasing suburban residential development on the Albany Post Road immediately south of Rensselaer.

At the southern limits of Albany, the Normanskill, or Tawasentha, enters the Hudson River. This is a considerable stream which has been mentioned as a possible route of the proposed All-American Ship Canal, connecting the Hudson River with the Mohawk River at South Schenectady.

Albany has been the capital of New York State since 1797. The most conspicuous feature of the city is the State Capitol, which stands on Capitol Hill, 155 feet above the tidewater of the Hudson River at Albany. It is built of drilled granite and cost nearly $24,000,000. The new State Office Building stands on the west side and the Education Building on the north side of Capitol Park. A number of large and handsome office buildings and hotels have been built on State Street in recent years which give the city a truly metropolitan character. Besides the Capitol, the Education Building is a point of public interest. The State Museum and State Library are located therein. The State Museum has interesting geological collections and a series of life-size Iroquois Indian groups which are among the finest exhibits of this kind in the country. Albany has several departments of Union University, including medical college, law school, college of pharmacy and Dudley Observatory. The State College for teachers is located at Albany.

The most important historical building in the city is the Schuyler Mansion, which is located in the southern section. It was built by Maj.-Gen. Philip Schuyler (1733-1804), one of the leading figures in the history of New York State during and following the Revolution. The house is now a historical museum, open free to the public.

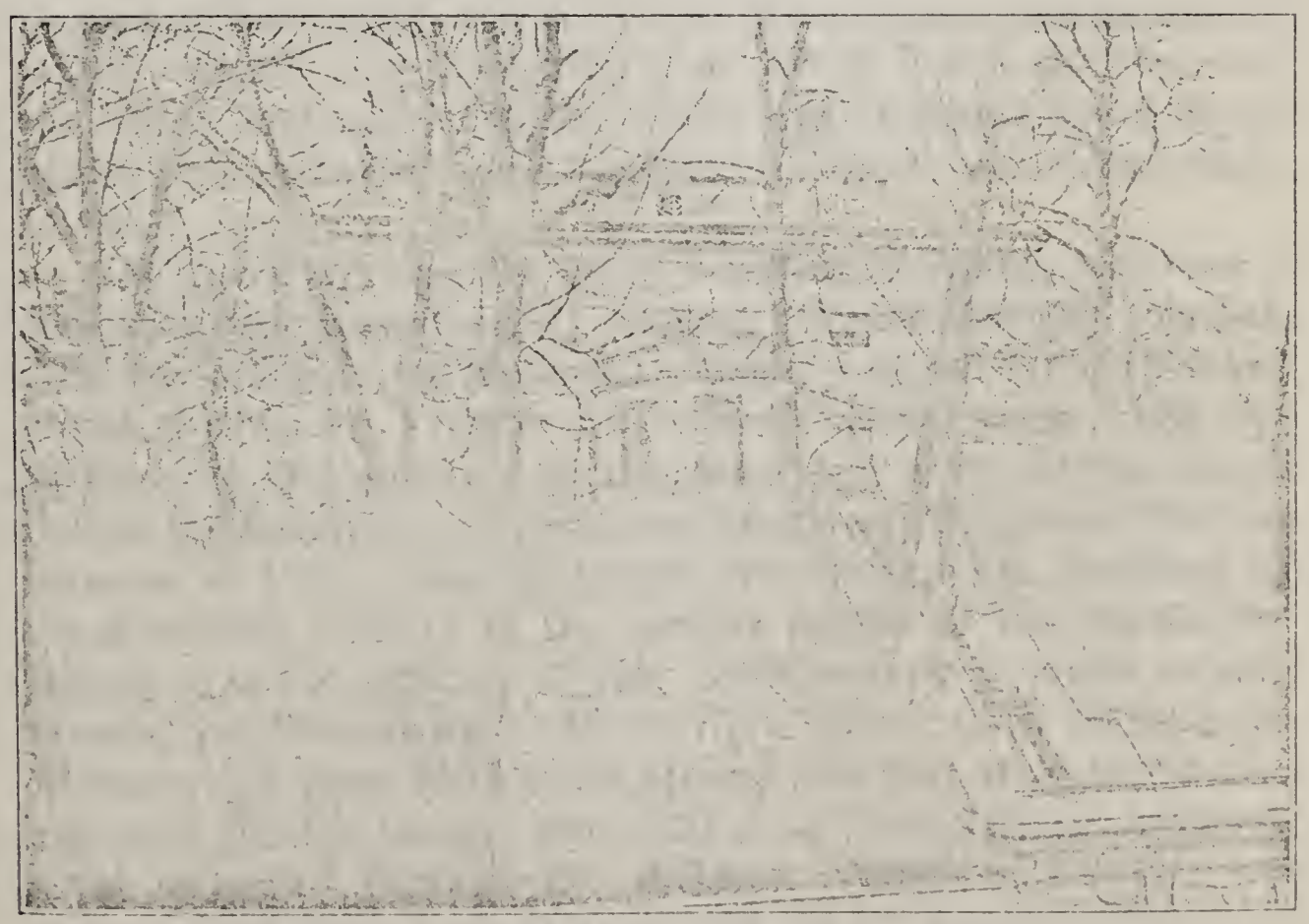
Albany is most important historically in its relation to the Hudson Valley, New York State and the United States. New York City was settled by the Dutch in 1613. Albany was settled

115-116



FORMER VAN RENSSELAER MANOR HOUSE, ALBANY, REBUILT AT WILLIAMS COLLEGE, WILLIAMSTOWN, MASSACHUSETTS

This was the finest example of Albany's Colonial buildings



GENERAL SCHUYLER MANSION, ALBANY

This photograph was taken before several of the trees were removed

by the Dutch in 1614. These are the two oldest cities in the Thirteen Original States.

The Dutch were not the first to locate at Albany, as French traders had a stone trading post at Castle Island about 1540. A characteristic Hudson River freshet destroyed the building and the French left never to return.

In 1609, Hudson is supposed to have anchored the *Half Moon* at present Albany while he sent a boat crew up the Hudson for a distance of probably 20 miles. Realizing that he was in a river, Hudson turned back and sailed down the stream from here. Because of a flood, Fort Nassau was rebuilt, in 1617, near the mouth of the Tawasentha or Normanskill. This is a good-sized stream which enters the Hudson at the southern limits of Albany. Here the Dutch held a great council with the Indians in 1618. Fort Orange was built at the foot of present State Street in Albany in 1623. The manor of Rensselaerwyck was set off in 1636.

From that year until the end of Dutch rule in 1664, Rensselaerwyck had almost the character of an independent colony and there were frequent clashes of authority with the Dutch colonial powers at Manhattan and later New Amsterdam. As previously stated, Albany was the center from which Dutch settlement of the middle and upper Hudson Valley was effected. Chief of the places thus colonized were Kingston, in 1652, and Schenectady, in 1661.

The fur trade was the great business of Albany for over a century after its settlement. Largely through friendly relations with the neighboring Mohawks, Albany escaped from raid and attack during the French and Indian Colonial wars. The city formed the headquarters of the American Army of the North during the Revolution. It was the objective of Burgoyne's British invasion of 1777, when his troops were defeated at Saratoga by the American soldiery in the decisive battles of the Revolution. Albany was the military supply headquarters of many expeditions in the Colonial wars and the Revolution. Chief of the expeditions which went forth from Albany was that of 10,000 American and British troops, commanded by Gen. Jeffrey Amherst, which marched through the Mohawk Valley to Oswego and thence sailed down Lake Ontario and the St. Lawrence River to

Montreal. That city and New France (Canada) surrendered to the British-American Army commander on September 8, 1760. Albany was the chief northern point in the Hudson River American Revolutionary Army line of defense, the chief southern point being the forts of the Highlands.

Later events in Albany's history follow: 1797, made state capital; 1798, Albany Turnpike (to Schenectady) built, and in 1800 continued to Utica by the Mohawk Turnpike; 1804, first State Capitol built; 1807, *Clermont's* first steamboat trip, New York to Albany; 1812-1815, Albany a point of military importance during War of 1812; 1823, Champlain Canal built; 1825, Erie Canal built; 1831, Mohawk and Hudson Railroad opened between Albany and Schenectady; 1836, Utica and Schenectady Railroad opened; October 3, 1851, Hudson River Railroad completed, New York to Greenbush (Rensselaer); 1856, Hudson River Railroad bridge built from Greenbush (Rensselaer) to Albany; 1861-1865, great mobilization and training camp for Union soldiers; 1885 (about), present Capitol practically completed; 1886, Albany city bicentennial celebrated; 1918, Barge Canal, Erie and Champlain divisions, opened; 1929, September 26, first steamboat loaded at Albany Port; 1930, Hudson 27-foot ship channel practically completed.

Albany also has historical importance as a chief point from which settlers moved to the settlement of Northern, Central and Western New York and the Middle West.

In 1910, Glenn Curtiss made the first American long distance airplane flight from Albany to New York over the Hudson River.

Watervliet lies six miles north of Albany on the west shore of the Hudson River. The city had a 1930 population of 16,086. It is principally noted as the seat of the United States Arsenal which was established here in 1807. Here field, and coast defense ordnance has been manufactured and the Arsenal has provided ordnance for the United States in all its major wars since the Revolution. Guns for the Panama Canal defenses and for the United States Navy have been made at Watervliet. The city was chartered in 1896. It has important manufactures.

Troy is seven miles north of Albany on the east shore of the Hudson River and opposite the "sprouts" (channels) of the mouth of the Mohawk. The city extends along the river for a

119-120



NEW STATE OFFICE BUILDING, ALBANY

distance of about five miles. Troy is 150 miles north of New York by rail and 155 miles by highway. It has passenger steamboat connection with New York in the navigation season. Troy is the southern terminus of the Champlain Canal and the eastern terminus of the Erie (main) division of the New York State Barge Canal system.

Troy is 17 miles from Schenectady, 94 miles from Utica, 147 from Syracuse, 296 from Buffalo, 231 from Montreal.

Troy is an important manufacturing center with collars and shirts as the chief output. The city is also important as a wholesale and retail merchandising center and for its transportation, commercial, banking and educational interests.

Troy is at the head of the tidewater navigation on the Hudson. Here is a state dam in the river and here boats are locked from the tidewater of the Hudson into the first level of the Erie and Champlain divisions of the State Barge Canal system. North of Troy, the Hudson River forms the channel of the Champlain Canal to Fort Edward, a distance of about forty miles.

Troy takes its name from the classic city of Asia Minor—the Ilium of Homer's Iliad. The Iroquois name of the narrow plain or flats, on which the first settlement was made, was Paanpaak or "field of standing corn." It was part of Rensselaer Manor and was first settled by the Dutch in 1646. The site of the present city was farm land until after the Revolution when lots were sold to New England people who located here in 1786, when the development of the present city began.

The Mohican Indians had a stockaded village on the site of Troy just north of the Poestenkill, which here enters the Hudson River. The Mohawks had a stockade on the west side of the river on the island which was later called Van Schaick's Island.

Troy was first called "Vander Heyden's" from the Dutch farmer who was located on the city lands. In 1789, the newly arrived New England pioneers named the place Troy.

The settlers, who located three miles above "Vander Heyden's," called their village New City. It was later named Lansingburg. In 1787, when Albany had 3,000 people, New City had 500 and Troy had only a few farm houses. In 1900, Lansingburg was annexed to Troy.

Historic dates of interest follow: 1816, city incorporated; 1821, Emma Willard opened female seminary; 1823, Champlain Canal opened; 1824, Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute established; 1825, Erie Canal opened; 1825, steamboat connection with New York opened; 1834, first collar and shirt factory established; 1918, Erie and Champlain canals opened.

Troy had a 1930 population of 72,752. The city is the capital of Rensselaer County which had a 1930 population of 119,759.

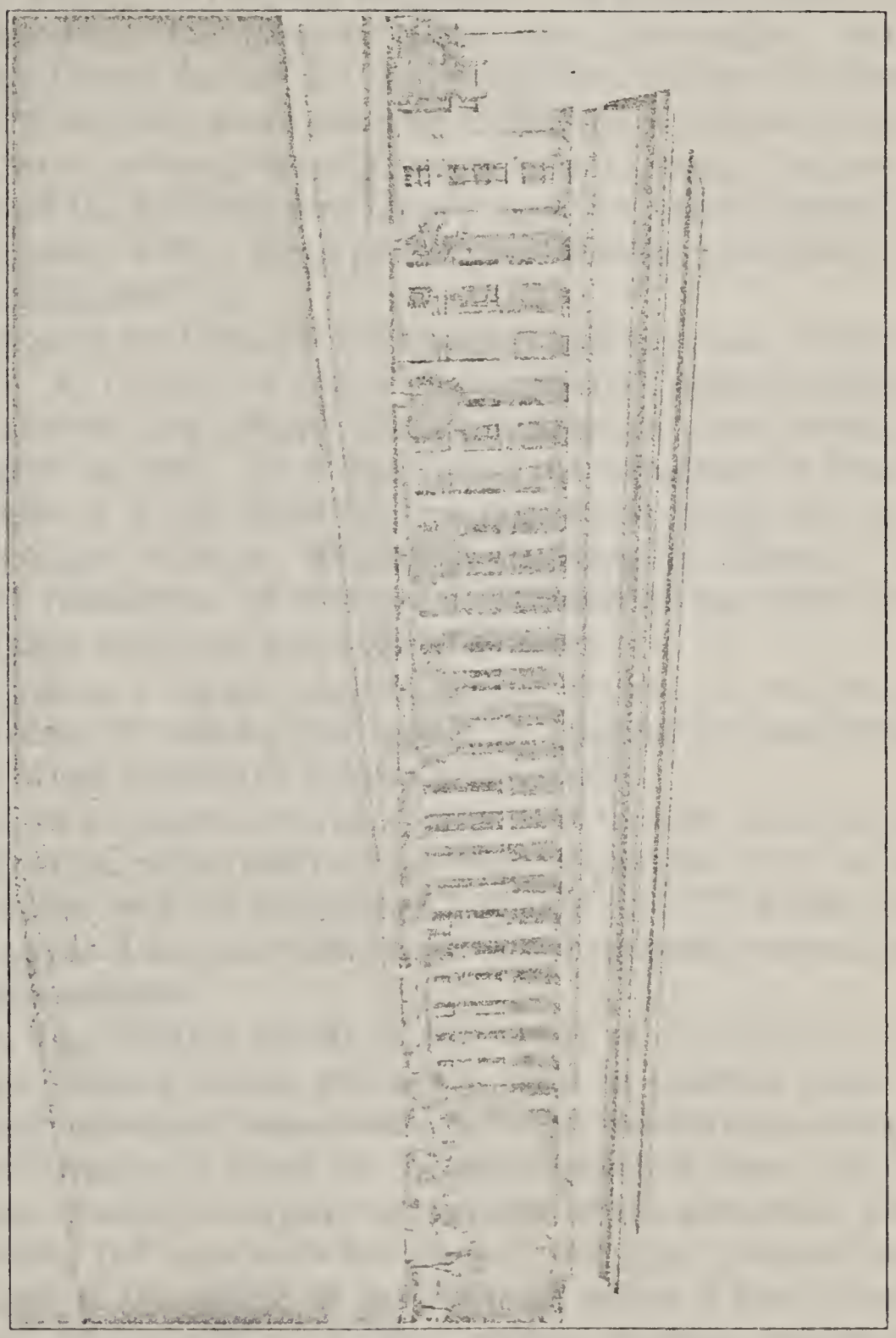
Troy's residential streets rise to commanding heights overlooking the Hudson River and the cities of Watervliet and Cohoes and the villages of Green Island and Waterford on the Hudson's western shore opposite the city. The Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute buildings stand on one of these heights, while the Emma Willard College is on still higher ground to the east. The older business and residential sections are solidly and substantially built, generally of brick, while the newer areas are of excellent architectural character.

The Hudson-Mohawk group of cities have unusual national historic interest because of the birth therein of two great American patriotic features—"Yankee Doodle" at Rensselaer and "Uncle Sam" at Troy. "Uncle Sam" Wilson was a very popular government inspector at Troy during the War of 1812. Wilson worked for a contractor named Elbert Anderson and the goods which he inspected were labeled "E. A., U. S.," meaning "Elbert Anderson, United States." The facetious workman, who did the labeling insisted that the "U. S." stood for "Uncle Sam" Wilson. The similarity of the initials "stuck" and eventually "Uncle Sam" became a national cartoon figure symbolical of the United States. The cartoon figure generally wears the civilian costume of 1812.

Green Island is a village on an island in the mouth of the Mohawk River. It was incorporated in 1869. In 1930, the village had a population of 4,331. Here is a large tractor works of the Ford Motor Co., with considerable hydro-electric development.

The city of Cohoes lies at the angle formed by the junction of the main channel of the Mohawk River with the Hudson. It lies opposite the northern section of Troy with which it is connected by bridge. Cohoes was made a city in 1869. It had a 1930 population of 23,201.

123-124



EDUCATION BUILDING, ALBANY

Cohoes Falls lie on the Mohawk River about a mile from the mouth of the stream. They are about 60 feet in height with a mass of unusual rock a little to the east of the center. In times of high water, the falls are impressive. In Colonial times and for a half century following the Revolution, this mighty waterfall was considered one of the scenic wonders of the Northeastern United States and was visited by thousands of travelers, many of whom wrote glowing descriptions of this landscape feature. The waters of the falls are now largely used for hydro-electric power development, with a large power plant located near them, which develops 55,000 h. p.

Cohoes is an Indian word which is said to mean, "Beyond the Falls." At Cohoes, on one of the upper rock beach benches of a more ancient and greater Mohawk River, a great pothole was uncovered in 1866. In it was found the remains of a mastodon, the bones of which have been mounted and which are on view in the State Museum, Education Building in Albany. A fur covered restoration of this great mammal of the later Ice Age also stands alongside the original skeleton.

Cohoes is a textile manufacturing center. It was here that the process of making knit goods by machinery was developed. It has other important industrial interests.

Cohoes is important historically as it figures as the southernmost point in actual military activities connected with the Battles of Saratoga and the Saratoga Campaign of 1777 which resulted in the great American victory which guaranteed eventual American independence.

On Van Schaick Island, in the mouth of the Mohawk, stands the Van Schaick house, which was built in Colonial days. It is the most important house connected with the Saratoga campaign. When Burgoyne's army of invasion marched down the Upper Hudson, General Schuyler, commander of the American Army of the North, fell back with his troops. Schuyler planned to make his stand at the mouth of the Mohawk where a ferry connected present Waterford with the present Cohoes neighborhood. Schuyler ordered Van Schaick's and Haver's islands and part of the mainland to be fortified. A ferry site, on the Mohawk five miles westward, was also fortified. General Schuyler occupied the Van Schaick house when he was in this neighborhood.

The Oriskany battle on August 6, 1777, was the first severe action of the Saratoga campaign. It was fought near Rome on the Mohawk River and, although indecisive, it was a virtual American victory. On August 16, 1777, American soldiers defeated a British force at Bennington. At that time, General Schuyler had his headquarters at Stillwater about twelve miles north of the American Army's main position at the mouth of the Mohawk.

From Stillwater, General Schuyler sent General Benedict Arnold with 800 men to the successful relief of Fort Stanwix at present Rome. General Herkimer led a force of Mohawk Valley American militia to raise the siege of Fort Stanwix and it was during this movement that the Battle of Oriskany was fought. General Herkimer was mortally wounded. Half of the total American and enemy forces were killed or wounded and Oriskany is said to have been the bloodiest battle of the Revolution. The enemy fled from the field but, because of their losses, the Americans had to withdraw. The first American battleflag, which was raised on land is said to have been unfurled on Fort Stanwix on August 3, 1777.

On August 19, 1777, General Horatio Gates arrived at the Van Schaick house and superseded General Schuyler in command of the American Army opposing the advance of Burgoyne. Schuyler keenly felt the indignity but he continued to act and work as the great American patriot which he was. The scenes of other actions connected with the Saratoga campaign are covered in the next chapter which describes the Hudson River country from Waterford north to Glens Falls.

Another feature of historic interest at Cohoes is the replica of the *Half Moon*, Henry Hudson's famous ship which lies at anchor in Riverside Park, Cohoes. It was brought here in 1924. The vessel is a splendid reproduction of the famous little ship in which Hudson made his epochal voyage up the Hudson in 1609. This craft formed an important feature of the Hudson-Fulton celebration of 1909. It is one of the most interesting historical features of the Hudson River country.

Waterford is the most northerly village of the Hudson-Mohawk towns group. The village was incorporated in 1794. In 1930, it had a population of 2,922. Waterford is connected with

Troy and Cohoes by bridges. The village lies at the northern angle of the Mohawk and the Hudson and it has considerable manufacturing interests.

At Waterford, the water commerce of the Hudson River, from the south, and the Champlain Canal, from the north, enter the Erie Division of the Barge Canal by a series of five great concrete locks which raise boats from the fifteen foot Hudson River level at Waterford to the 184 foot level at Crescent. The Waterford locks form the greatest series of high lift locks in the World. The lift of 169 feet is twice as much as the total lift in the Panama Canal locks, from sea level to summit level. Each of the Waterford locks cost $250,000.

West of Waterford, the Mohawk's course, which extends for twenty-two miles westward to Schenectady, is occupied by the channel of the Barge Canal with great dams at Crescent and Vischer's Ferry, which develop hydro-electric power. They form lake-like Mohawk River sections which are most attractive and which have had recreational development. Many summer cottages have been built on the shores of the Mohawk in this region. The Mohawk River at its mouth is a stream with only comparatively little less volume than the Hudson. In times of flood on the Mohawk, that stream may bring more water to the river's junction than the Hudson.

The foregoing chapter covers the description of the Hudson-Mohawk civic area, as far as the towns which abut on the Hudson are concerned. Schenectady is part of this metropolitan district however.

Schenectady is fifteen miles, by Route 5, from Albany and eleven miles, by Route 7, from Troy. The area between Schenectady and Albany is largely built up along Route 5. The name Schenectady means "Beyond the Open Pines," referring to the pine plains between Albany and Schenectady. This plateau has an elevation of over 400 feet above the Hudson River and both Route 5 and the New York Central Railroad rise to the summit of this divide in their course between Albany and Schenectady.

The chief industry at Schenectady is the main plant of the General Electric Co., largest industry in New York state, and the city is the greatest manufacturer of electrical machinery and goods in the world. The city is the seat of Union University and

here its collegiate and enginereing departments are located. The university had its beginnings in Union Academy, organized in 1785, from which Union College was formed in 1795. The city was chartered in 1798.

Schenectady: was settled by the Dutch in 1661. A French and Indian raiding party burned the palisaded town and massacred sixty of its people in a midnight attack on February 8, 1690. The place was soon rebuilt. It was an important mobilization point for armies in the Colonial and Revolutionary War period.

Schenectady early became an important Mohawk River port with boat building and shipping interests. From here, the Mohawk River was navigated by canoes, batteaux and boats from 1661 until the building of the Erie Canal in 1825. Schenectady formed the western terminus of the Mohawk and Hudson Railroad, completed in 1831, between the city and Albany. This was the first steam link of the New York Central Lines. In 1836, railroad communication was extended eighty miles westward by the Utica and Schenectady Railroad.

At Schenectady, Route 5 crosses the Mohawk River by the Great Western Gateway Bridge, one of the longest concrete bridges in America.

In 1930, Schenectady had a population of 95,662 as compared with 88,723 in 1920. Scotia, lies on the north side of the Mohawk, opposite Schenectady. Scotia had a 1930 population of 7,434 as compared with 4,358 in 1920. Schenectady and Scotia virtually form one city with a combined 1930 population of 103,096.

Scotia was settled in 1658 by Alexander Lindsay Glen. Schenectady is the capital of Schenectady County with a 1930 population of 124,980 as compared with 109,363 in 1920.

The Glen-Sanders house, which was built in 1713, stands at the northern or Scotia terminus of the Great Western Gateway Bridge. There are several islands in the Mohawk River here and the river landscape, looking westward, is very picturesque. Scotia is mainly a residential town for Schenectady business people.

Schenectady is 160 miles from New York and 279 miles from Buffalo. From Schenectady, Route 5 runs westward along the

north shore of the Mohawk River to Utica and thence to Buffalo. Route 5S, the South Shore Road, leaves Route 5, the Mohawk Turnpike, at the Bridge Plaza in Schenectady and runs westward, along the south shore of the Mohawk River to Rome, thence to Oneida where it rejoins Route 5.

Route 7, the Schohanna Trail, runs eastward, from Schenectady, to Troy, and southwestward, from Schenectady, to Binghamton. The city has important railway and highway connections. It forms a gateway to the Mohawk Valley to the west and by way of Scotia, to the Adirondack Country, Saratoga Springs and Lake George to the north over Route 50. Thus, it is seen that the Schenectady-Scotia community has important highway and railroad interests.

At Scotia, a broad field was located which was known as "The Camp" and used by military detachments for camping, training and mobilization purposes from 1690 until the close of the War of 1812. From "The Camp," General Amherst started, in 1760, with his British-American Army of 10,000 men, by way of the Mohawk Valley, to the conquest of Canada. This was one of the most important military movements in the history of North America.

A flying field of the Albany-Cleveland U. S. mail route is located north of Scotia, although it is known as the Schenectady flying field.

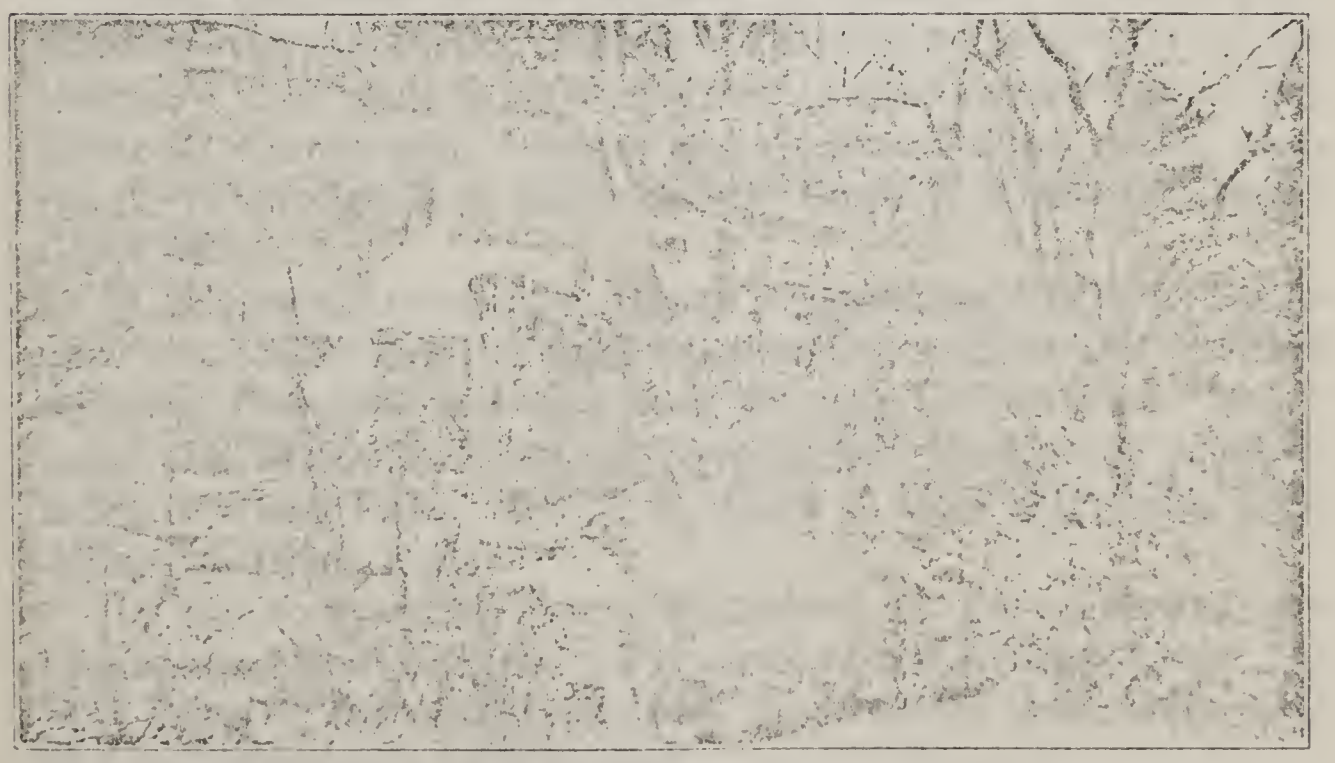
The Schenectady Historical Society Building houses collections which are open free to the public and which are worthy of a visit. An old section of the city lies near the Mohawk River in the area where the stockade was built around the little settlement of 1661. The houses in the old Schenectady section are of the later Dutch type. They are built of brick and stand directly on the street with gardens or lawns in the rear. No other Hudson Valley city has a more interesting ancient residential section than Schenectady. However, it is probable that the business interests of adjacent State Street will eventually encroach upon this interesting residential area.

Schenectady has several attractive parks. One of these is Riverside Park which abuts on the Mohawk River. It is one of the few waterside parks in the Hudson River watershed.

A movement is on foot, at the time of this writing, to use the shores and islands of the Mohawk River for park and recreational purposes. This idea was put forth by Governor Roosevelt following his tour of the Barge Canal in 1929. Tentative plans for public park development of the lower Mohawk, from Schenectady to Vischer Ferry, have been made. It has been also suggested that the islands in the river at Schenectady be used for state park purposes.

The foregoing chapter concludes the description of the Hudson River and the Hudson-Mohawk cities group, from Rensselaer to Waterford, eleven miles, and also inclusive of Schenectady, which lies on the Mohawk River but which is a part of this municipal district.

This chapter also brings the description of the Hudson River country up to Waterford, 154 miles by rail from New York City, where this detailing of the stream and its banks was begun.



ONE OF THE MOST PICTURESQUE HUDSON RIVER HOMES AT GRANDVIEW-ON-HUDSON

CHAPTER 8.

THE HUDSON RIVER—WATERFORD TO GLENS FALLS.

THE HUDSON-CHAMPLAIN-ST. LAWRENCE-MOHAWK HISTORICAL TRIANGLE, WITH ALBANY, MONTREAL, OSWEGO AT POINTS—ROUTES 9, 32, 4, 22 NORTHWARD FROM ALBANY, WATERFORD, TROY—MECHANICVILLE — STILLWATER — BEMIS HEIGHTS — SARATOGA BATTLEFIELD, SITE OF DECISIVE BATTLES OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION, SEPTEMBER 19, OCTOBER 7, 1777—SARATOGA BATTLEFIELD STATE PARK—SCHUYLERVILLE, SCENE OF SURRENDER OF BURGOYNE'S BRITISH ARMY, OCTOBER 17, 1777—FORT EDWARD—HUDSON FALLS—GLENS FALLS—U. S. ROUTE 9 NORTHWARD FROM ALBANY—SARATOGA SPRINGS—SARATOGA LAKE—BALLSTON SPA—MOUNT McGREGOR.

From the mouth of the Mohawk at Waterford, it is forty-six miles northward to Glens Falls. This is by Route 32, on the Hudson's west bank, from Waterford to Northumberland, where Route 32B crosses the Hudson and runs northward on the eastern shore through Fort Miller to Fort Edward, Hudson Falls and Glens Falls.

U. S. Route 9 runs from Albany north on the Northern Boulevard out of Albany, through Loudonville, crosses the Mohawk River at Crescent, and continues through Clifton Park, Round Lake and Malta to Saratoga Springs and thence for nineteen miles to Glens Falls. By U. S. Route 9, it is fifty miles from Albany to Glens Falls.

In the forty miles from Waterford to Fort Edward, the Champlain Canal occupies the channel of the Hudson River. At Fort Edward, the canal follows the Wood Creek route to the head of Lake Champlain at Whitehall.

The Delaware and Hudson Railroad main line runs north from Albany to Saratoga Springs and Lake George and thence northerly, along Lake Champlain, to Rouses Point near the

Canadian border, where connection is made with Montreal and Quebec.

The Upper Hudson Valley, from Waterford to Glens Falls, is of vast national historical importance because of its connection with the Saratoga campaign of the Revolutionary War. It was the victory, of the American Army in this campaign of 1777, which eventually brought about American independence.

The Battles of Saratoga (September 19 and October 7, 1777) are historically considered as one conflict as they consisted of two actions fought on the same field. They are included as one of Creasy's "Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World."

The Saratoga Battlefield lies twenty-seven miles north of Albany on the west shore of the Hudson. It is now a state park of much public interest and, of course, with free admission. Route 32 traverses the Battlefield.

The Hudson and its shores are generally unusually attractive in this Upper Hudson section. Route 32 runs close to the western shore in the fifteen miles between Waterford and Bemis Heights and thus excellent river views are obtainable in this picturesque stretch. The commerce on the upper river is also interesting. The channel of the Champlain Canal is twelve feet in depth with a minimum bottom width of seventy-five feet. In the Hudson River, the minimum bottom width of the channel is 250 feet, with a depth of twelve feet. The locks are 310 feet in length and forty-five feet in width. The Champlain Canal is sixty-two miles in length. Work was started in 1905 and the canal was opened for traffic in 1916. There are eleven locks on the Champlain division. These are great concrete structures, the gates of which can be opened or closed in thirty seconds.

The city of Mechanicville lies nine miles north of Waterford on the west shore of the Hudson River. It has important industries and is a considerable trading center. One of the first hydro-electric developments on the Upper Hudson was that at Mechanicville which creates 3,000 h. p.

Mechanicville is on the Delaware and Hudson and Boston and Maine railroads and New York State 32, which is also numbered U. S. Route 4, from Waterford northward to Northumberland. The Boston and Maine Railroad here crosses the Hudson by bridge.

Mechanicville lies in Saratoga County. It is twenty miles north of Albany, twenty-seven miles south of Glens Falls and about seven miles south of the Saratoga Battlefield. In 1930, Mechanicville had a population of 7,949.

The Hoosick River enters the Hudson at Stillwater about three miles north of Mechanicville. Here is a dam of the Barge Canal system which creates a lake-like section of the Hudson River extending northward for about fifteen miles.

Stillwater was settled by Dutch from Fort Orange (Albany) about 1650. It was incorporated as a village in 1816 and it had a 1930 population of 1,052. The place has connection with the battles of Saratoga which were fought about four miles northward. Because Stillwater was the most considerable settlement in the vicinity the great battles of September 19 and October 7, 1777, have been sometimes called the Battles of Stillwater. General Schuyler had headquarters here about the middle of August, 1777, when his main army lay at the mouth of the Mohawk.

From Stillwater General Schuyler sent a force of 800 men under Benedict Arnold, to raise the enemy siege of Fort Schuyler on the Mohawk River. General Arnold's expedition was successful and this was a great blow to Burgoyne.

Bemis Heights are located where the Hudson River hills come close to the river making here narrow flats on each side. Kosciuszko, the Polish engineer, advised General Gates, the American commander, to fortify the west bank and its hills at this point and here make his stand against Burgoyne's advancing army. This decision had much to do with American victory as the selected position was a strong one.

The heights rise north of the little village of Bemis Heights and the battleground lies from one to two miles northward. When the battles were fought here in 1777, the country was heavily wooded—with only an occasional clearing. It is now almost entirely cleared of forest and only an occasional small patch or strip of woods remain. During the Revolution, a man named Bemis kept a tavern at the little settlement, which was famous for its good wines and excellent table. Lossing says it was "a famous place for sleighing parties in winter throughout the whole of the Saratoga Valley of the Hudson." From this innkeeper, the Heights take their name as he owned land upon them.

The Saratoga Battlefield is about one and one-half miles long (from the American lines to the Breyman Redoubt) and from one-half to three-fourths of a mile in width. The greatest length is north and south.

General Gates took command of the Northern Army on August 19, 1777, when Burgoyne's army was at Fort Edward. The Battle of Bennington had been fought on August 16, 1777, when the British-Hessian force had been badly beaten. Shortly afterward, Burgoyne received news that the British expedition under St. Leger, which had penetrated the Mohawk Valley, had turned back. The British commander had to advance or retreat and he decided to march on and attack.

General Gates ordered the Northern Army to advance from Cohoes to Stillwater where it was proposed to fortify and fight. Kosciuszko, however, had seen the splendid defensive position at Bemis Heights and he advised Gates to make his stand there. Gates assented and breastworks were dug and other fortifications were erected on a rectangle enclosing the heights and running therefrom to and along the river and, on the west to and south of the present junction of the Schuylerville and the Saratoga Lake roads. South of this junction (of present Routes 32 and 67), General Gates had his headquarters. The Neilsen house and barn stood at the northwestern angle of the American position. Only the older part now remains. To the north of the house, stood a stockaded log barn which was called Fort Neilsen at the time of the battles.

The Saratoga Battlefield is now a state park, of which Ex-Mayor George O. Slingerland of Mechanicville, is superintendent. Mr. Slingerland is an enthusiast on the battlefield and its development and he has done a great work in this regard. The place is annually visited by increasing thousands of motorists.

A blockhouse, typical of the Revolutionary period, has been erected to the north of the site of Fort Neilsen which is located by a marker. The blockhouse is used as a historical museum. Southward of the blockhouse, is the Period House, which is a reconstruction of a house of the Revolutionary period. South of that is the well which served the American soldiers during the battles. A little farther south is the Revolutionary section of the Neilsen house, which stood here at the time of the battle and which is

135 136



THE HUDSON RIVER AT BEMIS HEIGHTS

The American Army headquarters position of the Saratoga battlefield lies about one-half mile north of this section. The northern portion of the little Village of Bemis Heights is seen in the picture. The American victories of September 19 and October 7, 1777, are frequently referred to as the "Battles of Bemis Heights"

the only structure, now standing on the field, which then existed. A modern section of the Neilsen house has been torn down. This was the headquarters of Generals Poor and Larned and of Colonel Morgan. The structures mentioned face Route 32 to the west. About opposite the Neilsen house is the Memorial Pavilion which stands, on the west side of Route 32, and on the eastern side of the Soldiers' Cemetery where many of the slain American soldiers lie buried. Mr. Slingerland has planted rows of evergreens outlining this patriotic field. On a slope to the east of the American position, is the site of the powder and ammunition magazine which was in use by the Americans at the time of the battles.

The view from the Neilsen house shows the strength of the American position and also the lay of the land of a great part of the battlefield. Dirt roads at present give access to all the vital points of the battlefield.

From the American position, a fine view is obtainable of the foothills of the Green Mountains which lie on the eastern shore of the Hudson. Willard's Mountain rises on the eastern bank of the river about opposite the battleground. This summit commands a fine view of the Upper Hudson Valley for many miles. From this height, a man named Willard and a few other patriots, with a good spy-glass, watched Burgoyne move down the Hudson. Willard thus gave General Gates information of much value to him in opposing the invasion.

The Saratoga Battlefield is well marked with numerous board signs which, it is expected, will eventually be replaced by more permanent ones of bronze and iron. A few of the latter mark field positions.

Northeast of the American position, a road leads to the site of the great historical pageant which was held here in 1927 on the occasion of the sesquicentennial of the second Battle of Saratoga. At that time, it is estimated that 150,000 people saw scenes suggestive of the decisive conflict of the Revolution.

The Saratoga battles, of September 19 and October 7, were fought on the same ground. The dirt road from Route 32 leads to the Great Ravine, where hot fighting took place. The road extends to the left to Route 32 and, along this dirt road section, the Americans were deployed opposite the British right on October 7. From this road, one can look across the entire field of action of

that day, with the Great Redoubt of the British on the right, Freeman's Farm beyond and Breyman's Redoubt about a half mile to the north. The British right, with strong artillery, was on the rise of ground on the left.

In the late afternoon of October 7, the Americans strongly attacked the British center, when a detachment, led by General Arnold, charged into the Breyman Redoubt, occupied by the Hessians, they broke and fled and the British were compelled to fall back. Their retreat to Schuylerville soon followed.

The battle of September 19, 1777, was violent but indecisive. That of October 7, 1777, was a complete American victory.

The British field position was the Great Redoubt located less than a mile from the American lines. On October 8, 1777, the Americans occupied it. Burgoyne retreated, from his camp near the Hudson River, on the evening of October 8, 1777. It took the British nearly twenty-four hours to reach Schuylerville, about nine miles north of the battlefield. The American Army covered the distance in about five hours on the 10th.

Old Saratoga lay on the south side of the Fishkill which here enters the Hudson. Schuylerville is located on the north shore of the Kill. The British occupied the high ground of Schuylerville while the American Army was posted in Old Saratoga on the southern shore. Americans were posted on the eastern bank of the Hudson and in Burgoyne's rear. The British position was under constant fire and the American Army outnumbered the enemy two to one. Being unable to fight or retreat, Burgoyne surrendered his army to Gates at Old Saratoga on October 17, 1777. The surrender is marked by the impressive Victory Monument. The British troops grounded their arms on the flatlands where stood the ruins of Fort Hardy at the junction of the Fishkill with the Hudson. Following the surrender, the British were marched, as prisoners of war, eastward to Boston.

The total number of the enemy surrendered was 5,791. The Germans numbered 2,412 of these. At the time of the surrender, the American Army numbered 13,222 officers and men. Of these 9,093 were soldiers of the Continental Line, corresponding to regulars. The American militiamen numbered 4,129.

When the news of the American victory reached Europe, the cause of the patriots took a decided boom. The alliance with

France was soon concluded and eventual American success was assured.

General Philip Schuyler had a great amount of property at Schuylerville including a fine mansion. Mrs. Schuyler was at the Schuyler home on the approach of Burgoyne. Her husband sent her word to set fire to the fields of ripe grain which was done. When the British were marching southward, Burgoyne ordered Schuyler's handsome house to be burned which was done. It was later rebuilt but not in as fine a manner as the original structure.

In 1745, during King George's War, a French and Indian raiding party burned and killed through Saratoga and Washington counties.

In 1755, Baron Dieskau, in command of the French forces, built a fort at the mouth of the Fishkill. This was during the campaign which ended in the defeat of the French in the Battle of Lake George by an army of American militia under Sir William Johnson. The French abandoned the post whereupon the British-American troops entered it and named it Fort Hardy in honor of Sir Charles Hardy, governor of the province of New York.

The Battenkill, a considerable stream enters the Hudson opposite Northumberland and about two miles north of Schuylerville. Route 32B here crosses a bridge to the east bank of the river. It was at this point that Burgoyne's army crossed the Hudson, from the east to the west bank, on September 12, 1777, on the southward march to defeat on Bemis Heights.

From Schuylerville, Route 29 runs westward to Saratoga Springs, a distance of eleven miles. Route 29 extends westward from the latter place through Johnstown and Dolgeville to a junction with Route 28 at Middleville. Eastward from Schuylerville, Route 29 runs through Greenwich and Battenville to Salem, a distance of about seventeen miles.

Route 40 runs, about three miles inland from the Hudson, from the northern limits of Troy to Argyle, where it connects, by Route 197 with Fort Edward on Route 32B. North of Northumberland, Route 32 runs inland several miles from the river to a junction with U. S. Route 9 at South Glens Falls.

The Boston and Maine Railroad crosses the Hudson at Schuylerville. That village was incorporated in 1874 and had a 1930 population of 1,411.

At Thomson, opposite Northumberland, there is a dam in the river with hydro-electric development. There is a similar development at Fort Miller about three miles northward. The first construction work on the New York State Barge Canal system began at Fort Miller on April 24, 1905. The village of Fort Miller is on the east bank of the Hudson but the old fort was on the west side.

Fort Edward lies on the east bank of the Hudson River about eight miles above Fort Miller. Fort Edward is forty-nine miles north of Albany and 197 miles north of New York by highway—U. S. Route 9 and U. S. Route 4. Fort Edward is 190 miles south of Montreal, so, it is seen that it is just about half way between New York and Montreal on the great north-south route. Fort Edward is four miles from Hudson Falls and eight miles from Glens Falls. The three towns, with South Glens Falls, form a civic district with a combined 1930 population of 31,515, as compared with 28,428 in 1920. Fort Edward had a 1930 population of 3,848.

Fort Edward was the southern terminal point of the portage trails or carrying places between the head of Lake George, seventeen miles, and the head of Lake Champlain, twenty-five miles distant. The Indians portaged their canoes and loads from the two lakes to the Hudson at present Fort Edward, because this was the nearest and most available point in the stream, south of the falls and rapids which here lie in the river northward. The white pioneers thus transferred their goods until the completion of Champlain Canal in 1823. On the Lake Champlain portage, the Indians and pioneers brought their canoes a great part of the way on the waters of Wood Creek and portaged them from that stream to the Hudson at present Fort Edward.

Because of its strategic position as the southern terminus of the Lake Champlain and Lake George portage trails, Governor Nicholson built a fort here in 1709. Colonel Lydins settled at this site in 1744 and established a fortified trading post known as Fort Lydins. Fort Edward was originally known as Fort Lyman, as it was built by American provincial militia under

General Phineas Lyman as a defense against the approaching French-Canadian-Indian army under Baron Dieskau, in 1755. Lyman occupied the post with American militia and awaited the arrival of Major General William Johnson, who had command of the provincial expedition with which it was aimed to capture Crown Point.

Fort Lyman stood at the junction of Fort Edward Creek with the Hudson River. It had walls of logs and earth which were sixteen feet high and twenty-four feet thick.

General Johnson marched his men to the head of Lake George where he threw up intrenchments and awaited the coming of the French invaders. Dieskau moved to the attack by way of the portage trail from present Whitehall to Hudson Falls (the Wood Creek route) and thence, over present Route 32B to present Glens Falls and, from there, over U. S. Route 9, to the head of Lake George. There, the American Army, under Johnson and Lyman, decisively defeated the invaders, as related in the historical chapters of this work.

Following the Battle of Lake George (September 8, 1755), Johnson ordered a strong fortification built at the head of Lake George and, on September 29, 1755, he named this post Fort William Henry, and, on September 21, 1755, he gave the name of Fort Edward to Fort Lyman. Both of the names, which Johnson conferred, were those of grandsons of George II, King of Great Britain.

In 1757, Montcalm, at the head of a French-Canadian army, made two attempts to capture Fort William Henry, at the head of Lake George. The second attempt was successful. Colonel Monroe was in command of the fort with 3,000 men. Montcalm had 9,000 soldiers and Indians. Monroe sent for aid to General Webb, who was at Fort Edward with 4,000 men. Webb refused aid and Monroe was finally compelled to surrender. The garrison and non-combatants started the seventeen mile march from Fort William Henry to Fort Edward. Montcalm had 2,000 Indians who attacked the unarmed marchers and murdered or captured 1,500 of them, including women and children. The survivors escaped over the trail to Fort Edward. This tragic occurrence forms much of Cooper's "Last of the Mohicans."

In 1777, when Burgoyne's British Army of invasion was marching southward, he made his camp at Sandy Hill. From there, marauding parties of Indians went out. One of these captured a Mrs. McNeil of Fort Edward, and Jane McCrea, who was visiting her. The savages started with their prisoners for Sandy Hill. Pursuing American soldiers, from Fort Edward, fired on the savages and killed Jenny. Following her death, the Indians scalped her. The tragic incident of July 22, 1777, was intentionally or unintentionally elaborated into an Indian atrocity and it brought hundreds of young men as volunteers to the ranks of the American Army which was opposing Burgoyne's advance.

Burgoyne occupied Fort Edward following its evacuation by the Americans on July 30, 1777. From here, he sent a detachment of his army to defeat at Bennington, on August 16, 1777, and here he heard the news that St. Leger and his British-Hessian-Tory-Indian army had fled back to Canada following its three weeks siege of Fort Schuyler on the Mohawk River. St. Leger was to have formed a junction with Burgoyne at Albany, according to the latter's plan of campaign. There the British expedition from New York was also to have joined Burgoyne's main army.

At Fort Edward, Burgoyne decided to go forward and fight despite his reverses at Bennington, Oriskany and Fort Stanwix. After the British-Hessian army was decisively beaten in the second battle of Saratoga, on October 7, 1777, an American force occupied Fort Edward to aid in blocking the enemy's retreat.

The most important historical region in the United States is the Hudson-Champlain-St. Lawrence-Lake Ontario-Mohawk River geographical triangle. Its various important phases are covered in other chapters. Fort Edward is a most important location on this historical triangle, which also is vital in its national and international transportation interests.

The Champlain Canal leaves the Hudson at Fort Edward and traverses the Wood Creek route northward to Lake Champlain. This link, between the Hudson and the lake, has been proposed as the line of a ship canal, which would connect Montreal and the St. Lawrence River with the tidewater of the Hudson River at Albany. A ship canal is also projected along the Mohawk River

side of the Champlain-St. Lawrence-Mohawk triangle. This route has been called the All-American Ship Canal and it is covered in other chapters. The eventual construction of both waterways is not improbable.

Fort Edward has paper and wood pulp industries. There is considerable hydro-electric development of the Hudson at this point.

From Fort Edward, the Delaware and Hudson Railroad runs northward to Whitehall and thence, along the west shore of Lake Champlain, to the Canadian border. A branch runs through Hudson Falls and Glens Falls to Lake George.

Hudson Falls is 4 miles north of Fort Edward on the Hudson River, Delaware and Hudson Railroad and Route 32B. It is important industrially, with paper the chief manufacture. Hudson Falls was incorporated as a village in 1810. In 1930, it had a population of 6,448. Hudson Falls is the county seat of Washington County, which had a 1930 population of 46,471.

There is a fall of 90 feet in the river at Hudson Falls which has had important hydro-electric development.

At Hudson Falls, the Hudson's course is westerly to Glens Falls, and this is the first change in its 200-mile north-south direction between New York and Hudson Falls. This westerly course continues to the mouth of the Sacandaga at Hadley, about 18 miles west of Hudson Falls.

Glens Falls lies on the Great War Trail of history, running from Albany northward to Lake George and Canada over what is now U. S. Route 9. Glens Falls is 51 miles from Albany by No. 9 and 61 miles by rail over the Delaware and Hudson. The city is 9 miles south of Lake George and 19 miles north of Saratoga Springs, over U. S. Route 9. Glens Falls is a highway gateway to the eastern and central Adirondack region.

In 1930, Glens Falls had a population of 18,530. It lies in Warren County, of which the Village of Lake George is the county seat. Warren County had a 1930 population of 34,171. As previously stated, Glens Falls is the largest unit of a four-town community composed of the City of Glens Falls, and the villages of South Glens Falls, Hudson Falls and Fort Edward, with a combined 1930 population of 31,515 as compared with 28,428 in 1920. This community is interesting because it lies in three counties—

South Glens Falls in Saratoga, Glens Falls in Warren, and Hudson Falls and Fort Edward in Washington County.

At Glens Falls, the Hudson River makes a drop of about 50 feet by falls and rapids which has had hydro-electric development. Some of the largest and finest paper mills in the world are located at the falls. There are quarries of black marble and limestone adjacent to the river. The city has important industrial interests and it is the commercial and trading center of the Upper Hudson Valley. The city is substantially built and presents a handsome appearance. It has many fine old and new residences and business buildings.

Cooper, in "The Last of the Mohicans," has celebrated the falls and the famous cave which lies under the limestone formation at this point.

Just outside the city limits, a military post was located in the Colonial and Revolutionary period. General Reidesel and his Hessian troops camped there when Burgoyne's army of invasion was moving southward along the Hudson River in the summer of 1777. A marker locates the site.

Glens Falls was settled in 1763. Sawmills were built here between 1763 and 1765. South Glens Falls, on the opposite side of the Hudson, was settled in 1765. Glens Falls was incorporated as a village in 1837. In 1864, the village was practically destroyed by fire. The town was incorporated as a city in 1908. Glens Falls and South Glens Falls have separate municipal governments, but they actually form one city with a combined population of 21,219 in 1930.

South Glens Falls was incorporated as a village in 1895. It had a 1930 population of 2,689.

Two miles above Glens Falls, a dam has been constructed across the Hudson which furnishes water for a hydro-electric plant which creates 6,500 horse-power. This dam also supplies water for a feeder for the Champlain Canal at Fort Edward.

As previously stated, Glens Falls lies on U. S. Route 9, one of the great automobile touring routes of the Northeastern United States. It runs from New York through Albany, Saratoga Springs, Glens Falls, Lake George and Plattsburg to the Canadian border, where it connects with the Montreal-Quebec highway. South of Glens Falls, U. S. Route 9 runs through Saratoga

Springs, Malta, Round Lake, Clifton Park and Crescent, on the Mohawk River to Albany.

Ballston Spa is on Route 50, which runs between Schenectady-Scotia and Saratoga Springs.

The foregoing description of the Hudson River country, between New York and Glens Falls, has been confined generally to the Hudson and its immediate shores and their highways. However, as U. S. Route 9 has been part of this description, Saratoga Springs is included in this chapter's detailing of the high spots of the Hudson River country. Mention of Ballston Spa is also included.

Saratoga Springs is 38 miles north of Albany and 186 miles north of New York over U. S. Route 9. It is on the Delaware and Hudson Railroad. The city is the center of a number of important highways. Route 29 runs from Johnstown and Gloversville eastward through Saratoga Springs to Schuylerville on the Hudson River, a distance of 11 miles. General Schuyler first improved this trail into a wagon road in 1783. Route 50 runs southward from Saratoga Springs through Ballston Spa to Scotia, on the Mohawk River and opposite Schenectady. Route 9K runs north from Saratoga Springs, through Corinth, Hadley and Luzerne, to Lake George Village, where it meets U. S. Route 9. The Sacandaga River empties into the Hudson at Hadley, and about 4 miles west of that village is the Conklingville dam, which impounds the waters of the great Sacandaga Reservoir or lake.

Saratoga Springs was incorporated as a city in 1915, when it was one of the largest villages in the state, with a population of 13,972. In 1930, the city had a population of 13,163. A branch of the Delaware and Hudson Railroad runs north from Saratoga Springs along the Hudson River to North Creek, in the heart of the Adirondack Mountains.

The meaning of Saratoga is somewhat obscure. One interpretation of the word is "hillside of a great river." The river referred to is the Hudson. A broader translation would probably be "country of a great river," inasmuch as a great part of the Hudson River country, lying between the mouth of the Mohawk and Fort Edward, was called Saratoga by the Indians and the white pioneers. In Colonial times, regional names frequently embraced large areas of country, as in the case of Saratoga.

Saratoga Springs, as a town center, did not come into being until after the Revolution. The first settlement, known as "Saratoga," was what is now called "Old Saratoga," a hamlet on the south side of the Fishkill opposite Schuylerville. Saratoga Springs merely meant originally the springs in the Saratoga country.

In 1684, the Saratoga Springs section was ceded by the Indians to Dutch settlers. Rip Van Dam was the first owner.

In 1693, a French, Canadian and Indian war party passed over the Great War Trail, now U. S. Route 9, to Saratoga Springs, whence it went southward over present Route 50 to Ballston Springs, and thence over present Route 67 to Amsterdam. The invaders then marched westward along the Mohawk River and destroyed all four of the Mohawk castles. The upper Mohawk castle was at Tionnontogen, near present Fort Plain, where the invaders had a sharp battle with the Mohawks. The enemy killed a number of Mohawk warriors and took about 300 Mohawk prisoners, after which they started the return march for Canada. Maj. Peter Schuyler, with a party of Albany militia and some Mohawks, pursued the retreating enemy, who halted on the trail near present Saratoga Springs and constructed a fortified camp. Schuyler's Dutchmen and Indians came up and a hard battle took place, after which the invaders resumed their flight.

The Indians were the first to know of the medicinal value of the mineral waters at present Saratoga Springs. The red men brought their friend, Sir William Johnson, here for the water cure in 1767 and he is said to have been the first white man to visit the springs. However, this is rather improbable, as these springs lie close to the trail over which thousands of white pioneers and wood runners had passed for 150 years prior to the visit of Sir William.

In 1784, the first log "hotel" was built at Saratoga Springs. The popularity of the waters grew rapidly in the years following the Revolution. In the period from 1825 to 1875, Saratoga Springs was the greatest summer resort in the Eastern United States. Great hotels were built and the village was thronged with people during the season which lasted from June 15th to September 15th, which is still the season's length. Saratoga Springs is still a favorite summer resort, but the rise of many

1417.1419



HIGH ROCK SPRING, AS IT APPEARED A CENTURY AGO

Sir William Johnson is said to have been the first white man to come to Saratoga Springs for the benefit of his health. He was brought to High Rock Spring by the Indians

other vacation places has somewhat detracted from its earlier prominence.

The Saratoga race track is one of the finest in the country and the Springs are particularly crowded during the racing season.

Saratoga Lake lies 3½ miles from Saratoga Springs. The lake is 6 miles long and 2 miles wide. It was formerly a favorite place for rowing regattas.

Saratoga Springs has handsome elm-lined streets. It is the location of Skidmore College, one of the finest women's educational institutions in the state. Because of its great convention hall and numerous large hotels, Saratoga Springs is a favorite place for conventions and meetings.

The mineral springs number about 50, of which 40 are well known.

The State of New York established a reservation about the mineral springs in 1909. It includes about 550 acres of land which is maintained and operated by the State Conservation Commission. Upon this property are 122 natural springs and wells. The state established the reservation to maintain a continuous flow of the mineral springs and ensure the use of their waters to the public.

A great tree nursery of the Conservation Department of the State of New York is located close to Saratoga Springs.

Ballston Spa, on Route 50, is the county seat of Saratoga County. Ballston Spa had a population of 4,588 in 1930. Saratoga County had a population of 63,315 in 1930. The village is 7 miles southwest of Saratoga Springs and 16 miles north of Scotia, which lies opposite Schenectady. Route 67 runs east and west through Ballston Spa. Westward, it runs to Amsterdam, on the Mohawk River and Route 5, and eastward it traverses the head of Saratoga Lake and continues eastward to the Saratoga Battlefield at Bemis Heights.

Ballston Spa was permanently settled in 1787 and it was incorporated in 1807. Its excellent mineral waters soon made it a fashionable watering place and, in the early years of the nineteenth century, it was a more popular summer resort than Saratoga Springs.

One of the best acidulous chalybeate springs in the country is located at Ballston Spa. The water flows from a depth of 650 feet through a tube bored in the solid rock. It is highly effervescent.

Ballston Spa was the home of Gen. Abner Doubleday, who invented baseball at Cooperstown in 1840 and who was a noted Union general in the Civil War.

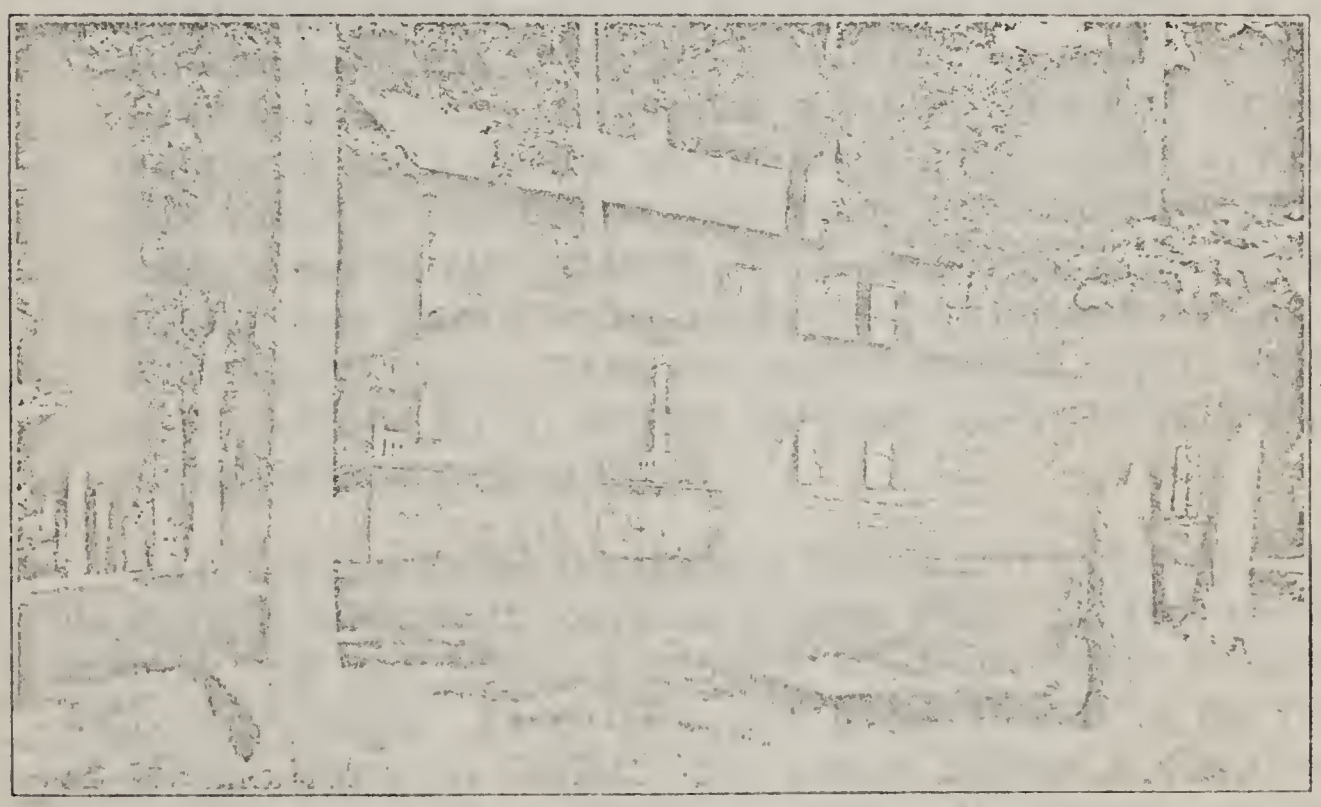
On U. S. Route 9, the motorist, going north from Saratoga Springs to Glens Falls, runs along a stretch of Adirondack country to the west of this great highway. The tableland of the Adirondack Mountains rises steeply from the Saratoga County plateau in this interesting section of the Great Trail, and the eastern edge of the mountain range is here seen more clearly defined than can be noted elsewhere from a through route. Chief of the peaks, from a historical point of view, is Mount McGregor, where General and President U. S. Grant spent his last days in completing his memoirs. The cottage in which he died is preserved. Another place, in the Hudson River watershed, where the edge of the mountain mass rises sharply from an adjacent plateau is on the highway running from Gloversville to Northville, skirting the western side of the great Sacandaga Reservoir. This is in the southern Adirondack region, but the edge of the mountain mass runs northerly and the summits rise from the plateau, which is drained by the Cayadutta at Gloversville and by the Sacandaga farther north. This region is in Fulton County, which is in the Hudson River watershed, but which is not one of the Hudson River counties, which are covered in this work.

The mountain region, to the west of U. S. Route 9 between Saratoga Springs and Glens Falls, is the first section of the Adirondacks with which the motorist comes in touch in traveling the 200 miles of the highway between New York and Glens Falls.

The foregoing chapter completes the description of the Hudson River country between the mouth of the Mohawk River and Glens Falls. It also completes the description of the Hudson River country from New York City to Glens Falls, a distance of about 200 miles.

The next and concluding chapter of this Hudson River description deals with the stream from Glens Falls to its source

in the Adirondacks, a distance of about 100 miles. It also covers the most important historical areas in sections contiguous to the Adirondack region of the Hudson River and U. S. Route 9, which runs northward through the eastern Adirondacks from Glens Falls, and Route 22, which extends northward from Hudson Falls to and along Lake Champlain.



GENERAL GRANT COTTAGE, MOUNT McGREGOR

CHAPTER 9.

THE HUDSON RIVER—GLENS FALLS TO THE SOURCE AT MOUNT MARCY.

THE ADIRONDACK SECTION OF THE HUDSON—DESCRIPTION OF ITS COURSE FROM LAKE TEAR OF THE CLOUDS TO GLENS FALLS, 100 MILES—TAHAWUS, WHERE VICE PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT WAS NOTIFIED OF PRESIDENT McKINLEY'S DEATH—INDIAN RIVER—NORTH CREEK—WARRENSBURG—SCHROON RIVER—HADLEY—SACANDAGA RESERVOIR—HYDRO-ELECTRIC DEVELOPMENTS ON THE UPPER HUDSON—250,000 HORSE-POWER DEVELOPED—MAIN HIGHWAYS OF THE UPPER HUDSON VALLEY: ROUTES 9, 4, 22—LAKE GEORGE AND LAKE GEORGE BATTLEFIELD PARK—SITE OF BATTLE OF LAKE GEORGE, SEPTEMBER 8, 1755—ROUTE 4, HUDSON FALLS TO WHITEHALL—ROUTE OF GENERAL BURGOYNE'S ARMY'S SOUTHWARD MARCH, 1777—WHITEHALL TO TICONDEROGA AND CROWN POINT TO KEESEVILLE OVER ROUTE 22—FORT TICONDEROGA, SCENE OF BRITISH DEFEAT, 1758; AMERICAN CAPTURE, 1775; BRITISH CAPTURE, 1777—LAKE GEORGE TO KEESEVILLE OVER ROUTE 9.

As previously stated, the Hudson River's course changes from its straight north-south course at Hudson Falls. At that village it turns west and follows a winding westward course to Glens Falls and Corinth. From the source of the Hudson at the foot of Mount Marcy to Corinth, the stream follows a circuitous course in a generally southern direction. Its channel, in this section, runs through the Adirondack country and, northward from Glens Falls, the Hudson can be considered as an Adirondack river with all the character of such a stream.

The counties traversed by the main stream, in the 100 miles of its winding course through the Adirondacks, are Essex, Warren and Saratoga counties. The Hudson and its tributaries drain the major parts of the central and western areas of Warren County and the southern, western and central areas of Essex

County. The Hudson forms the northeastern boundary of Saratoga County.

Previous descriptive chapters concerning the Hudson River have dealt with the stream and its shores. This chapter, describing its Adirondack section, covers not only the river but the main highways which traverse the river's mountain watershed area. Reference is also made to some points which lie outside the watershed but which have historical or present day connection with the Hudson of the Adirondacks and the Upper Hudson Valley.

The Hudson River rises in Lake Tear of the Clouds, a lakelet at the foot of Mount Marcy, the highest peak of the Adirondacks, located amidst the highest summits of the mountain mass which occupies a great portion of Northern New York. Mount Marcy has an elevation of 5,344 feet above sea level.

From Lake Tear, as the name is shortened, the Hudson flows through Lake Colden amidst the highest peaks of the mountains. Thence it courses through Henderson Lake to Sanford Lake and thence to Tahawus, a small mountain settlement, about 2 miles east of the junction of Newcomb Lake outlet with the Hudson.

Tahawus has a place in history, because Vice President Theodore Roosevelt and his family were staying at the Tahawus Club when a messenger arrived in 1901 and told Roosevelt that President McKinley had died from an assassin's bullet and that Roosevelt would become president as soon as he took the oath of office, which was done at Buffalo shortly afterward. Following the notification of McKinley's death, Roosevelt and a driver took a 25-mile drive in a buckboard over what was then a rough road (present Route 28N) to the nearest railroad station—that of the Delaware and Hudson Railroad at North Creek.

The Hudson's course is generally south by west, from Sanford Lake to its junction with the Cedar River at Cedar Mountain. About 1½ miles southward, Indian River enters the Hudson. It is the outlet stream of Indian Lake, a long, narrow lake which is the chief headwater lake of the Hudson. Indian Lake is about 12 miles long. Its headwater stream is the Jessup River, a creek which Route 10 crosses (1931) about 4 miles north of Speculator on Lake Pleasant. Headwaters of the Hudson, Mohawk and Sacandaga rivers here lie close together.

From its junction with the Indian River, the Hudson flows eastward to its junction with Boreas River close to Dutton Hill. Thence its course is generally southward to Corinth. About 3 miles south of Dutton Hill is North River, a village of a few hundred people, and about 3 miles farther south is North Creek, another small village. Both towns are on Route 28, which runs from Indian Lake to meet U. S. Route 9 about 2 miles north of Warrensburg.

Schroon River empties into the Hudson a mile or two west of Warrensburg. It is the outlet for Schroon Lake, one of the large lakes of the Adirondacks. Schroon River, with its headwaters and tributaries, drains a large part of northeastern Warren County and southeastern Essex County.

U. S. Route 9 closely follows Schroon Lake and Schroon River northward to a point very near its source. This highway and its points of interest are mentioned later in this chapter.

From Warrensburg, the Hudson runs southward, through Luzerne to Hadley, where the Sacandaga River empties into the Hudson. This is one of the largest tributaries of the Hudson but it is of even greater importance because its waters are impounded by the great dam at Conklingville, about 4 miles west of Hadley. This dam forms a great reservoir or lake of about the same size as Lake George. It was filled by the waters of the Sacandaga River in 1930. The work was done by the Hudson River Regulating District Commission. To create this great body of water, villages, farm houses and farm buildings were razed, bodies were removed from the cemeteries on the Sacandaga River flats to new burial places above the flooded level and the whole area was prepared for the reception of the lake waters.

The Sacandaga Reservoir is the greatest work of the Hudson River Regulating District Commission. The work retains a storage water reserve for release in times of drought so that the water power of and water used by industries and public utility companies, below the dam, may be maintained throughout the year. Other works of this character are contemplated in potential lake basins of the Adirondack region.

The area of the waters of the Sacandaga's great lake covers 42 square miles, which is just about equal to that of Lake George. The eastern part of the lake is comparatively narrow and it is

hemmed in by high, rugged mountains. This is an unusually picturesque area. A bridge spans the lake at Batchellerville. In its western and widest section, the lake covers the former Sacandaga Vlaie, a flat marshy tract. The lake here is about 6 miles wide, with rough Adirondack mountains on its southeastern shore and low hills surrounding it on all other sides. The waters are backed up, on the Sacandaga, beyond Hope Valley in Hamilton County.

The Sacandaga Reservoir will become one of the great vacation and recreational sections of the Adirondack region, probably during the summer, fall and winter seasons. Its growth along these lines will be due not only to its picturesque Adirondack setting but also to its nearness to population centers. The southern extremity of the Sacandaga Lake is 9 miles from Amsterdam over Route 30, which brings it only 40 miles from the center of Albany. Because of the difference in the configuration of the land more of the shores of the Sacandaga Reservoir Lake is available for cottages and camp sites than is the case with Lake George. Already there is considerable development in this regard. To the person who remembers the flat, wooded character of the Sacandaga Vlaie, the first sight of the broad waters of the great new lake is a truly remarkable sight. The name "Sacandaga Reservoir" was officially adopted as the name of the great lake in 1930.

The Upper Hudson, between Hadley and Fort Edward, is capable of extensive hydro-electric development. At present, about 250,000 horse-power is developed hydro-electrically in this area. However, it is authoritatively stated that plans have been made to increase the developments so that 500,000 horse-power can be developed in this area at Stewart Bridge, Hadley, Spier Falls, Sherman Island and other points.

At Hadley there is a 40-foot falls, where 185,000 horse-power can be developed. It is proposed to develop 95,000 horse-power at Stewart Bridge.

The Hudson River and its shores are very beautiful in the neighborhood of Luzerne and Hadley. Both places are small villages but they are not incorporated.

Corinth is about 3 miles south of Hadley. It is a village of Saratoga County with a 1930 population of 2,618, compared with 2,576 in 1920. Corinth is on the Delaware and Hudson Railroad

and U. S. Route 9K, which runs into U. S. Route 9 just south of Lake George village.

Mount McGregor is about 2 miles southeast of Corinth. On its summit stands the cottage where Gen. U. S. Grant died on July 23, 1885, reference to which is made in the previous chapter.

Spier Falls is about 5 miles east of Corinth and about 10 miles west of Glens Falls. Between these two places the course of the stream is generally winding but its general direction is east and west.

The waters of the Hudson are dammed at Spier Falls, and here 55,000 horse-power is developed hydro-electrically, with a potential development of 160,000 horse-power.

Below Sherman Island, a state dam has been built for the purpose of diverting the waters of the Hudson River to the summit level of the Champlain Canal of the New York State Barge Canal system.

There is a 70-foot fall in the Hudson River at Sherman Island, which is 9 miles above Glens Falls and 4 miles east of Spier Falls. At Sherman Island, a hydro-electric plant develops 40,000 horse-power.

From Spier Falls eastward, the Hudson runs between Luzerne Mountain and Palmertown Mountain, after which it emerges from the mountainous Adirondack country into the pastoral reaches of the Upper Hudson River country. As previously stated, the Hudson's course north of Glens Falls is considered as its Adirondack section, while its course from Glens Falls to the mouth of the Mohawk at Waterford is designated as its Upper Hudson region.

The course of the Hudson from its source at Mount Marcy to Glens Falls has been described in the manner in which the river flows, that is from north to south. Previous chapters have described the Hudson's shores from south to north, following, in a general way, the historical course of events. This is the order in which the description of the highways, and the towns and country which they traverse, will be given northward from Glens Falls to the northern limit of Essex County, the most northerly of the 16 Hudson River counties covered in this series of chapters describing the course of the Hudson, its shores, and U. S. Route 9 and its paralleling highways. The description ends at Keeseville,

near which place U. S. Route 9 and Route 22 join in their northward course.

U. S. Route 9 and Route 22 form the two great north-south routes in the northern Hudson River counties of Washington, Warren and Essex.

U. S. Route 9 runs north along the east shore of the Hudson River over the Albany Post Road between New York and Rensselaer, whence it crosses to the Hudson's west shore at Albany and continues northward to Glens Falls at a distance varying from 2 to 10 miles west of the river. From Glens Falls, it runs through the eastern edge of the Adirondacks northward to Plattsburg on Lake Champlain and thence to Rouses Point, a mile or two south of the Canadian border. The first half of the course of U. S. Route 9, between Glens Falls and Keeseville, lies in the Hudson River watershed.

Route 22 runs, from its junction with U. S. Route 1 in Bronx Borough, New York City, northward close to the eastern border of New York State to Whitehall and Ticonderoga, whence it runs close to the shore of Lake Champlain northward to a point several miles south of Keeseville on the Ausable River near Ausable Chasm.

It is 97 miles from Glens Falls to Keeseville over U. S. Route 9, and it is 104 miles from Hudson Falls (4 miles east of Glens Falls) to Keeseville over U. S. Route 4 and Route 22.

Lake George village is 9 miles north of Glens Falls. It is on U. S. Route 9 and is the capital of Warren County, which had a 1930 population of 34,171. Lake George had a 1930 population of 847. The village was incorporated in 1903. Its principal interests lie in its summer vacation business. Here are large hotels besides lesser ones, tourists' homes, etc. The village forms the northern terminus of a branch of the Delaware and Hudson Railroad running north from Glens Falls.

Lake George Village is at the head of Lake George, one of the most picturesque and impressive lakes in North America. Mountains rise steeply from the eastern shore, and these wooded heights, combined with the numerous islands of the lake, make a truly beautiful scene. Lake George is about 30 miles long and has an area of about 42 square miles. It is famous as a summer resort and annually attracts thousands of motor tourists. The

outlet of Lake George enters Lake Champlain at Fort Ticonderoga.

Just east of the Village of Lake George is the Lake George Battleground Park, consisting of 35 acres. Here the American Colonial militia, under Gen. William Johnson, defeated an invading French-Canadian-Indian army on September 8, 1755. Following the battle, Johnson had Fort William Henry erected here, which was captured, by a French-Canadian-Indian army under Montcalm, in 1757. Following the surrender, the drunken Indians massacred 1,500 of the 3,000 members of the garrison and noncombatants who were on the march to Fort Edward, 17 miles away. Considerable remains of the fort still exist at the park. Here is a public camp site with accommodations for 500 campers. A number of islands in the lake are owned by the State of New York and these are available for campers and picnickers.

On the way from Glens Falls to Lake George over U. S. Route 9, the motorist traverses the route of many military expeditions and historic sites, among which is the scene of the fight between advanced parties of Americans and the French and Canadians on the morning of September 8, 1755, just prior to the Battle of Lake George, which occupied the latter half of that day.

Many military expeditions have sailed over Lake George. One of these was the ill-fated army under General Abercrombie, which met a terrible defeat by the French at Fort Ticonderoga in 1758. During the Saratoga campaign of 1777, General Burgoyne used the islands at the head of Lake George as a storage place for his military and food supplies. The British successfully defended this base against American attack.

Route 47 runs along the west shore of Lake George to Hague, where Route 8 continues to Ticonderoga, about 35 miles northeast of Lake George Village. Route 47 gives fine outlooks upon Lake George in many parts of its course. It runs through Hillview, Bolton, Bolton Landing, Sabbath Day Point and Silver Bay to Hague. All of these are well known summering places.

Route 8 runs from Chestertown, on U. S. Route 9, in an east by north direction, passing Brant Lake, to Hague, and thence to Ticonderoga, a total distance of 28 miles.

We will now return to Hudson Falls and follow Route 22 northward to Ticonderoga, a total distance of 45 miles. From

there we will follow Route 22 northward to Keeseville, on U. S. Route 9. This is the historical sequence best followed in connection with U. S. Route 9, from Glens Falls to Lake George, and Routes 47 and 8, from there to Ticonderoga.

After the foregoing journeys, U. S. Route 9 will be resumed at Lake George Village and followed northward, through the extreme northeastern section of the Hudson River watershed, to Keeseville. That will end the description of the Hudson River, its shores and paralleling transportation lines—railroads, highways and waterways.

It is 20 miles from Hudson Falls to Whitehall over U. S. Route 4, which generally parallels the upper portion of the Champlain Canal and the Delaware and Hudson Railroad. The highway passes through Kingsbury, Fort Ann and Comstock to Whitehall, at the head of Lake Champlain.

The route from Whitehall to Hudson Falls was that followed by Burgoyne in his invasion of 1777, which ended in the great American victory at Saratoga and the surrender at Schuylerville.

From Fort Edward to Whitehall, the Champlain Canal follows Wood Creek, which formed a water transportation link, between the head of Lake Champlain and the Hudson River at Fort Edward, prior to the construction of the first Champlain Canal in 1823.

U. S. Route 4 from Whitehall to Hudson Falls was that followed by General St. Clair's American troops in their retreat from Fort Ticonderoga, which they evacuated on July 5, 1777, after the fort had been invested by Burgoyne's advance force. Fort Ann, on this route, was burned by the Americans on their retreat on July 8, 1777. On that day, a British advance force defeated an American force at Fort Ann.

About 5 miles northwest of Fort Ann, a fierce battle occurred between a Colonial and British force and a French-Indian War party in 1759. It was here that Maj. Israel Putnam was taken a prisoner by Indians and was bound to a stake and about to be burned when he was rescued by a French officer.

Whitehall, at the head of Lake Champlain, is on the Delaware and Hudson Railroad, which runs north from here to Rouses Point, near the Canadian border. The village is on Route 22, which runs northward along Lake Champlain, and on U. S.

Route 4. Whitehall was known as Skenesboro in Revolutionary times. The village was incorporated in 1806. It had a 1930 population of 5,194.

Running north from Whitehall, Route 22 crosses the outlet of South Bay and runs northward, on the west side of Lake Champlain, to Ticonderoga, a distance of 25 miles. It passes through the small villages of Dresden, Putnam and Montcalm Landing. The highway parallels the Delaware and Hudson Railroad throughout this distance.

Fort Ticonderoga lies about one and one-half miles east of the village of Ticonderoga, which was incorporated in 1889 and which had a 1930 population of 3,680.

Fort Ticonderoga was considered one of the strongest posts of Colonial and Revolutionary War days, as it commanded the entrance to the upper portion of Lake Champlain and to the portage route to Lake George. It figured in three great events in two wars. The first was its successful defense by the French against attack by a British-Colonial army under General Abercrombie in 1758. General Amherst occupied the fort in 1759. In 1775, Colonel Ethan Allen, with a party of Americans, took the fort from the British in a night surprise attack. On July 4, 1777, General Burgoyne's advance detachment invested the fort and on the following night the American garrison escaped to the Vermont shore and retreated to Skenesboro, now Whitehall, and thence to Fort Edward.

The fort has been largely restored and the restoration, together with the remaining ruins, forms one of the most interesting historical places in New York State. An interesting historical museum is here located.

The building of the New York State Historical Association, which was dedicated in 1926, is located in the village of Ticonderoga at the junction of Routes 8 and 22.

Crown Point is about nine miles north of Ticonderoga on the shore of Lake Champlain, on Route 22 and the Delaware and Hudson Railroad. Here is the Crown Point State Reservation of about fifty acres which includes the ruins of Fort Crown Point, Fort St. Frederick and the Champlain memorial. The French evacuated Crown Point when General Amherst approached with a British-Colonial army in 1759. About August 12, 1760, Gen-

eral Haviland left Crown Point with a force of British regulars, American militia and Indians totaling about 3,400 men. They joined General Amherst's army of 10,000 in front of Montreal, which was surrendered by the French on September 8, 1760. The surrender of French Canada to Amherst followed.

In 1609, Champlain with two Frenchmen and a party of Canadian Indians landed on the western shore of Lake Champlain near Crown Point. There they defeated a band of Mohawk warriors who were terrified when Champlain fired his gun and killed two warriors. This encounter made the Mohawks enemies forever of the French in Canada and it had a vital effect on the seventy years of conflict between the English Colonies and New France. Indeed, the Mohawks were vital factors in making North America an English speaking continent.

For centuries before this historic and epochal encounter, just as in the succeeding centuries, Lake Champlain has been a waterway of the nations—both red and white. Many military and naval expeditions have passed over its waters and it has figured prominently as an artery of transportation in times of peace.

About three miles north of Crown Point, a short side road, Route 347, leads northeast for about three miles to the Champlain Bridge which here crosses the narrow waters of the Lake to Chimney Point on the Vermont shore. It connects with Vergennes, Vermont, on U. S. Route 7, about sixteen miles northeast of the bridge.

Northward from the Champlain Bridge, Route 22 runs through Port Henry, Westport, Wadhams (where it crosses the Bouquet River), Whallonsburg, Bouquet, Essex, Willsboro to U. S. Route 9 about three miles south of Keeseville.

Port Henry was incorporated as a village in 1869. It had a 1930 population of 2,038.

Westport was incorporated as a village in 1907. It had a 1930 population of 790.

The distance, from the Champlain Bridge to U. S. Route 9, near Keeseville, is forty-four miles. Port Henry and Westport are the only incorporated villages in this section of highway.

We will now return to U. S. Route 9 and traverse that great highway from Lake George Village northward to Keeseville, a distance of ninety-one miles. About fifty miles of the lower half

of this route runs along the Hudson or its tributary, the Schroon River.

U. S. Route 9 crosses the Schroon River at Warrensburg. The highway runs northward about ten miles to Chestertown, a small old-fashioned village. From there, Route 8 runs northeast to Ticonderoga. U. S. Route 9 turns west and runs about four miles to Riverside. There it turns north and runs past Loon Lake to Pottersville at the head of Schroon Lake, which is one of the chief water sources of the Upper Hudson. It is about nine miles long and is picturesquely located amidst high Adirondack summits. Schroon Lake is a popular summer resort. The village of Schroon Lake, with several hundred people, is located at the foot of the lake. Going north, the motorist crosses the county line, from Warren County into Essex County, about three miles north of Pottersville.

From Schroon Lake, U. S. Route 9 runs along the Schroon River northward nearly to Underwood. The Schroon River rises about five miles east of that point.

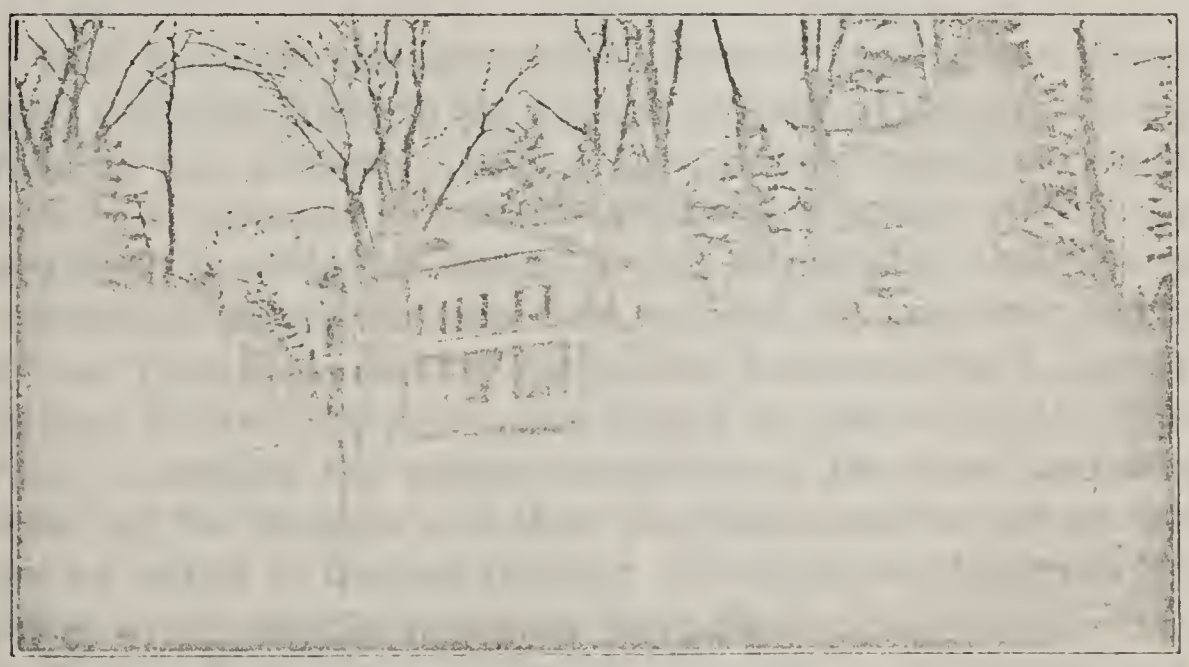
From Underwood, U. S. Route 9 runs northeastward, along the Bouquet River and through New Russia to Elizabethtown. The village was incorporated in 1875. It had a 1930 population of 636. Elizabethtown is the capital of Essex County, which had a 1930 population of 33,931.

It is twenty-three miles from Elizabethtown to Keeseville on the Ausable River, which divides Essex from Clinton County. Keeseville is only a short distance from the Ausable Chasm, one of the scenic wonders of the Adirondacks, which is reached by U. S. Route 9. From Keeseville, it is sixteen miles northward to Plattsburg.

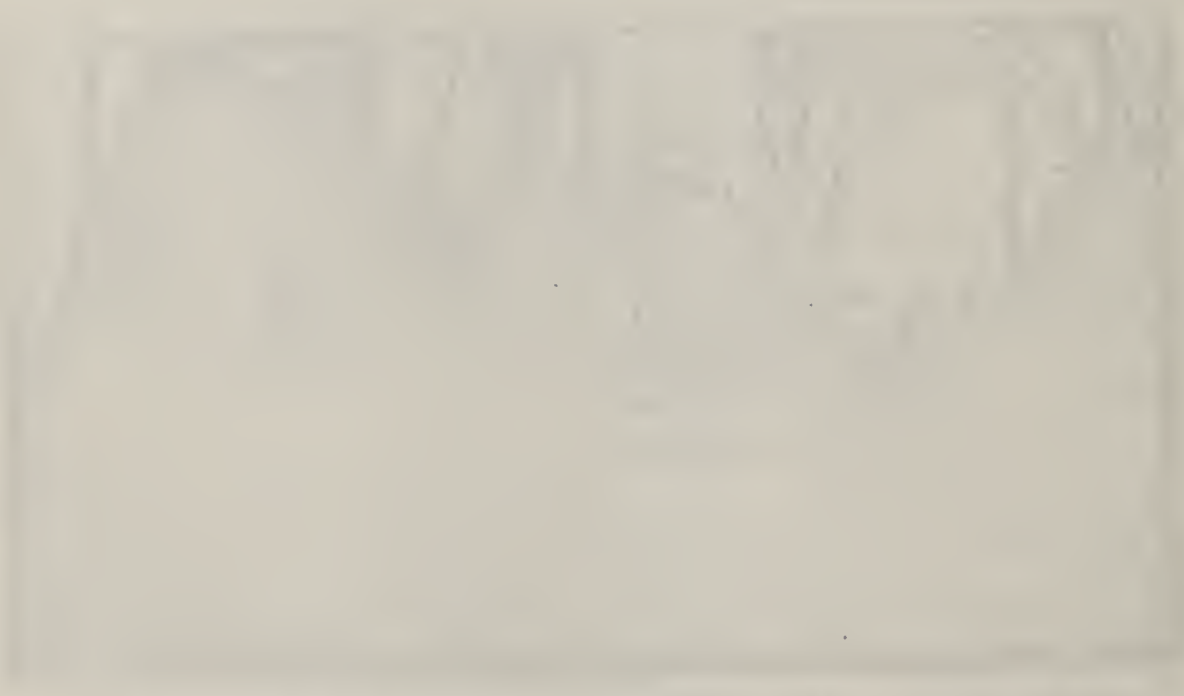
In this chapter, the reader has traversed U. S. Route 9 northward, from Glens Falls to the Ausable Chasm, and U. S. Route 4 and Route 22 northward, from Hudson Falls nearly to Keeseville. In the previous chapter, the reader covered U. S. Route 4 and Route 32, over the Hudson River Road, from Waterford to Hudson Falls and U. S. Route 9, from Albany to Glens Falls. Thus, in these two chapters, the reader has covered about two-thirds of the eastern side of the Hudson-Champlain, St. Lawrence-Lake Ontario, Oswego-Mohawk historical triangle. The reading of all the foregoing chapters, covering the Hudson River's shores and

its parelleling highways, will give the reader greater insight into and interest in the historical chapters which follow.

As Essex County ends at the Ausable River, and as the description has been brought up to that point, this closes the description of the Hudson River in its course through or along the sixteen Hudson River counties.



A HUDSON VALLEY ESTATE FRONTING U. S. ROUTE 9



CHAPTER 10.

INDIANS OF THE HUDSON RIVER, 1609.

THE RIVER INDIANS, ALGONQUIN TRIBES; MOHICANS AND MINCEES —SUB TRIBES; MANHATTANS, SANHIKANS, TAPPANS, WECK-QUASGEEKS, SINT-SINGS, PACHAMIS, WAORANACKS, WAPPINGERS, WARONAWANKONGS, MINNISINCKS, NANTICOKES, MINCEES, MOHICANS, HORIKONS—MOHAWKS OR CANIENGAS, OVERLORDS OF THE HUDSON RIVER INDIANS—THE FIVE NATIONS OF IROQUOIS; MOHAWKS, ONEIDAS, ONONDAGAS, CAYUGAS, SENECAS.

Man had been resident on the shores of the Hudson River for many centuries prior to the voyage of Henry Hudson in the *Half Moon* up that stream in 1609. The extent of man's period of occupancy is unknown to historians although certain evidences may eventually provide the means for an estimate of the time when members of the human race first entered the area now embraced in New York State and the region now known as the Valley of the Hudson River. As previously stated in this work, the Hudson Valley embraces the entire watershed of the river and it comprises all the streams and their drainage sections, whose waters find an outlet to the sea through the mouth of the great watercourse which empties into New York Bay.

Taking these geographical factors into consideration, all the Indians, who were resident in the Hudson River watershed at the time of Hudson's voyage in 1609, are properly considered in this chapter. This will include the Mohawks and Oneidas, tribes of the Iroquois Confederacy or Five Nations, which were then located in the Valley of the Mohawk River, chief tributary of the Hudson. Of all the Indian tribes of North America, none has been of greater historical importance and influence than the Mohawks and they are properly considered in this work, although its chief descriptive and narrative features are confined to the region bordering the main stream of the Hudson.

The Mohawks were of Iroquoian stock and they dominated the weaker Algonquin tribes throughout the course of the Hudson. History has recognized the Mohawks as one of the chief factors in the making of America. This aggressive warrior tribe was small in numbers but its influence on our history was out of all proportion to its size.

The Mohawks held back the valiant fighters of New France until the Dutch and British populations, to the south of the Mohawk River grew to proportions which made it finally possible for the British Colonial empire to dominate North America. The mastery of the continent, north of the Rio Grande, by the English speaking peoples of the United States and of the Dominion of Canada, followed in the course of the century following the Revolution.

When Cartier went up the Saint Lawrence River in 1534, he found the Mohawks living in their great capital of Hoch-le-ga, on the site of the present city of Montreal, the metropolis of Canada. The word "Canada" is of Mohawk origin and it means "the place of the village," referring to the town of the Ca-ni-en-gas, or "Flint People," which was the name the Mohawks applied to themselves. The word and title "Mohawks" was a name given the Caniengas by their enemies—the Mohicans and other Algonquin tribes with whom the Dutch pioneers first came in contact. These enemies of the Mohawk River Iroquois called them Ma-ho-waugs, meaning "Man-eaters" or cannibals. The Algonguins united in an attack on the Mohawks and drove them from the site of present Montreal. Following this great tribal disaster, the Caniengas fled to Northern Vermont, where they gradually recovered from their conflict with their Algonquin enemies. About 1580, they removed from Vermont to the central section of the Mohawk valley where they built four strongly fortified towns at Otstungo and Garoga, near present Fort Plain, and at Briggs Run and Cayadutta, near present Fonda—both places on the Mohawk River.

Shortly after the Mohawk Indians went to the Mohawk River, a confederation of Iroquois Indians was formed consisting of the Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagas, Cayugas and Senecas, then residing along present New York State Route 5, between the junction of the Mohawk and the Schoharie rivers and the Genesee

River. Because of the residence of the Five Nations along this great Indian road, Route 5 has been frequently and appropriately called the Iroquois Trial. After the Tuscaroras were driven out of the Carolinas in 1711, they sought refuge with their blood relatives of the Five Nations. After their affiliation with the Iroquois League, it was popularly called the Six Nations. The Iroquois League was formed on the initiative of Dekanawida and Hiawatha, Mohawk chieftains.

The history of the Mohawk Indians, during their two centuries of residence along the river which bears their name, is given in much detail in the author's "History of the Mohawk Valley, Gateway to the West," which was published by the S. J. Clarke Publishing Company in 1925. The reader is referred to that work for a more complete account of this remarkable tribe of red men who actually shaped the course of American history for over a century following Hudson's voyage of 1609.

The name which the Mohawks applied to themselves was Ca-ni-en-ga, meaning "Flint People." The Iroquois of the Five Nations called themselves Ko-no-shi-o-ni, meaning "Cabin Builders." They constructed square or rectangular cabins built of saplings and bark. Some of these "long houses" were 300 feet or more in length. The Algonquins built wigwams or round huts or cabins. The Iroquois constructed square or rectangular stockades or palisades. Those which the Algonquins erected were round in shape. The Iroquois referred to their league or confederacy as "the Long House." The Mohawks guarded the eastern gate while the Senecas were the western gate keepers. The Onondagas kept the council fire burning in the center.

The Mohawks lived within a very circumscribed area in their 200 years of residence in the Mohawk Valley. They had "castles" or stockaded villages at present Fort Hunter, Tribes Hill, Auriesville, Fonda, one mile west of Fonda, near Yosts, Randall, Sprakers, three villages near Canajoharie, three villages at Fort Plain, two near Nelliston, one at Ephratah, their largest town—Tenotoge—two miles west of Fort Plain, and at Indian Castle. Besides these village locations, the Mohawks had fishing and hunting villages and outposts. They had a fishing village at the mouth of the Normanskill, at the southern limits of Albany and a defensive post at the mouth of the Mohawk River. The Mohawks

enter so much into the story of the Hudson River country that the foregoing information relative to the tribe is here perfectly in order.

Whence came the Indians who occupied New York State and the Hudson River country at the time of Henry Hudson's voyage in 1609? Arthur C. Parker has given us an answer in his "Iroquois Migration Hypothesis," which is comprised in his "Archeological History of New York." Mr. Parker, who is a member of the Seneca tribe of the New York Iroquois, is noted for his research work and writings relative to the Konoshioni, or the Indians of the Five Nations. Mr. Parker was the State Archeologist at the time of the creation of the truly wonderful Iroquoian groups in the New York State Museum in the Education Building at Albany. These groups were modeled and constructed under his personal supervision and their excellence is largely due to the remarkable fund of knowledge regarding his Iroquoian ancestors. The following, regarding the Indian migrations into New York State, is taken from the author's "History of the Mohawk Valley, Gateway to the West," and its statements are largely derived from the previously mentioned work by Mr. Parker:

"The leading authorities on the North American Indians do not ascribe any great antiquity to the red man's coming into the vast area of our continent east of the Rocky Mountains. It is probable that the Eskimo people, who have left remains in our state—in the Hudson River watershed and its Valley of the Mohawk—greatly antedated the arrival of the Indians and this Eskimo type may have been here some thousands of years before the coming of the Indians. It is reasonable to suppose that the ancestors of the Eskimo came southward with the southward advance of the North Polar icecap and then, in turn, gradually went northward with the recession of the continental glacier. The glacial ice sheet was so extensive that it must have prohibited the existence of life of any extent upon its surface and the Eskimo would naturally have lived along its southern borders.

"At some time in the course of the Glacial Period, Asiatic peoples of Turanian stock, crossed the then icebound Behring Strait, from Siberia to Alaska, and began their southward march in the course of which they or their descendants populated great

areas of North and South America. These Turanians followed the Pacific Coast, in their southward march, and the Pacific Coast of North America, Central and South America were probably the homes of large Indian populations before adventurous red men crossed the Rockies and began the long march to the Atlantic Coast. Thus, the settlement, of North America by the Indians, followed routes exactly opposite in direction from those by which the European pioneers entered upon the lands of this continent."

In his "Archæological History of New York," Arthur C. Parker (himself a member of the Seneca nation) gives the successive Indian occupations of New York State as those of the Eskimo, Algonquins, Mound Building Indians, Iroquois. Says Parker: "The Algonquin occupation of New York stretches back into comparatively remote times. There must have been wave after wave of these peoples, coming in band after band, to hunt over the territory or to make settlements. Very likely the inviting regions south of Lake Erie and Lake Ontario-St. Lawrence basins were as much occupied by the Algonquin tribes as was New England at the time of the discovery."

Mr. Parker divides the Algonquin occupation of New York State into three periods, in the very first of which the Algonquins seem to have been somewhat associated with the Eskimo people and, in the latest period, when they covered a great part of the State.

The mound building Indians evidently came from the west into Western New York by way of the north and south shores of Lake Erie and through the Allegheny Valley, probably pushing some of the Algonquin tribes out of their homes. Their long period of location probably covered part of that of Algonquin occupation but they had all disappeared or had been absorbed by other tribes before the Iroquoian invasion which probably did not occur prior to the year 1300. The Iroquois came into New York State by a route north of the Ohio River and, it is said, that their general tribal line of march can be traced by the remains of their square stockades as distinguished from the round stockades of the Algonquins. The Iroquois of the Five Nations probably originally consisted of one tribe which split up eventually into five tribes or "nations." The Mohawks called them-

selves the "elder brothers" and professed to be the original tribal source of the Five Nations of New York State Iroquois.

The Mohawks have an important place in the history of the Hudson River, as they dominated the Albany and the Schenectady areas at the time of the settlement of present Albany in 1614. Furthermore, they claimed suzerainty over the whole Hudson River region from its mouth at present New York City to and beyond present Glens Falls. The Mohawks also dominated the eastern 100 miles of the great Indian trade routes, now known as New York State Routes 5 and 5S. The Dutch located at present Albany as it was at the center of converging Indian trails, chief of which was that which led through the Mohawk Valley westward to the Great Lakes. This was then, as now, both a great land and water route. The other Indian trails from Albany ran southward along both shores of the Hudson River to present New York and Jersey City, following present U. S. Routes 9 and 9W, and northward on the west shore of the Hudson River to present Saratoga Springs, Glens Falls and Hudson Falls, following U. S. Routes 9 and 4. From Glens Falls, Route 9 ran north to Canada. This was the Great War Trail of Indian days. Eastward from present Albany, the chief trails were present U. S. Route 20 and New York State Route 7 continued by Massachusetts Route 2. U. S. Route 20 is the Albany Post Road. N. Y. Route 7 and Massachusetts Route 2 is called the Mohawk Trail. However it is only one of the many main trails used by the Mohawks. Besides the foregoing Indian roads, main trails led east or west from present Schuylerville, Mechanicville, Waterford, Cohoes, Troy, Hudson, Catskill, Kingston, Rhinecliff, Poughkeepsie, Highland, Newburgh, Beacon, Peekskill, Tarrytown, Nyack, Dobbs Ferry, Sneden's Landing, Yonkers and Alpine. These main Indian trails were later developed into rough wagon roads with gradual improvement and most of them are now National or State automobile highways of concrete or macadam.

Most of the Indians whom Hudson met on his epochal voyage in 1609 were of Algonquin stock. The exceptions were probably some Mohawks who came to Albany when the *Half Moon* anchored there. The River Indians continued of Algonquin stock

until their final dispersal during or following the Revolutionary War.

The Dutch called the Mohawks Maquaas, but their present name was given them by the English who were the first to give it its final form. The exact rendering of the Algonquin word Ma-ho-waug is said to be "They eat drive creatures."

The English used the word Canienga to represent the true tribal name of the Mohawks which was Ga-ne-ga-o-no.

The vital difference between the Algonquins and the Iroquois was in that the latter developed the idea of union and they thus made themselves the savage overlords of eastern North America.

John Romeyn Brodhead gives the location of the Hudson River Indians as follows in his "History of the State of New York:"

"The valley of the Cahohatatea or Mauritius River, at the time Hudson first ascended its waters, was inhabited chiefly by two aboriginal races of Algonquin lineage, afterward known among the English colonists by the generic names of Mohegans and Mincees. The Dutch generally called the Mohegans 'Mohicans' and the Mincees 'Sanhikans.' These two tribes were subdivided into numerous minor bands, each of which had a distinctive name. The tribes on the east side of the river were generally Mohegans; those on the west side, Mincees. They were hereditary enemies and, across the waters which formed a natural boundary between them, war parties frequently passed on expeditions of conquest and retribution. But, however much the tribes of the River Indians were at variance among themselves, they were sympathetic in their enmity against the powerful Iroquois, or the Five Confederated Nations, whose hunting grounds extended over the magnificent regions, as yet unexplored by the Dutch, westward and northward from Fort Nassau.

"Long Island, or Se-wan-hack-y, was occupied by the savage tribe of Metowacks, which was subdivided into various clans, each having a separate appellation, and whose lodges extended from 'the Visscher's Hook,' or Montauk Point, to Ih-pe-ton-ga, or 'the high sandy banks,' now known as Brooklyn Heights.

"Staten Island, on the opposite side of the bay, was inhabited by the Monatons, who named it Monacknong or Eghqaous.

"Inland (in New Jersey) to the west, lived the Raritans and the Hackinsacks, while the regions in the vicinity of the well-known Highlands, south of Sandy Hook, were inhabited by a band or sub-tribe called the Nevesincks or Navisinks, whose name denotes their intermediate position between the Atlantic and Raritan Bay. To the west and south, covering the center of New Jersey, were the Aquawachukes and the Stankekans; while the valley of the Delaware, northward from the Schuylkill, was inhabited by various tribes of the Lenape race, who were collectively known to the Dutch as the Minquas, and by their hereditary northern foes, the Iroquois, were named Ogehage.

"'The Island of the Manhattans was so called 'after the ancient name of the tribe of savages among whom the Dutch first settled themselves.' This tribe, which inhabited the eastern shore, was always 'very obstinate and unfriendly' toward the Hollanders.

"On the west side of the bay and of the river above Bergen Point, lived the Sanhikans, who were 'the deadly enemies of the Manhattans and a much better people.'

"North of Sanhikans, on the broad bay (Tappan Zee) between the Palisadoes and Verdrietig Hook (Hook Mountain) dwelt the tribe of Tappans, whose wigwams extended back from Nyack toward the hilly regions of Rockland and Orange counties.

* * *

"The eastern bank of the river north of Manhattan to the Nepera, or Saw Mill Creek (emptying into the Hudson at present Yonkers) was possessed by the tribe of Weck-quas-geeks. The region above, as far as Croton or Kitchawan, was inhabited by another band called the Sint-Sings, whose chief village was named Ossin-Sing, or the 'Place of Stones,' and the famous marble quarries now worked near Sing Sing (now Ossining) while they commemorate the name, vindicate the judgment of the Aboringines.

"The Highlands above were occupied by a band called the Pachami, beyond whom dwelt the Waoranacks. North of these and in what is now the county of Dutchess, lived the tribe of Wappingers, whose name is still preserved in that of the picturesque stream which empties into the river near New Hamburg. Their chief locality was the valley of the Fishkill or Mattewan Creek, the aboriginal name of which, according to the popular traditions of the country, signified 'good furs,' for which the

stream was anciently celebrated. But modern etymology more accurately deriving the term from 'metai,' a magician or medicine man, and 'wian,' a skin, it would seem that the neighboring Indians esteemed the peltries of the Fishkill as 'charmed' by the incantations of the aborginal enchanters who dwelt along its banks, and the beautiful scenery, in which these ancient priests of the wild men of the Highlands dwelt, is thus invested with new poetical associations.

"A few miles north of the Wahamanessing, or Wappingers Creek, was a sheltered inlet, at the mouth of the Fallkill, affording a safe harbor for canoes navigating the 'Long Reach,' between Pollepel's Island and Crom Elbow (an abrupt bend in the Hudson River between Poughkeepsie and Hyde Park). The aboriginal designation of this inlet was Apookeepsing, 'a place of shelter from storms,' and the memory of this once famous harbor, for the canoes of the river tribes, is perpetuated in the name of the flourishing city of Poughkeepsie.

"Still farther north, near Red Hook Landing, lived another clan of Wappingers. Here, tradition asserts, a great battle was fought between the River Indians and the Iroquois confederates and the bones of the slain were said to be yet visible when the Dutch first settled themselves on the spot. The wigwams of the Wappingers and their sub-tribes extended to the range of the Tachkanick or Taconic Mountains, which separate the valley of the North River from that of the Housatonic.

"On the west side of the river, northward from Verdrietig Hook and the Kumochenak or Haverstraw Bay, the tribes were remarkably mixed and subdivided. Parts of the present county of Rockland and nearly the whole county of Orange were inhabited by the Waronawankongs, whose hunting grounds extended along the Shawangunk mountain range. Farther north, and occupying the present counties of Ulster and Greene, were the Minqua clans of Minnisincks, Nanticokes, Mincees, and Delawares. These clans had pressed onward from the upper valley of the Delaware, which the Dutch expressively named 'the Land of Baca,' and, following the course of the Nevesinck River and the valley of the 'Great Esopus Creek,' had at length reached the tides of the North River. They were generally known among the Dutch as the Esopus Indians. The doubtful etymology of

this word is traced to 'Seepus'—a river—and the Esopus River, having long been celebrated as the aboriginal channel of communication with the upper waters of the Delaware it was probably called the Seepus, or 'river,' by way of eminence. The word was soon modified into Sopus or Esopus, in which form it has ever since been in use. At an early period, the Dutch are said to have erected a 'Ronduit' (redoubt) or small fort near the mouth of the creek, which, by the circumstance, obtained its present name, the 'Rondout.' Part of the adjoining region was afterward 'Wiltwyck' or Indian village, but the familiar term 'Esopus' continued in popular use long after the present legal designation of Kingston was adopted.

"The name of the Minnisinck tribe was derived from the island or 'Minnis,' in the upper waters of the Delaware, where the self-denying missionary Brainard afterward endured so many trials. Their wigwams, with those of the other clans of Esopus Indians, extended over the present counties of Ulster and Greene, along the banks of the river and through the valley of the Catskill to Coxsackie or Kuxakie. This place, in their dialect, signified 'the place of the cut banks,' where the current deflected against the western shore (of the Hudson River) had gradually worn away the land. * * *

"Above the Wappingers, on the east side of the river, the lodges of the Mohicans, or Mohegans, extended northward and eastward from Roelof Jansen's Kill, and occupied the whole area of the present counties of Columbia and Rensselaer. The ancient seat of their council fire was near Schodack and, opposite to the present city of Albany, they had early fortified a village against the dreaded attacks of their hereditary enemies, the Mohawks. Beyond the Mohicans, dwelt the tribe of Horikons, whose hunting grounds appear to have extended from the waters of the Connecticut, across the Green Mountains to the borders of that beautiful lake which might now well bear their sonorous name. * * *"

A paragraph has been deleted from the foregoing description of Hudson River Indians by Brodhead. In it, he located the Mohawks on the west side of the Hudson River at Castle Island in the southern part of present Albany. The Mohawks probably never had a fortified "castle" or town east of Schoharie Creek.

They had only a fishing village at the mouth of the Tawasentha, near Castle Island, which they temporarily occupied during the fishing season. However, the Mohawks exercised a powerful and close suzerainty over all the territory on the west bank of the Hudson River from the territory of the Esopus Indians northward to the Adirondacks.



OLD HOUSE AT STAATSBURG

CHAPTER 11.

1524-1609—PERIOD OF DISCOVERY.

1524. VERAZANNO'S VISIT TO NEW YORK BAY—1540. FRENCH TRADERS AT PRESENT ALBANY—DUTCH MARITIME DEVELOPMENT—FIRST EUROPEAN SETTLEMENTS ON THE ATLANTIC COAST: 1565, ST. AUGUSTINE, FLORIDA; 1607, JAMESTOWN, VIRGINIA; 1608, QUEBEC, CANADA; 1613, MANHATTAN BOROUGH, NEW YORK CITY; 1614, ALBANY, NEW YORK; 1620, PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS.

The first part of our story of the Hudson River naturally concerns the first visits of white men to its shores—a period which is generally designated by historians as that of "discovery." Henry Hudson made his famous voyage up the river, which bears his name, in 1609. However, it has long been admitted that the English sea captain in his Dutch boat, was not the first European to sail these waters.

Verazanno may have been the first navigator to visit New York Bay. He was one of the many Italian sea captains, of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, who first sighted lands of the North American continent while piloting ships westward across the Atlantic in search of gold or the passage to China and the Indies.

In 1524, Verazanno explored the Atlantic coast northward from the Carolinas. It is probable that he entered both New York Bay and Newport Harbor. Verazanno described his visit to New York Bay as follows:

"After proceeding one hundred leagues, we found a very pleasant situation among some steep hills, through which a very large river, deep at its mouth, forced its way to the sea. From the sea to the estuary of the river, any ship heavily laden might pass with the help of the tide, which rises eight feet. But, as we were riding at anchor in a good berth, we would not venture up in our vessel without a knowledge of the mouth. Therefore, we took the

boat and, entering the river, we found the country on its banks well peopled, the inhabitants not differing much from the others, being dressed out with the feathers of birds of various colors. They came toward us with evident delight, raising loud shouts of admiration and showing us where we could most securely land with our boat. We passed up this river about half a league when we found that it formed a most beautiful lake, three leagues in circuit, upon which they were rowing thirty or more of their small boats from one shore to the other, filled with multitudes who came to see us. All of a sudden, as is wont to happen to navigators, a violent contrary wind blew in from the sea and forced us to return to our ship, greatly regretting to leave this region, which seemed so commodius and delightful and which we supposed must also contain great riches, as the hills showed many indications of minerals."

The foregoing is a letter written by Verazanno to Francis I, under date of July 8, 1524. Verazanno made his voyage under commission of King Francis I of France. The navigator was captured on the coast of Spain and hanged as a pirate in the village of Picot in 1527.

From the brief description he gave of his visit to New York Bay, it is fair to suppose that Verazanno anchored his ship in the Lower Bay. The "river" which he penetrated was probably the Narrows and the "beautiful lake" may well answer for New York Bay. Evidently, Verazanno did not go into the Hudson River.

Plans of colonization of the North Atlantic coast were discussed in both England and France but no attempt at settlement was made for sixty years after Verazanno entered New York Bay.

In 1534, Jacques Cartier, a French mariner, entered the St. Lawrence River. His voyage is of much historic interest and importance for he then found the Mohawk Indians resident in their one great village of Hochlega, on the present site of Montreal.

That great historian, Francis Parkman, gives a noble word impression of the vast wilderness of eastern North America—the forest blanket which stretched unbroken from Hudson Bay to the Gulf of Mexico, prior to the European settlements.

Parkman tells of Cartier's visit to Mount Royal at present Montreal. He says that Cartier looked "East, west and south and saw the mantling forest over all, and the broad, blue ribbon of the river glistening amid a realm of verdure. Beyond, to the bounds of Mexico, stretched a leafy desert, and the vast hive of industry, the mighty battleground of later centuries, lay sunk in savage torpor, wrapped in illimitable woods."

French traders seem to have penetrated considerable areas of the present State of New York long before the Dutch or English arrived within its borders. Frenchmen are known to have located on Castle Island at present Albany in 1640. They built a trading post, the foundations of which were used by Captain Christiaensen when he built Fort Nassau there in 1614.

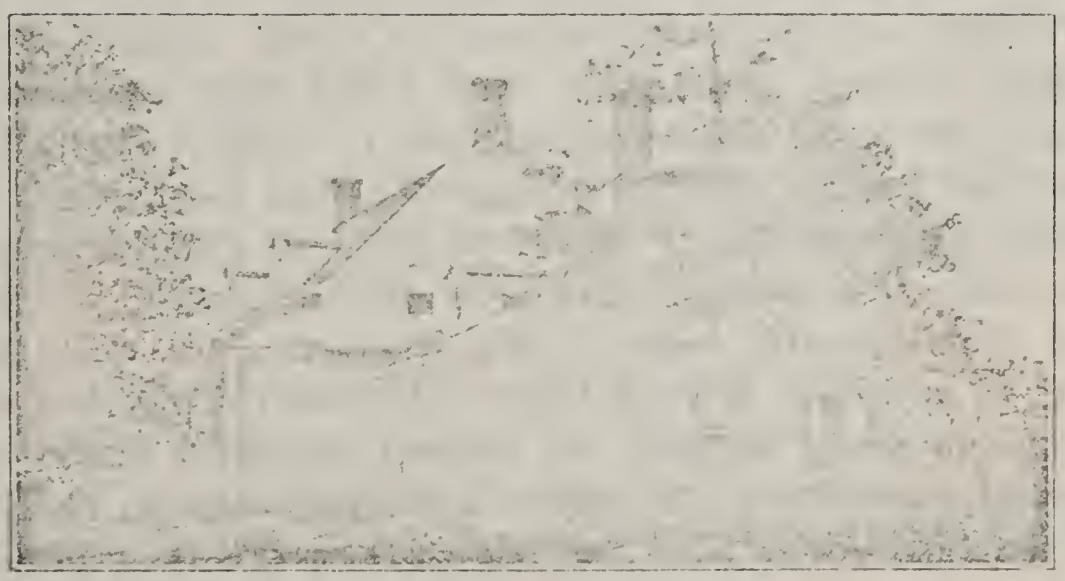
In the "Report and Advice," presented by the Chamber of Accounts of the West India Company on the 15th of December, 1644, it is stated that New Netherland, "stretching from the South River, situated in the latitude of thirty-eight and a half degrees, to Cape Malebarra, in the latitude of forty-one and a half degrees, was first visited by inhabitants of this country in the year 1598 and especially by those of the Greenland Company, but without fixed habitations and only as a refuge in the winter."

From this statement, it would appear that Dutch mariners and traders had visited the Hudson River and New York Bay prior to Hudson's voyage in the *Half Moon* in 1609. The seas were crowded with fishermen, discoverers, adventurers and pirates in the Sixteenth Century and it is possible that New York Bay and the Hudson River may have been visited by white men whose voyages have not been recorded. Indeed, it is unwise to presume that all of man's main exploits have been placed in the pages of history. Some, doubtless, have been forgotten or have escaped record.

England was the first country to plant a permanent colony within the limits of the Thirteen Original States. The English founded Jamestown in Virginia on May 13, 1607. Champlain founded Quebec on July 3, 1608, and the French were thus the second people to form a permanent settlement in Northeastern North America, which is the region of which our Hudson River valley forms the vital part both from a historical and geographical point of view. The settlements of the Dutch at present New

York in 1613 and their location at present Albany in 1614, complete the historical picture of the three nations which have had the most vital parts in the story of civilization in North America.

Of course, the oldest town on the Atlantic seaboard is Saint Augustine, Florida, where the Spaniards built a fort in 1565. However, it is true that this Spanish settlement had no influence upon or connection with the English, Dutch and French settlements, which were to dominate and direct the course of historical events for over 150 years after the first English settlement in Virginia in 1607.



A TYPICAL DUTCH FARMHOUSE OF ROCKLAND COUNTY

Like many others of this type the lower floor of the house is of brownstone. It is located at Blauvelt

CHAPTER 12.

1609. CHAMPLAIN'S ATTACK ON THE MOHAWKS.

AN EPOCHAL EVENT IN THE HISTORY OF NORTH AMERICA, WHICH MADE THE MOHAWKS, OR CANIENGAS FOREVER ENEMIES OF THE FRENCH—CONFLICT, PROBABLY OCCURRED NEAR CROWN POINT, LAKE CHAMPLAIN, JULY 30, 1609, A FEW MONTHS PRIOR TO HUDSON'S VOYAGE—CHAMPLAIN'S GUN CAUSES A PANIC AMONG MOHAWKS—THE BEGINNING OF 150 YEARS OF WARFARE—CHAMPLAIN NAMED LAKE AFTER HIMSELF.

Samuel De Champlain may justly be regarded as the founder of New France. He is also numbered among the comparatively few men who have had a truly vital effect upon the history of our Hudson Valley. Champlain's attack upon the Mohawks, upon the shore of Lake Champlain in 1609, shaped the course of American history for three centuries. It also started a conflict between the French and the Mohawks, together with other nations of the New York Iroquois which lasted intermittently for 150 years and which eventually ended French dominion in America when North America became an English speaking continent. The effect of this sequence of events was world-wide in its bearing—and it all started from the shot fired at the Mohawks by the founder of New France.

Champlain's attack on the Mohawks also forms one of the vital features of the history of the Mohawk-Hudson-Champlain-St. Lawrence-Lake Ontario historical triangle. The settlement of Quebec by the French in 1608, Hudson's voyage of 1609, Champlain's attacks on the Mohawks in 1609 and on the Oneidas in 1615, the settlement of New York in 1613 and of Albany in 1614—are all major events in the history of this triangle—events which have shaped the destinies of America.

The conflict, in which Champlain engaged with the Mohawks, took place outside the Valley of the Hudson, inasmuch as it happened to occur near Crown Point on the western shore of the lake

named after the intrepid French explorer. However, the history of Lake George, Ticonderoga and Crown Point is so closely bound with that of the Hudson River that it is given brief and condensed consideration throughout this work. The water route from the Upper Hudson led to the heads of both Lake George and Lake Champlain. From Lake George, a short carry existed between the foot of that lake and Lake Champlain at Ticonderoga. The waters mentioned and their forts enter closely in the story of the Hudson River, particularly with regard to the Upper Hudson.

Samuel De Champlain was born at Brouage, France, in 1567. He died on December 25, 1635. His family had been a seafaring one and he was educated as a navigator. Henry IV, King of France, commissioned Champlain Lieutenant-General of Canada in 1603, when he sailed for America to assist M. De Chastes, governor of Dieppe, in founding a colony in America. On this voyage, he ascended the St. Lawrence to Quebec and the boat's crew went to Montreal. Champlain bore a leading part in the founding of Port Royal in 1605.

In 1608, Champlain founded the City of Quebec on the site of the former Indian village of Stadacona. Quebec derives its name from the Indian "Kebec," meaning "the Narrows," referring to the narrowing channel of the St. Lawrence River at this point.

Champlain made friends with the Montagnais Indians about the new settlement. During the winter of 1608-1609, some Indians from Ottawa implored the French leader to help them in a raid against the dreaded Iroquois. They called Champlain "the Man with the Iron Breast," because of his metal armor.

In the spring of 1609, Champlain gathered a war party consisting of two Frenchmen and sixty Hurons and Algonquins of the Montagnais, so called because they lived in the mountains near Quebec. The raiders left Chambly, on July 2, 1609, in a fleet of twenty canoes, and started up Lake Champlain.

The Mohawks had been driven from their former great town of Hochelaga, on the site of present Montreal, by their Algonquin enemies. The Mohawks had lived for a time in Northern Vermont. About 1580, they journeyed to the Mohawk River and built palisaded towns in its central section.

After paddling up Lake Champlain for twenty-seven days, the French explorer and his party saw a band of 200 Mohawks on the western shore in the vicinity of Crown Point. This was on July 29, 1609. The battle did not take place until the following day and it differed radically from the conventional ideas of aboriginal Indian warfare.

On July 29th, the head chiefs of the two parties met and made arrangements for a battle to be held on the following day. On the 30th, Champlain and his followers landed near the Mohawk camp and the battle began. The Mohawks advanced in good order led by two chiefs who were distinguished by their large plumes. The Canadian Indians advanced toward their enemies. Suddenly their ranks parted in the center and Champlain moved forward with his arquebus. The Mohawks halted in astonishment at the unexpected sight of this armed and armored white man. Champlain fired and the shot killed two Mohawk chiefs and wounded a third. The terrific report, the smoke of the discharge and the sight of their three fallen chieftains decided the conflict and the Mohawks fled. A number of them were killed by the Canadian Indians who pursued them.

In this battle, the Mohawks carried both stone and iron axes and their chiefs were clad in arrow-proof armor. The iron axes were probably taken by the Mohawks from their enemies who had secured them in trade with the French.

Doubtless, Champlain was much pleased by what he considered an easy victory over the Mohawks, who were reputed to be the most savage warriors in North America. He would not have been pleased could he have foreseen the consequences of his victory.

The Mohawks sadly returned to their homes. The trail lay southward to Lake George, over its waters, to the Upper Hudson at Glens Falls and thence southward through the Hudson Valley, over present U. S. Route 9, to present Saratoga Springs, thence probably over present Route 50 to present Ballston Spa and from there over present Route 67 to present Amsterdam. From there, the defeated Caniengas went westward, probably over present Route 5, to their Mohawk Valley homes.

The panic flight of the Mohawk warriors rankled in their bosoms. They immediately began to plan revenge on the French

and their Indian allies. It was a costly victory for Champlain and New France. When the Dutch came to present Albany in 1614, the Mohawks eagerly made them friends and allies to help them in their struggle with the French and the Canadian Indians. The Dutch traders illicitly supplied the Mohawks with firearms to fight their enemies. With these Dutch guns, the Caniengas conquered nearly all the Indian tribes of Northeastern North America. They either subdued or exterminated them.

In 1610, Champlain and a party of Canadian Indians again defeated a band of 100 Iroquois. In this conflict, Champlain was wounded by an arrow.

In 1615, Champlain led a large war party of Hurons in an attack on the Oneida Castle, which was then located on Fenner Pond in present Madison County, New York State. This was attacked on October 10, 1615. The Oneidas repulsed all attempts to storm the stockade and Champlain was twice wounded by arrows. This Iroquois victory had a great effect in raising the morale of the Five Nations in their conflict with the French and Indians of New France.

Concerning the battle near Crown Point, Champlain wrote: "The place, where this battle was fought, is in 43 degrees, some minutes latitude, and I named it Lake Champlain."

CHAPTER 13.

1609. HUDSONS VOYAGE IN THE HALF MOON—THE RIVER EXPLORED FROM NEW YORK BAY TO STILLWATER.

The Hudson Valley is more concerned with the history of the Netherlands than with that of any other country.

In 1609, the land which we, as Americans, generally call Holland, had created a powerful republic as a result of the Confederation of Utrecht. The Northern Provinces of the Netherlands had a population of only two millions and yet these Lowlands—Netherlands—were destined to play a great part, not only in the making of America but in shaping the destinies of the entire world.

With the advent of the age of discovery, the Dutch early showed their seamanship, sea fighting abilities and aggressive maritime commercialism. The sons of hardy fishermen were sure to make good sea captains and soon Dutch ships were seen on all the seas.

In his "History of the State of New York," John Romeyn Brodhead writes:

"While Charles V was yet their sovereign, the Dutch appear to have become familiar with that part of the New World, which the Pontiff granted as a perpetual donation to the Kings of Spain. But the revolution, which followed the accession of Philip II, interrupted for a time the distant voyages of the insurgent Batavians. The same summer (1581) that the United Provinces declared their independence of Spain, Thomas Buts, an English captain who had five times visited the Spanish American islands, proposed to the States of Holland to conduct an expedition to the West Indies. But, though the projected adventure seems to have been viewed with favor, no results are recorded. All the while, commerce flourished at home and, in spite of edicts, the Dutch maintained the command of the nearer seas. One thousand new vessels were annually built in Holland. From the

Cape de Verde Islands to the White Sea, a profitable coasting trade was carried on; out of the Vlie alone, sailed nearly six hundred ships in one year to bring corn from the Baltic. Before long, William Usselincx, a native of Antwerp who had spent many years in Castile, Portugal and the Azores, suggested the advantage of an association for trading to the West Indies. The views of Usselincx were listened to with respect but his counsels were not immediately followed. Yet they were not without their effect. A few years afterward, Gerrit Bicker Peterszoon of Amsterdam, and Jan Corneliszoon Leyen of Enckhuysen, under the patronage of the States of Holland, organized separate companies for the West India trade. The enterprise was the forerunner of eventual success."

The Dutch, who were engaged largely in the carrying trade of Central and Northern Europe, soon extended their commercial maritime operations to more distant lands. Voyages were made to the far East and Dutch privateers soon won freedom of the seas for their brave Batavian sailors and also enriched their owners. The East India Company was organized in 1602. Usselincx, as previously mentioned, attempted to form a similar company to trade in the West Indies but negotiations between the Netherlands and Spain for a peace treaty prevented the consummation of his plans. The truce, which was finally made in 1609, suspended these negotiations for several years.

The maritime merchants of Europe were all interested in a short passage to China and the energies of their sea captains were spent in many a fruitless search for this passage, northwest or otherwise. That passage is now (1931) made by the Panama Canal.

In 1607, a London company sent Henry Hudson, an English mariner, to seek a northeast passage but he got no farther than Spitzbergen and, on another attempt in 1608, he turned back after reaching Nova Zembla.

The Amsterdam directors, of the East India Company, now called Hudson to that city, then the commercial center of Holland and one of Europe's chief cities. There Hudson explained, to the Dutch merchants, his theory of an open sea near the North Pole. The Amsterdam men took on Hudson in a hurry because they feared that he might have been engaged by Henry the Fourth of

France for a similar mission—to explore the northeast passage, which, of course, had no existence.

The Amsterdam company furnished Hudson with a ship of eighty tons burden—the famous *Half Moon*. It was equipped for the voyage and manned by a crew of Dutch and English sailors, with a Dutch mate serving under Hudson, who had full command of the expedition.

The *Half Moon* sailed from Amsterdam on April 4, 1609, bound for the Arctic Ocean to the north of Norway and Russia in quest of the non-existent northeast passage. The *Half Moon* had about the tonnage capacity of one of the earliest Erie Canal boats.

Hudson's little ship doubled the Cape of Norway on May 5, 1609, but found the sea so full of ice that the captain turned his vessel about and sailed for America. Hudson was a close friend of Captain John Smith, then with the English colonists at Jamestown, Virginia. Smith had sent Hudson maps, which indicated that he would find a passage to China opening from the sea to the north of the English colony. However, Hudson decided to try for such a sea route through Davis Straits and accordingly he set sail in that direction. Various circumstances induced him to change his course for Newfoundland.

After a stormy voyage, in which the *Half Moon* lost her foremast, Hudson arrived at the Newfoundland Banks, where his ship was becalmed for some time, during which his crew caught a plentiful supply of cod.

When the wind again freshened, Hudson sailed westward along the coast of present Nova Scotia and put in at Penobscot Bay, where his sailors set a new mast and mended the ship's rigging. Here the wanton conduct of the crew provoked the enmity of the Indians and, to avoid their revenge, Hudson hurriedly set sail southward. The *Half Moon* touched at Cape Cod and then sailed along the coast southward to Chesapeake Bay. Here Hudson again changed his course northward and ran into Delaware Bay. Continuing his northward course, Hudson sailed along the shore of present New Jersey and finally came in sight of the picturesque Navesink Highlands, the most imposing heights on the Atlantic coast of the United States, southward of Maine.

On the evening of September 3, 1609, the *Half Moon* anchored in Lower New York Bay. Here it remained for a week, during which time it was visited by many neighboring Indians. A boat's crew was sent from there through the Narrows to sound the waters to the northward. These sailors explored the Kill van Kull and Newark Bay. On its return trip, Indians attacked the boat and one of the English sailors was killed by an arrow.

On September 11, 1609, the *Half Moon* weighed anchor, sailed slowly through the Narrows and anchored in the Upper Bay. During the next day, twenty-eight dugouts, or great canoes, filled with Indians, visited the ship but Hudson, suspecting treachery, would not allow them on board.

On the afternoon of September 12, 1609, the *Half Moon* weighed anchor and sailed into the mouth of the Hudson River and some distance up its course. In his report, Hudson wrote: "It is as beautiful a land as the foot of man can tread upon and abounds in all kinds of timber."

On September 13, 1609, the *Half Moon* drifted with the tide up the river to a point above present Yonkers, where Hudson anchored his boat.

On September 14, 1609, the *Half Moon* sailed rapidly northward over the broad waters of the Tappan Zee favored by a strong southwest wind. The little ship moved over Haverstraw and Peekskill bays and entered the Highlands. In the late evening, Hudson moored his boat near West Point amid the most glorious scenery of the Highlands.

The dawn of the next day, September 15, 1609, found the river and mountains shrouded in mist, a condition characteristic of September days along the Lower Hudson. A typical Hudson River south wind sprang up and the day soon cleared. Hudson had taken two Indians on board at Sandy Hook and he held them as hostages. While the *Half Moon's* crew was weighing anchor and preparing to sail northward, these red men jumped overboard, swam to the shore and escaped. From the river's brink, they jeered at the sailors as the little ship moved up the stream. On this day, Hudson sailed the *Half Moon* sixty miles northward to a point near Catskill where he anchored for the night. Here he says he found "very loving people and very old men."

On the morning of September 16, 1609, many of these friendly Indians came on board and brought "ears of Indian corn and pumpkins and tobacco," which they traded with the crew for little or nothing. In the afternoon, the *Half Moon* sailed northward for six miles to a point opposite the present City of Hudson. Here the open channel of the river ended and Hudson's ship anchored near the marshes which divide the channel.

On September 17, 1609, the *Half Moon* navigated the difficult and shallow channel, among the river islands, to a point between Schodack and Castleton, about eighteen miles north of the present City of Hudson. Here the ship lay all day on September 18.

In the afternoon, Hudson went ashore with an old Indian chief and visited his house. The explorer describes this interesting incident as follows:

"I sailed to the shore, in one of their canoes with the chief of a tribe, consisting of forty men and seventeen women. These I saw there in a house well constructed of oak bark and circular in shape, so that it had the appearance of being built with an arched roof. It contained a great quantity of maize, or Indian corn, and beans of last year's growth, and there lay near the house, for the purpose of drying, enough to load three ships besides what was growing in the fields. On coming into the house, two mats were spread out to sit upon and some food was immediately served in well-made red wooden bowls. Two men were also dispatched at once with bows and arrows in quest of game, who soon brought in a pair of pigeons which they had shot. They likewise killed a fat dog and skinned it in great haste with shells which they had got out of the water. They supposed that I would remain with them for the night but I soon returned, after a short time, on board the ship. The land is the finest for cultivation that I ever in my life set foot upon and it also abounds in trees of every description. The natives are a very good people for, when they saw I would not remain, they supposed that I was afraid of their bows and, taking their arrows, they broke them in pieces and threw them into the fire."

On the morning of the following day, September 19, 1609, the *Half Moon* "ran higher up two leagues, two leagues above the shoals" and cast anchor in deep water in the river at the site of present Albany. Here the natives also showed a friendly dis-

position which was prophetic of the future amicable relations of the Dutch of Albany with the neighboring Mohawks and Algonquins. It is probable that Mohawk Indians visited the *Half Moon*, when she lay at Albany, as they long preserved a legend concerning the intoxication of the Indians by Hudson, which is mentioned later.

The Indians of the neighborhood came to the *Half Moon*, when she rode at anchor off Albany, "and brought grapes and pumpkins and beaver and otter skins," which Hudson and his crew bought for beads, knives and hatchets. The little ship lay near the site of the present State Capitol for two days while the ship's carpenter went ashore and made a new foreyard. It was during this time that Hudson and his mate made several of the Indian chieftains drunk with wine and brandy. His avowed object was to try to find out "whether they had any treachery in them." Just how this was to be ascertained by a process of intoxication, Hudson does not explain.

As an experienced navigator, Hudson realized that he had sailed up a river instead of into an ocean strait. The continuation of the tide to Albany had probably misled the mariner, but now it was evident that he could not be in the hoped-for northwest passage. The water of the river had become clear and its channel was narrowing. However, to satisfy himself, he sent his Dutch mate and a boat's crew to explore the river farther up. They went northward for eight or nine leagues. The ship's boat went past present Watervliet, Green Island, Troy, Cohoes and Waterford, at the mouth of the Mohawk. There is no record that the boat's crew of the *Half Moon* visited the falls of Cohoes, about a mile up the course of the Mohawk River, but it is reasonable to suppose that it did so. "Eight or nine leagues" means 24 or 27 geographical miles. If the boat's crew rowed that distance, on the Hudson above present Albany, they must have gone northward as far as Stillwater or the Saratoga Battlefield, the difference in distance depending upon whether they rowed eight or nine leagues. It would certainly have been remarkable had these Dutch and English sailors reached a "fartherest north," that would have brought the hardy mariners of the *Half Moon* abreast of the battlefield which was to eventually be the scene of the greatest conflict ever fought in the Western Hemisphere. Not

the greatest conflict in point of numbers engaged but the greatest in its eventual results.

The sailors of the *Half Moon* rowed far enough up the Hudson to find that the channel was not navigable for the *Half Moon* much farther north than the place where she was anchored near the present site of Albany. The ship's mate reported that they had found "but seven feet water and inconstant soundings" and that they had "found it to be at an end for shipping to go in."

Hudson's voyage up the river had taken eleven days. It was probably with keen regret that the English mariner turned the prow of his vessel southward. On September 22, 1609, the *Half Moon* left present Albany and began the voyage down stream. On September 23, 1609, the *Half Moon* ran aground on the "bank of ooze in the middle of the river" which lay opposite the present City of Hudson. Here the ship lay for two days, during which time it was visited by two canoes filled with the "loving people" of the Indian settlements at present Catskill.

On September 27, 1609, the *Half Moon* dropped down the river for 18 miles and anchored near present Red Hook. On September 28 and 29, 1609, the little ship moved slowly southward past present Poughkeepsie to present Newburgh and, on the evening of the 29th, it anchored near the Northern Gate of the Highlands.

On October 1, 1609, Hudson weighed anchor and his little ship sailed southward through the Highlands and anchored near Stony Point at noon.

Here some of the "people of the mountains" paddled to the yacht in their canoes. An Indian reached from his canoe into one of the cabin windows and attempted to steal some articles. The Dutch mate shot him dead. Following that bloody incident, the crew weighed anchor and sailed the ship southward to Teller's or Croton Point, where it anchored for the night.

On October 2, 1609, the *Half Moon* dropped down the river for 7 leagues, sailing over the wide reaches of the Tappan Zee and the river bordered by the upper section of the Palisades to the upper end of Manhattan Island at present Inwood. Here the Indians plainly showed that they were unfriendly and Hudson would not permit them to come aboard. Two canoes, filled with warriors, paddled close to the stern of the boat and fired a volley

of arrows aboard. The crew thereupon fired their muskets and killed several Indians. Fearing more trouble, Hudson ordered the anchor weighed and sailed his ship southward past Fort Washington Point, where a hundred hostile Indians had gathered. A shot from the ship killed two red men and the rest ran away. Another canoe filled with warriors was driven off. Then Hudson sailed his yacht down the river for two leagues and anchored off present Hoboken.

On October 4, 1609, the *Half Moon* sailed out of the mouth of the river which now bears the name of its captain. Hudson set sail for the open ocean. He had spent just one month in the lower and upper bays and in his voyage up and down "the River of the Mountains."

The crew of the *Half Moon* held a council, after the ship had sailed forth from the Narrows. The vessel was short of stores and the members of the crew were generally in an ugly frame of mind. At last an agreement was reached according to which they were to winter in Ireland. However, the eastward voyage finally terminated at Dartmouth in Devonshire, England.

When Hudson was preparing to sail with the *Half Moon* for Amsterdam in January, 1610, he was stopped by English officers who ordered him not to leave his native country. The news of his voyage to America, while sailing under the Dutch flag, had made the English authorities jealous of the advantage which the Netherlands had acquired by reason of Hudson's explorations. Because of this official interference, the *Half Moon* did not return to its owners at Amsterdam until July 15, 1610.

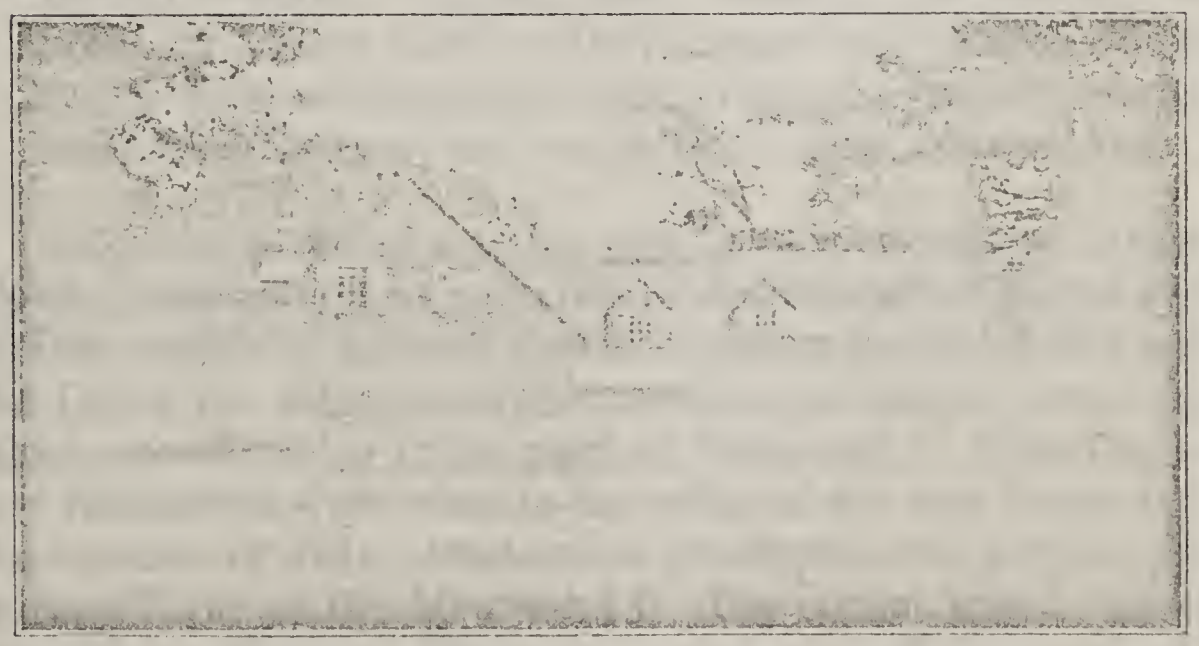
Hudson sailed from the Thames on his last voyage in the spring of 1610. His former London patrons put him in command of a ship, *The Discovery*, and sent him upon his last and fatal voyage in search of the non-existent northwest passage. The story of his death at the hands of his crew is too well known to require detailing here. His ship crossed the Atlantic, passed through Davis' Straits and entered upon the vast waters of Hudson Bay. The crew mutinied and, in the spring of 1611, the mutineers put Hudson, his son and seven others in a little boat and abandoned them to their tragic fate.

The *Half Moon* was wrecked on the Island of Mauritius in the month of March, 1612. A replica of the vessel, which was

used in the Hudson-Fulton celebration of 1909, now rests in the waters of the Hudson River at Riverside Park, Cohoes.

The actions of the Indians, in the several sections of the Hudson River which Hudson traversed, indicate certain probable conditions at that time. The red men, in and south of the Highlands, were generally unfriendly and hostile, which would indicate that they had had unpleasant experiences with white men who had previously visited New York Bay and the Lower Hudson River. The Indians, whom Hudson met north of the Highlands, were uniformly friendly, which gives evidence that they had previously had little intercourse with European sailors and traders.

Hudson's name is immortalized in the great river which he explored and in the great ice-bound bay in which he perished. His voyage in the *Half Moon* did much to bring about an early settlement and development of the Hudson River's shores by the Dutch people.



IN THE RESIDENTIAL SECTION OF NEW ROCHELLE

CHAPTER 14.

1609-1614 IN NEW NETHERLAND AND THE HUDSON RIVER REGION.

1610, AMSTERDAM MERCHANTS SEND TRADING SHIP TO HUDSON RIVER—DUTCH CALL THE RIVER MAURITIUS—1611, CAPTAINS CHRISTIAENSEN AND BLOCK VOYAGE TO HUDSON RIVER AND BRING TWO INDIANS BACK TO HOLLAND—1613, DUTCH SHIPS "FORTUNE," "TIGER," "LITTLE FOX" AND "NIGHTINGALE" TRADE IN HUDSON RIVER—CAPT. SAMUEL ARGALL, VIRGINIA BUCCANEER, DROPS ANCHOR AT MANHATTAN ISLAND; DECLARES ENGLISH SOVEREIGNTY—FOUR HOUSES AT MANHATTAN—BLOCK'S SHIP "TIGER" BURNS—CAPTAIN AND CREW SPEND WINTER OF 1613-1614 AT MANHATTAN, MARKING PERMANENT SETTLEMENT OF PRESENT NEW YORK CITY—BLOCK BUILDS NEW SHIP, THE "ONRUST" (RESTLESS), AND RETURNS TO HOLLAND IN 1614—NAME "MANHATTAN" APPLIED TO PRESENT NEW YORK CITY FROM 1609 TO 1647, WHEN STUYVESANT CHANGED IT TO NEW AMSTERDAM—1614, CHARTER GRANTED UNITED NETHERLANDS COMPANY TO TRADE IN NEW NETHERLAND.

As is often the case under similar circumstances, Hudson's glowing account of the great river of America which he had visited and the wealth of its lands did not arouse a general desire among the Dutch for the commercial development of the new country which seemed theirs by the right of "discovery." However, some few Hollanders were alive to the value of the new lands and, in the summer of 1610, Amsterdam merchants sent another vessel to the "River of the Mountains." The second vessel was commanded by Hudson's Dutch mate and part of the crew of the *Half Moon* manned the craft. The Dutch now began to call the newly discovered river the "Mauritius," in honor of Prince Maurice, Stadtholder of the United Dutch Provinces and son of William of Orange, the great leader of the Dutch people in their battle for freedom with Spain.

In 1611, Hendrick Christiaensen of Cleves, made a voyage to the West Indies. Christiaensen was the founder of Fort Nassau at present Albany, in 1614, and he was an experienced mariner whose great part in the exploration, early settlement and development of the Hudson River country has had little historical recognition.

On Christiaensen's return voyage from the West Indies, he found his vessel near the Mauritius, or the River of the Mountains—the Hudson. However, he did not enter the river at that time but returned to Holland and interested Adriaen Block in voyaging to the new found lands along the noble stream which Hudson had explored two years previously.

Christiaensen and Block together sailed to the Hudson River in 1611 and brought back two sons of an Indian chief. Their account of the new country and the curiosity aroused among the Dutch by the sight of the young Indians, did much to awaken popular interest in America. Merchants of Amsterdam now began preparations to trade with the Indians along the Mauritius River. Christiaensen is said to have been the first European to bring "domestic" animals to the shores of the Hudson. His ship owners provided him with goats and rabbits, which he turned loose on his arrival on Manhattan Island. These animals soon died from eating wild plants to which they were not accustomed.

Lambrecht Van Tweenhuysen, Paulus Pelgrom, and Hans Hongers were enterprising and progressive merchants of Amsterdam. In 1613, they engaged Christiaensen and Block to command two ships on a trading voyage to the Hudson. Christiaensen was captain of the *Fortune* and Block commanded the *Tiger*. In the same year, other merchants of Amsterdam sent out the *Little Fox*, under Capt. John DeWitt, and the *Nightingale*, under Capt. Thuys Volckertsen, to trade at Manhattan. Capt. Cornelis Jacobsen May commanded the *Fortune* of Hoorn, another ship, which sailed for the Hudson River in 1613. The trade of these ships was mainly or entirely in furs and Manhattan Island naturally became the shipping point for the whole Hudson River country in which the traders collected the peltries from the Indians.

Dutch traders seem to have soon become fairly numerous on Manhattan Island, and it is probable that many who have no

historical mention went there to take part in the very profitable fur trade. These earliest New York merchants sent out small boats to the shores of "Scheyichbi," or New Jersey, and up the Mauritius (Hudson) River to the location of Albany. The present Albany section was a favorite resort of the Indians, as the great Schenectady Trail, from the Mohawk Valley, there met the Hudson River.

In 1613, Samuel Argall, the Virginia buccaneer, dropped the anchor of his ship in New York Bay, following his attack on the French settlement at Port Royal (Annapolis, Nova Scotia) and the capture of the French Jesuit priests in their colony at Mount Desert, on the coast of present Maine. Capt. John Smith wrote that Argall found "on Manhattan Isle, four houses built and a pretended Dutch governor." This "Dutch governor" was Hendrick Christiaensen, the Dutch sea captain. The "houses" were probably of logs and were built to accommodate the fur traders during their stay on shore. A number of Dutchmen were trading at Manhattan at the time of Argall's visit. They are said to have had gardens and were living most comfortably on the end of Manhattan Island in the present Battery section. Argall denounced the Dutchmen for presuming to settle on "English territory" and compelled them to haul down the Dutch and raise the English flag. Argall sailed for Virginia soon after this incident and then the Hollanders pulled down the English standard and again flew the Dutch banner from their flagstaff.

The details regarding the visit of Argall are most important, as they concern the Island of Manhattan and the Hudson River as well as New Netherland. From the foregoing account, we can place the permanent settlement of present New York City and State, as well as the Hudson River region, as early as 1613. This is so because Block and his crew remained at Manhattan Island during the winter of 1613-1614 and the island was permanently occupied by the Dutch thereafter.

The name "Manhattan" was applied both to the settlement and the island from 1613 until 1647, when Director General Stuyvesant changed the name to New Amsterdam, with regard to the town. Today, this borough of Greater New York again proudly bears its ancient name of Manhattan—"the people living on the island."

Hendrick Christiaensen and Adriaen Block, hardy Dutch sea captains, may well be regarded as the founders of New York, the greatest city in the world.

Block's part in the beginnings of the metropolis is most interesting. In the fall of 1613, when he was preparing to return to Holland, his ship, the *Tiger*, was burned at Manhattan Island. The captain and his crew built log cabins on lower Beaver Street and prepared to spend the winter there. They also set to work to build another ship, which they completed in the spring of 1614. Block gave the first ship built along the Hudson the name of "Onrust," meaning "Restless," which is an appropriate name for a vessel built in what was to become the most rushing and restless city of all time. The *Onrust* was 44 feet long, 11 feet wide and of 16 tons burden—a mite of a ship.

Block collected another cargo of furs and sailed for Holland in the little *Onrust*, in the spring of 1614. It is said that the Indians of Manhattan Island provided Block and his fellow Dutchmen with food during their winter's stay.

In his "Empire State," Lossing says:

"That little collection of huts on the site of * * * Beaver Street and that little vessel, which was launched at the foot of Broadway, composed the fertile little seed of empire planted on Manhattan—the tiny beginning of the great commercial metropolis of the Western Hemisphere."

The Dutch seem to have palisaded their storehouses at the end of Manhattan, which was probably done as much to prevent thievery as to resist attacks of hostile Indians.

The profitable fur trade with the Indians of the Hudson River aroused the Dutch people from their languid attitude toward the land which Hudson had explored in 1609. In the spring of 1614, the United Provinces of the Netherlands petitioned the States General, the congress of Holland, to pass an ordinance securing, for a limited time, to the Dutch merchants, the monopoly of the fur trade with the Indians on the Mauritius (Hudson) River. Merchants of Amsterdam and Hoorn formed a company for trade along the Hudson River and in adjacent regions of New Netherland. They were the owners of the ships *Fortune*, Hendrick Christiaensen, captain; *Tiger*, Adriaen Block, master; *Nightingale* (*Nochegael*), Thuys Volckertsen, master; *Fortune*, Cornelis

Jacobsen May, master. All these ships and their mariners had been previously active in the Hudson River fur trade, of which the ship-owners now wished to secure a monopoly.

In August, 1614, the company mentioned sent a deputation to the Dutch court at The Hague to obtain a charter of special privileges promised them. Before an oval table in the Binnehoff, the chief representative of the merchants, Captain Christiaensen, spread before their High Mightinesses, the twelve members of the States General, a figurative map of the discoveries made by the Dutch sea captains in America. He gave details of the adventure of the navigators and traders and their expenses and losses. The leading representative, before whom Christiaensen pleaded, was John Olden Barneveldt, the Advocate of Holland. Barneveldt led the Republican party of Holland, while Prince Maurice headed the Orange party. As a result of the bitter political feud between these two leaders and their factions, Barneveldt was convicted of "treason," and beheaded in 1619. This was one of the many political murders which disgraced so-called European civilization during the seventeenth century.

The Dutch merchants obtained their charter on October 14, 1614, under the name of the United Netherlands Company. Their operations were to be confined to a territory between the fortieth and the forty-fifth parallels of north latitude—roughly between Cape May and Nova Scotia. In this charter, the name of New Netherland was given to the domain "between Virginia and New France." This region was comprised in the grant to the Plymouth Company, by the English Crown, and the consequent conflicting claims of the Dutch and the English to this territory eventually proved the ruin of the dominion of Holland in North America, which was comprised in the valleys of the Hudson and Connecticut rivers, Long Island, New Jersey and the State of Delaware. However, the Dutch continued as the rulers of most of this great region for a period of fifty years, during which time they effected the settlement of the Hudson Valley, western Long Island and northeastern New Jersey. Their settlements had a population of about 6,000 at the time of the English conquest in 1664. However, these Americans of Dutch birth or ancestry multiplied so rapidly that they continued to form the majority element of the Province of New York up to the time of the Revolution.

CHAPTER 15.

1614, FOUNDING OF FORT NASSAU AT PRESENT ALBANY—1617, TREATY OF TAWASENTHA.

1614, CAPT. HENDRICK CHRISTIAENSEN AND PARTY BUILD FORT NASSAU ON CASTLE ISLAND AT PRESENT ALBANY, SITE OF FRENCH TRADING STATION OF 1540—LOCATED ON ALBANY END OF GREAT SCHENECTADY TRAIL—FORT NASSAU A STONE STORE-HOUSE WITH STOCKADE—FURNISHED WITH CANNON AND A GARRISON OF TWELVE SOLDIERS—TRADING POST OF THE UNITED NEW NETHERLANDS COMPANY—BRISK INDIAN TRADE STARTED —CHRISTIAENSEN MURDERED BY AN INDIAN—THREE DUTCH TRADERS EXPLORE MOHAWK, SUSQUEHANNA AND DELAWARE RIVERS; CAPTURED BY INDIANS; RANSOMED BY CAPTAIN HENDRICKSEN IN 1616—JACOB ELKINS SUCCEEDS CHRISTIAENSEN AT FORT NASSAU—1617, FLOODS MENACE FORT NASSAU—ELKINS BUILDS NEW FORT NASSAU AT MOUTH OF TAWASENTHA —GREAT INDIAN COUNCIL AND TREATY WITH THE DUTCH AT TAWASENTHA; AN EVENT OF GREAT HISTORICAL IMPORTANCE; IMPORTANT ALLIANCE OF MOHAWKS AND OTHER IROQUOIS.

In 1614, Capt. Hendrick Christiaensen, with a few traders and trappers, sailed up the Hudson River and founded Fort Nassau, the beginning of the present City of Albany, capital of the State of New York. He left a few traders at Esopus (present Kingston) and later landed on Castle Island, now the port section of Albany. This "Kasteeul Eylandt" of the Dutch later became known as Van Rensselaer Island. It was here that French traders were located in 1540. They built a storehouse but heavy floods destroyed their post, after which the Frenchmen abandoned it.

On the ruins of the old French post, Christiaensen built a stone house which he surrounded with a stockade or palisade. He named it Fort Nassau. The strong stone storehouse was 26 by 36 feet and the surrounding log stockade was 58 feet square. A moat, 18 feet wide, surrounded the palisade. The fort was fur-

nished with cannon and garrisoned by a dozen Dutch soldiers. It was a force which could have been easily wiped out by the Indians, but the fort, with its cannon, probably seemed very formidable to the savages who visited it.

Fort Nassau, with its trading house, its traders, soldiers and occasional sailors, formed the nucleus of present Albany and of a constantly growing Dutch colonial area, which expanded from that original center. This Albany foundation is most important historically, as this Dutch population and colonization center was then, and for many decades, remotely situated as regards Manhattan, and, in the Dutch Colonial period, it had almost an independent existence as a separate colony, although it was contained within the boundaries of New Netherland, which was governed from the colonial capital of Manhattan, or later New Amsterdam. The difficulties which grew up between the authorities of Manhattan and the later "colonie" of Rensselaerwyck will be noted in following chapters.

The original location at Fort Nassau was made primarily to further trade in furs for the United New Netherlands Company. The settlement was made, at the Hudson end of the great Mohawk Trail, to get the peltries from the Indians near the source of greatest supply, at a point where there would be no competition in trade and where the goods could be loaded directly on the little ships which sailed to Holland from the head of tidewater on the Hudson. Both the posts at Manhattan and present Albany were in charge of Captain Christiaensen, who acted as the agent for the company.

The Netherlanders at Fort Nassau immediately started a brisk trade in furs with the surrounding Indians. A tragic end soon befell Christiaensen, as he was murdered by an Indian shortly after the settlement. He seems to have been an energetic mariner and explorer with a realization of the value and possibilities of the Hudson River country. For his very great work in the early development of this region, he merits the distinction of being one of the first of the notable men who have developed civilization along the Hudson River.

The Dutch traders at Fort Nassau were not content to merely accept the fur trade which came to them. They made early efforts to develop greater business by sending out traders through the

surrounding country. Shortly after the Dutch post was founded, at present Albany, in 1614, three traders were sent out to visit the adjacent Indian towns and induce the natives to bring their furs to Fort Nassau. This was also probably done to meet the competition of the French fur traders of Canada. It has been previously stated in this work that there may have been numerous voyages of mariners from Europe to America which never have been recorded and we can consistently presume that the coasts, bays and inlets of North America were visited many times by European sailors. Doubtless, many of these voyages were never recorded and our seaboard may have been "discovered" even before the recorded "discoveries." Similarly, the country on and adjacent to the Atlantic Coast may have been visited by traders and adventurers on many occasions which have no historical records. French traders operated in Canada prior to the settlement of Quebec in 1608 and that they did business with the natives in present New York State is shown by their presence at present Albany in 1540. The Hudson, Delaware, Mohawk, Champlain and Saint Lawrence valleys formed natural avenues for trade and transportation. The Indians used them and the white man naturally followed the Indians' trails.

Of the early exploration of New York State by the three Dutch pioneers of Fort Nassau, we fortunately have some record. From their descriptions of the country which they entered, a map maker made a map of their explorations. The unknown map maker made this note concerning his work:

"Of what Kleynties and his Comrade have Communicated to me, respecting the locality of the Rivers and the position of the tribes which they found in their Expedition from the Maquaas into the interior and along the New River downward to Ogehage (that is the enemies of the aforesaid northern tribes), I can not find anything at hand, except two rough drafts of Maps relating thereto, partly drawn with accuracy. And, in deliberately considering how I can best reconcile this one with the rough drafts communicated, I find that the places of the Sennecas, Gachoos, Capitanisses and Jottecas ought to be marked down considerably further west into the Country."

From the foregoing, we learn that one of the explorers of 1614 was named Kleynties but we have no record of the other two.

The party of three went westward, from present Albany to present Schenectady, and thence on or along the Mohawk River to a point at or near present Canajoharie. The towns of the Mohawk Indians were then located between the heights of the Noses of the Mohawk River and the present Fort Plain section. Their exact location, in 1614, is not known, but they were within the general area mentioned. They probably then, as later, consisted of three large villages, dominated by the clans of the Turtle, Bear and Wolf. These were the only clans of the Mohawks, although other Iroquois tribes had more. The Dutchmen probably visited all of these towns, as the Mohawks were the best customers of the Dutch at Fort Nassau.

At Canajoharie, the exploring traders took the trail to Otsego Lake, which was the one followed by General Clinton's American Army in 1779. Otsego Lake forms the chief headwater of the Susquehanna River and the traders went down that stream from the lake. From Wyoming, they crossed the mountains to the Delaware River. There they were made prisoners by the Indians, who mistook them for Frenchmen. They were ransomed by Captain Hendricksen, when that Dutch navigator visited the site of the present City of Philadelphia, in 1616, after the explorers had been captives of the Indians for two years. Hendricksen had sailed up the Delaware River on a voyage of exploration in the *Onrust*—the "Restless"—the great little ship which was built by Captain Block on Manhattan in 1613-1614, following the burning of his ship there in the fall of 1613. The *Onrust* was the boat in which Dutch mariners made their first explorations of the seacoast adjacent to New York City and the little craft deserves a place in history, both on that account and from the fact that it was the first boat built on the banks of the Hudson and at Manhattan. The Dutch explorers were brought back to Manhattan by Block in the *Onrust* and the results of their explorations became known two years after they had left Fort Nassau.

Another map of New Netherland was made, in 1614, as a result of other explorations by Dutch traders. It is probable that they were frequent visitors to the Mohawk Valley after 1614, as its eastern door at Schenectady lay only 17 miles northwest from Fort Nassau. The Dutchmen, who made a practice of going into the "bush" or woods, became known as "bosloopers" or "wood

runners." Similar men of the French settlements of Canada were called "couriers du bois," with the same meaning. Many of the sons of the early pioneers of Fort Nassau, and later Fort Orange, engaged in this daring commerce, particularly after trade was made free in 1642. From their wilderness life among the Indians, many of these young Dutch pioneers are said to have become more like the Indians than the Hollanders. Although historians, as a rule, do not recognize it, there seem to have been many admirable things about the life of the Indians—and many things far from admirable. However, the less attractive features of the Indian life were due to their stage of development and they were also characteristic of the life of our own ancestors only a few thousand years ago—or less.

After Capt. Hendrick Christiaensen was murdered at Fort Nassau in 1614, he was succeeded by Jacob Jacobsen Eelkens, or Elkins, as agent of the United Netherlands Company. Elkins continued to direct operations at Fort Nassau until he was deposed for the atrocious act of kidnapping an Indian chief while on a trip to the Connecticut Valley in 1622.

Floods and freshets made the position of Fort Nassau as untenable as the French post had been nearly 75 years previously. Accordingly, Elkins moved the location of the trading post. He abandoned the Castle Island site and removed several miles down the Hudson and built a new Fort Nassau at the mouth of the Tawasentha, or present Normanskill. This location is now at the southern limits of Albany. There the Mohawks had a fishing village and one of the trails, from the Mohawk and Schoharie valleys, came to the Hudson at that point. Elkins made this change of location in 1617.

The charter of the United New Netherlands Company expired on January 1, 1618, and the merchant directors were unable to secure a renewal of their monopoly. Trade along the Hudson then became open to all Hollanders for the ensuing three or four years. Elkins remained in charge of Fort Nassau until 1622, when he was deposed because of his atrocious conduct on a trading trip which has been previously mentioned. It is said that he conducted a profitable fur trade at the present Albany location with the aid of the Dutch ships which ascended the Hudson to Fort Nassau.

The celebrated treaty of Tawasentha took place in 1617. In that year, Elkins called a council of the neighboring Indian tribes. Chief of these were the Mohawks, Mohicans and Delawares. This was the famous council where "the chain of friendship" was first made between the Mohawks and the Dutch, a bond of alliance which the English inherited when they became masters of the Hudson Valley in 1664.

The Mohawks and the Iroquois were evidently anxious to ally themselves with the Dutch of Fort Nassau in order to secure a powerful aid in their warfare with the French and Indians of Canada. Champlain's attack, upon a war party of the Mohawks on the shores of Lake Champlain in 1609, had made that tribe of the Iroquois deadly enemies of the French on the Saint Lawrence River. They thirsted for an adequate revenge. At the time of the Tawasentha treaty, they may have hoped to eventually secure guns and ammunition from the Dutch traders, and this actually came to pass some years later. When the Mohawks finally secured firearms, they, with the other Iroquois, became masters of all the Indians of eastern North America and the most dreaded enemies of the French.

The Tawasentha council of 1618 was epochal in its character. The Indians, who are known to have been present, were chieftains of the Mohawk, Oneida, Onondaga, Cayuga, and Seneca tribes of the Iroquois Confederacy, and of the Mohican, Mincee, Minnisinck, and Lenni-Lenape tribes of Algonquin stock. Under the supervision of Elkins and his aids, a general peace and alliance was negotiated with all the solemn forms of Indian diplomacy. The general supremacy of the Five Nations of Iroquois was acknowledged by the other tribes, whose delegates were present. The Iroquois delegates were five chiefs, each representing his nation and each bearing a hereditary name which had distinguished the tribal representative who had originally taken part in forming this truly great confederacy.

Brodhead says: "The belt of peace was held fast at one end by the Iroquois and the other by the Dutch, while, in the middle, it rested on the shoulders of the subjugated Mohicans, Mincees and Lenni-Lenapes, as a nation of women. The calumet was smoked and the tomahawk was buried in the earth, over which the Dutch declared they would erect a church, so that none should

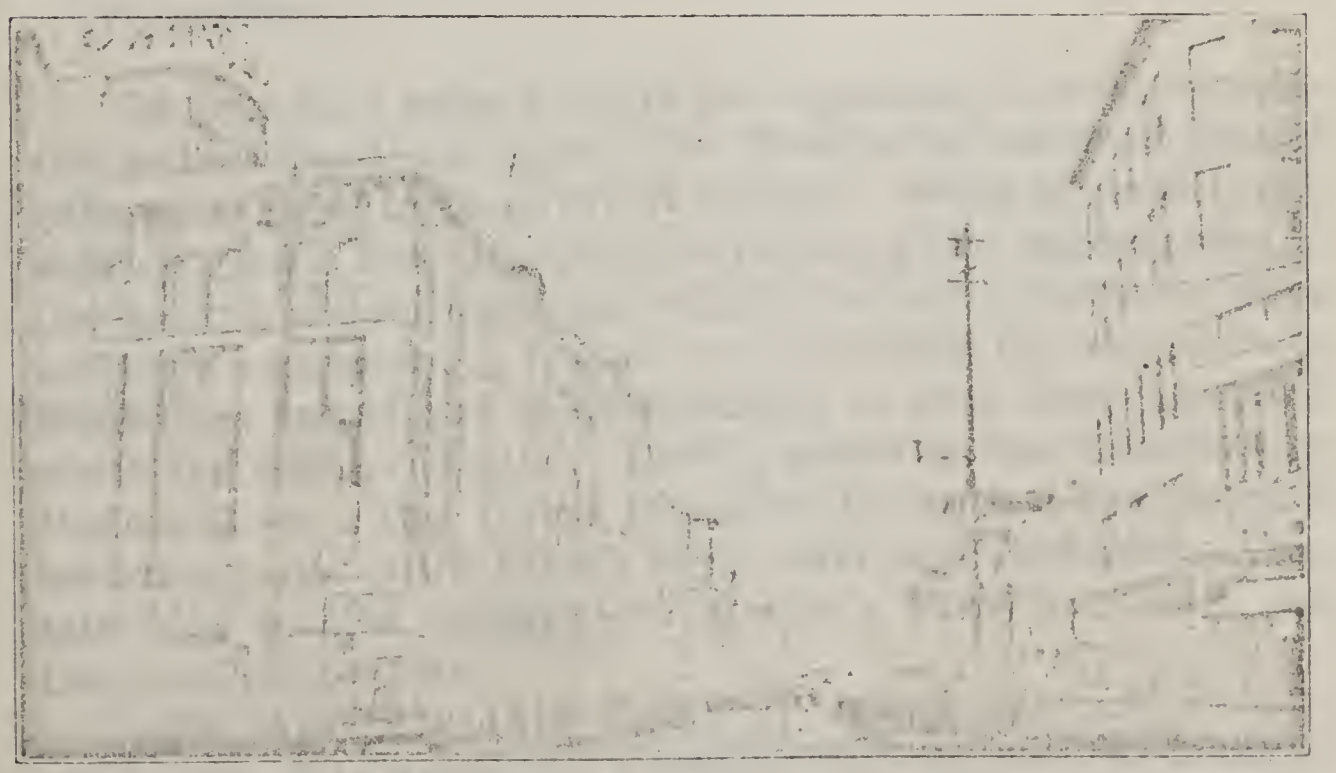
dig it up again without destroying the building and incurring their resentment."

The Dutch of New Netherland profited greatly by this treaty. This powerful alliance with the Iroquois of the Five Nations made their advanced post of Fort Nassau practically secure from attack by the Canadian Indians while, at the same time, it gave them preference over the French in trading for furs with these same powerful red men. A great part of the peltries, which formed the cargoes of the Dutch ships on their voyages from Manhattan to Holland, came to the Dutch traders at Fort Nassau over the Schenectady Trail, connecting the present Albany region with the Mohawk River at present Schenectady. The trail stretched far westward into the Iroquois country and the Mohawk River also had water connections with all the Five Nations. Therefore, Fort Nassau was strategically situated, as regards the Iroquois Confederacy, both from a military and a commercial point of view. Having, by this treaty, gained the friendship of the Iroquois tribes, the Dutch traders were able to penetrate fearlessly all parts of the country of the Five Nations and the Mohawks and other Iroquois had unusual liberty among the Hollanders of Fort Nassau. Although the Dutch traders first dealt in rum and trinkets with the Mohawks and other Iroquois, after 1630 they traded guns and ammunition with these red men for their peltries. Then, the conflict between the Iroquois tribes of New York State and the French and Indians of Canada began to take on serious proportions.

The treaty of Tawasentha has deep historical significance, as the foregoing paragraphs show. The Mohawks never broke "the chain of friendship" and, only once, did the white parties to the alliance fracture this symbolic relationship. That occasion was when, in 1623, Commandant Krieckebeeck joined the Mohicans in a foray against the Mohawks. Krieckebeeck was slain and his party defeated. However, the Mohawks immediately forgave and forgot and, soon thereafter, resumed their friendly relations with the Dutch at Fort Nassau. Aside from this unfortunate episode, the present Albany region was generally free from Indian troubles during the entire Dutch Colonial period and the section grew strong and prosperous, while the Manhattan region was, several times, involved in bloody and disastrous wars. With

peace at Fort Nassau and later Fort Orange, the Albany district not only grew but it sent out Dutch colonists who peopled the Hudson River's shores, from Kingston on the south to Stillwater on the north, Hoosick on the east and the Mohawk Valley on the west, nearly to present Amsterdam. The settlers of the Albany area were mainly Dutch, while those who went out from Manhattan were more cosmopolitan. Before leaving consideration of the Tawasentha treaty it is pertinent to remark upon the intelligence and diplomacy displayed by Elkins on this historic occasion. His ability evidenced at the council makes his conduct in abducting an Indian chief, at a later date, almost inexplicable. There has been some tendency to make light of the Tawasentha council but there is every evidence that it was one of the great historical events of Colonial days in America. Incidentally Tawasentha is said to mean "place of the many dead."

This first chapter, of the history of the settlement of the present Albany area and the middle Hudson Valley, closes with the year 1622. It is resumed with the founding of Fort Orange, in 1623.



BUSINESS SECTION OF MOUNT VERNON AT NORTH FOURTH STREET

CHAPTER 16.

1614-1621—SETTLEMENT AND DEVELOPMENT ON THE HUDSON RIVER.

1614. BEGINNING OF ACTIVE EXPLORATION AND TRADING ABOUT NEW YORK AND ALBANY—CAPTAIN BLOCK EXPLORES NEIGHBORING WATERS IN THE "ONRUST," BUILT AT MANHATTAN—EXPLORES CONNECTICUT AND THAMES RIVERS, CAPE COD AND MASSACHUSETTS COAST—MANHATTAN A TRADING CENTER—1616. CAPTAIN HENDRICKSEN FIRST EXPLORES DELAWARE BAY AND RIVER IN "ONRUST"—HENDRICKSEN RANSOMS THREE DUTCH EXPLORERS (WHO WENT OUT FROM FORT NASSAU [ALBANY] IN 1614), ON SITE OF PHILADELPHIA—1618. CHARTER OF UNITED NEW NETHERLAND COMPANY EXPIRES—1618-1623. DUTCH SHIPS CONTINUE TRADING ALONG HUDSON RIVER—1620. PURITANS IN HOLLAND PROPOSE TO SETTLE IN NEW NETHERLAND. APPLICATION REFUSED, THEY SETTLE AT NEW PLYMOUTH.

The year 1614 seems to mark the beginning of active exploration and trading about present New York as well as about present Albany, as noted in the previous chapter. While intrepid Dutch explorers from Fort Orange were following the Indian trails of the Mohawk and Susquehanna valleys, the hardy Dutch mariners and their accompanying traders were exploring the waters about Manhattan Island and those tributary to New York Bay into which the Hudson empties. DeWitt sailed up the Mauritius or Hudson River. This voyage is marked by the fact that he gave his name to one of the islands in the river near Red Hook. Captain May coasted eastward to Martha's Vineyard, which the Dutch called the Texel.

In the same year, 1614, that Fort Nassau was built at present Albany, it is stated that a defense was made at the southern point of Manhattan Island. This is probably so, but as there is no documentary evidence to support it, the historians generally

are of the opinion that there was no fort at Manhattan until 1620 while some place the date at 1626, after Minuit's arrival. However, it seems incredible that the experienced Dutch mariners and traders would risk their lives, stores and furs without palisading their storehouse at Manhattan. It was a frequent custom for the pioneers of that early day to erect a stockade around their first log houses.

Following the completion of his yacht, the *Onrust*, in the spring of 1614, Adriaen Block proceeded to explore the bays and rivers to the eastward of Manhattan Island. He sailed, with his little ship, into rivers and harbors which the larger Dutch vessels could not enter. Block discovered and explored the Connecticut and Thames rivers and also the island which bears his name. He continued his voyage to Cape Cod and to Nahant Bay, just north of Boston Harbor. It is interesting to note that the *Onrust*, the first vessel built along the Hudson River, should figure so largely in the exploration of the New England coast six years before the landing of the Pilgrims.

When Block returned to Cape Cod, he found his fellow sea captain, Hendrick Christiaensen there. There Block left the *Onrust* and sailed to Holland with Christiaensen, where both mariners gave glowing accounts of their discoveries and of the "New Netherland" overseas.

There is little definite information as to the development of the little Dutch settlement, at the tip end of Manhattan Island, between 1613 and 1618 but it is probable that there was a small but constant growth. Even in those early days, Manhattan was a potential city although its population probably did not exceed a few score sailors, traders and adventurers. Manhattan was the center from which trading vessels and expeditions went forth and to it came a wealth of peltries brought there by the Indians and the European traders. The smoke lazily rose from the chimneys of the log cabins of the Dutch traders. Indian men, women and children wandered about the little settlement, while Dutch ships rode at anchor in nearby waters. No one who then stood on that Battery Park section of present New York, in those early days, visualized the greatest city in the world of which that tiny settlement was the beginning.

The *Onrust* evidently sailed back to Manhattan after Block left it at Cape Cod in 1614 for, in 1616, Captain Cornelis Hendricksen sailed from Manhattan in the little ship and explored Delaware Bay and River. He seems to have been the first European to enter those waters. On the site of Philadelphia, Hendricksen ransomed the three Dutch traders of Fort Nassau (present Albany) who had explored the country westward and southward to the Delaware River, where they were made captives by the Indians. Following Hendricksen's exploration, the Dutch called the present Delaware the "New" or "South" River in contradistinction to the Mauritius or "North River" as the Hollanders then generally designated the Hudson River.

Hendricksen returned to Manhattan and from there went to Holland where he tried to induce Dutch merchants to form a company to trade in the Delaware River country. That region was then claimed by Virginia and because of that fact, the Dutch hesitated to enter the country and thereby start a quarrel.

By the year 1618, the Dutch mariners and traders had explored a considerable part of the shores of the lower and middle sections of the Hudson River and they had even entered the upper watershed of the Delaware River.

In 1618, a settlement was begun at Bergen in New Jersey, then called Scheyichbi by the Indians.

In 1618, upon the expiration of the charter of the United New Netherland Company, the interested merchants applied to the States General for a renewal of their charter. That body was then considering the grant of a comprehensive charter for a West India Company and it shelved the petition. This action did not weaken the hold of Holland on its newly discovered lands or stop commerce to and on the North River. Only a short time after the States General refused a renewal of the charter of the United New Netherland Company, Hendrick Eelkens and others, who were associated with that company, petitioned the States General to send their ship, the *Scheldt*, on a voyage to Manhattan and this request was granted.

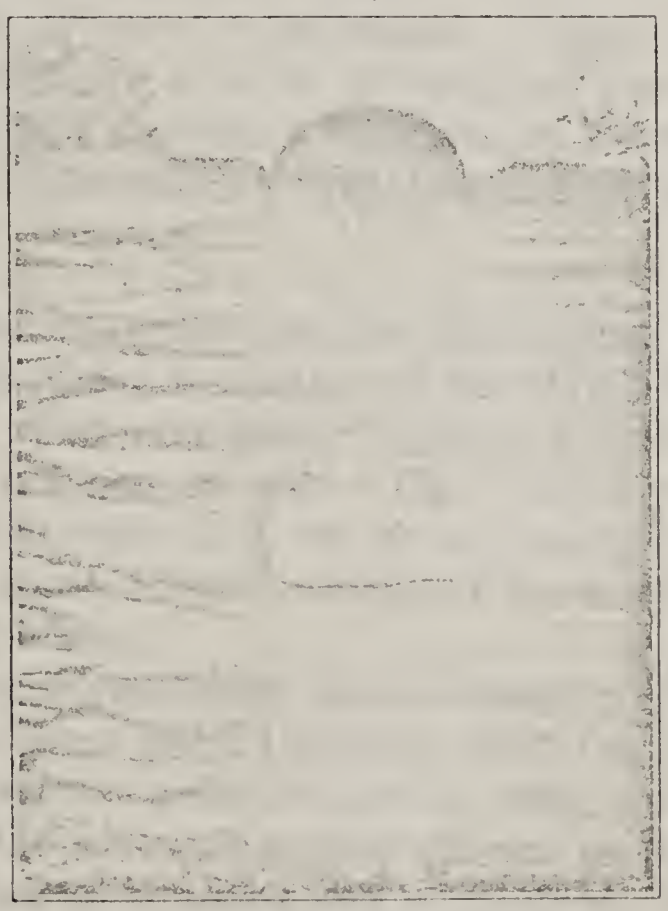
In 1620, the English sea captain, Thomas Dermer, sailed from the North River to Cape Cod, in the course of his voyages. He visited the Dutch traders on Manhattan Island and informed

them that they were squatting on English territory. The Hollanders quietly disagreed with him and nothing came of the incident. However, this was one of the early protests of the English against Dutch colonization on the Hudson which eventually culminated in the loss of New Netherland by the Hollanders.

In 1608, a number of Puritans left Lincolnshire, England, and settled in Amsterdam, Holland, where they had full religious and civil liberty. In 1617, these Puritans expressed a desire to emigrate to North America and live under English rule but King James refused to grant them liberty of religious worship and so that project was given up. The Puritans then considered removing to New Netherland. In 1620, John Robinson, the Puritan minister, proposed that 400 families of Puritan residents of Holland and England should migrate to Manhattan. Robinson made his request for permission to colonize, to the Amsterdam merchants who formed the company whose charter had lapsed in 1618. The merchants took the petition to the Stadtholder who referred it to the States General. The members of that Dutch congress were too busy with plans for a great and glittering monopoly, in the form of the West India Company, to be interested in Robinson's plans. His proposition was finally rejected by the States General after it had been brought before that body several times for consideration. On that account, a number of English Puritans of Holland sailed from Delft's Haven, on July 21, 1620, bound from Southampton in the *Speedwell*, a small vessel of 60 tons. The *Mayflower*, a ship of 180 tons, lay there at anchor. The Puritans set sail on the two vessels but they had to put in at Plymouth because the *Speedwell* sprung a leak. On September 6, 1620, a party of 100 Puritans set sail from Plymouth on the *Mayflower* and, on December 22, 1620, men from the ship landed at New Plymouth on the coast of present Massachusetts. What would have been the course of history had the Puritans been allowed to settled on the Hudson River, belongs to the realm of speculation on what might have been, with which this work is not concerned.

During the period, from the expiration of the charter of the United New Netherland Company in 1618 until the final official launching of the West India Company in 1623, the Dutch con-

tinued to trade in the Hudson River. It is well to remember that, prior to the landing of the Pilgrims or Puritans in 1620, Dutch posts or settlements existed at present New York, Jersey City and Albany. Indeed, judging from the later prevalence of "squatting," there may have been other locations of settlers of which we have no knowledge or record.



ALBANY POST ROAD MILESTONE,
NEAR HYDE PARK

It reads "86 miles to N. York."

CHAPTER 17.

1621-1624 IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

1621. APPLICATION TO THE STATES GENERAL OF HOLLAND FOR A CHARTER FOR THE WEST INDIA COMPANY—JUNE 3, 1621, PATENT GRANTED THE COMPANY—FINAL ORGANIZATION, JUNE 21, 1623—ACTIVE TRADE WITH THE INDIANS AT MANHATTAN, ESOPUS AND FORT NASSAU—1622. WEST INDIA COMPANY TOOK POSSESSION OF NEW NETHERLAND. PLANS MADE FOR NEW FORT AT PRESENT ALBANY TO REPLACE FORT NASSAU—1623. NEW NETHERLAND MADE A PROVINCE OF HOLLAND AND PLACED UNDER THE CONTROL OF THE AMSTERDAM CHAMBER OF THE WEST INDIA COMPANY.

The prosperous career of the Dutch East India Company finally resulted in the formation of the Dutch West India Company in 1623. The East India Company had been most successful, since its creation in 1602. The twelve years' truce with Spain expired in 1621 and, on its approach, the people of the Netherlands prepared for a renewal of the mighty struggle with their powerful enemy.

The interested merchants made strenuous efforts to secure a charter for the West India Company from the States General of the United Provinces and, on June 3, 1621, that body passed a patent giving the company mighty powers of trade and government in the lands of America and in the West Indies. No trade could be carried on in those regions except "in the name or by the consent of the West India Company, upon pain of forfeiture of ships and cargoes." The government of the West India Company was put under the management of five chambers of managers. The Amsterdam chamber controlled four ninth parts; the one at Middleburg in Zealand, two ninth parts; one at Dardrecht on the Maeze, one ninth part; one in North Holland, one ninth part; and one in Friesland and Groningen, one ninth part. Executive powers were intrusted to a board of 19 directors. Of

these, eight were from the Amsterdam chamber, four from Zealand, two from the Maeze, two from North Holland and two from Friesland and Groningen, while one was to represent the States General. The States General "assisted" the company with a million guilders and, in case of war, agreed to provide it with 16 ships of war. The people of the Netherlands, and other countries as well, could become stockholders in 1621, after which time the books would be closed. The company could appoint its own governors and other officials, subject to the approval of the States General. This was the powerful company which was to govern and misgovern the Hudson River country, as the major part of New Netherland.

However, the final organization of the West India Company was delayed until June 21, 1623, when the States General finally approved the plan of organization and the monopoly went into effect and its directors immediately began operations with great energy.

The West India Company was one of the most powerful trade organizations ever created in the history of the world.

In spite of the possession of the Hudson Valley, by the Dutch, and of the St. Lawrence Valley, by the French, the King of England, nevertheless, claimed the entire region lying between Virginia and Newfoundland.

Although the West India Company secured its great monopolies in 1621, Dutch vessels, other than those owned by the company, continued to trade along the Hudson during and following that year.

Brodhead says: "In the meantime, the merchants, who had lately formed the United New Netherland Association, continued to send separate trading ventures to the North and South rivers. Hendrick Eelkens, Adriaen Jansen Engel and Hans Joris Houten of Amsterdam, who, the year before, had so strenuously opposed the granting of any exclusive privileges to May's ship owners, obtained from the States General a special license to send their vessel, the *White Dove*, to 'New Virginia,' under the command of Captain Joris Houten. The next week, Dirck Volkertsen, Doctor Veries, Doctor Carbasius and others, of Hoorn in North Holland, some of whom were the owners of May's first ship, the *Fortune*, obtained a similar permission, to send a vessel to trade 'in the

Virginias.' A few days afterward, upon the petition of 'Claes Jacobsen Haringcarpsel, counselor and former schepen of Amsterdam, Peter Plancius, minister of the word of God, Lambrecht Van Tweenhuysen, Hans Clausen and company, trading to certain lands, coasts and rivers discovered by them, lying between Virginia and New France, in latitude of from forty to forty-five degrees,' the States General authorized them, on September 28, 1621, to dispatch two ships to trade in the North and South rivers. These special licenses were granted under the proviso in the West India Company. But, in order to prevent any interference with its privileges, the grantees of these special licenses were required to complete their voyages and have all their ships back in Holland by the first day of July, 1622."

However, trade between Holland and New Netherland seems to have continued in spite of the tentative powers which the West India Company had between the years 1621 and 1623. Brodhead further says: "With the native tribes, the Dutch generally cultivated the most amicable relations. The treaty made on the banks of the Tawasentha continued to be faithfully observed with the Mohawks, the Mohicans and the North River Indians, who were the immediate neighbors and the allies of the Dutch. At Esopus, a large traffic was maintained with boats and shallops. Jacob Eelkens, who had remained in superintendence of the trade near Castle Island, made frequent trips to the eastern coasts and rivers of New Netherland."

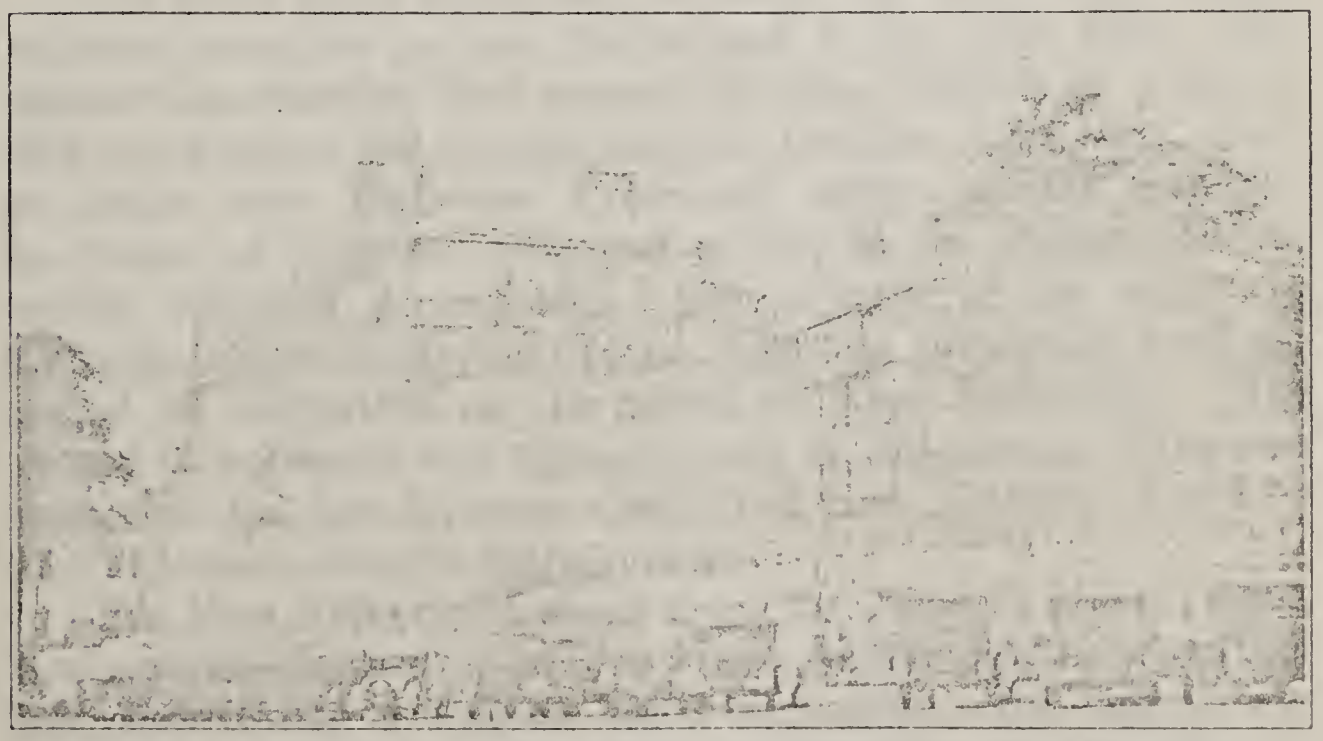
On one of Eelkens' voyages, in 1622, he sailed up the Connecticut River, abducted an Indian chief and held him for ransom. He was released on the payment of 140 fathoms of wampum. Because of this evil act, Eelkens was discharged from his position as superintendent at Fort Nassau at present Albany.

With the creation of the West India Company, the States General made New Netherland a province of the Netherlands, with a grant of the armorial bearings of a count. The College of Nineteen of the West India Company gave the management of the affairs of the new province to the Amsterdam chamber. Thus the growth of Manhattan (later New Amsterdam) and New Netherland became closely identified with Amsterdam, the great city and commercial center of the Netherlands.

Leading members of the Amsterdam chamber were Jonas Witsen, one of the grantees of the original charter of 1614; Hendrick Hamel, Samuel Godyn, Samuel Blommaert, John De Laet, the historian; Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, Michael Pauw and Peter Evertsen Hulft, "whose names are identified with the first European possession of the five states of New York, New Jersey, Delaware, Pennsylvania and Connecticut."

The West India Company took possession of New Netherland in 1622 and sent trading vessels to the North River. The company arranged to abandon Fort Nassau, on the Tawasentha, and to build a fort two miles farther up the Hudson near the foot of present State Street in the present city of Albany. Dutch traders from Manhattan were also sent to the South, or Delaware, River, where they built a fort near Gloucester on the New Jersey shore.

The next chapter covers the settlement of Walloons and Dutch in New Netherland in 1623. Fort Orange was completed in 1623. Captain May was made the first director general of New Netherland in 1623. Adriaen Joris was vice director at Fort Orange (Albany) during the fall of 1623 and the winter of 1623-1624.



YONKERS HIGH SCHOOL

CHAPTER 18.

1622-1623. BUILDING OF FORT ORANGE AT PRESENT ALBANY—WALLOON SETTLEMENTS.

1623. AMSTERDAM CHAMBER PROMOTES COLONIZATION OF NEW NETHERLAND—SENDS SHIP "NEW NETHERLAND" WITH 30 FAMILIES OF COLONISTS, MOSTLY WALLOONS—CAPTAIN CORNELIS JACOBSEN MAY, IN COMMAND OF SHIP, MADE FIRST DIRECTOR GENERAL OF NEW NETHERLAND—CAPTAIN MAY FORCES FRENCH SHIP, ANCHORED AT MANHATTAN, TO PUT TO SEA—COLONISTS LOCATED AT MANHATTAN, LONG ISLAND, ESOPUS (KINGSTON), FORT ORANGE (ALBANY), DELAWARE AND CONNECTICUT RIVERS—1623-1624. ADRIAEN JORIS, IN COMMAND AT FORT ORANGE, HOLDS COUNCIL WITH INDIANS—WALLOONS START FARMING OPERATIONS AT FORT ORANGE, ESOPUS AND "WAAL-BOGHT," LATER WALLABOUT BAY (PRESENT U. S. NAVY YARD) BROOKLYN.

The West India Company made its first important attempt to bring colonists to New Netherland in the year 1623. The Amsterdam chamber then secured the *New Netherland*, a ship of 260 tons burden, and took on board 30 families of colonists. Most of these were Walloons, Protestant people of the southern provinces of Belgium, who had settled in the Netherlands to escape religious persecutions. The captain of the ship was Cornelis Jacobsen May of Hoorn, who had previously been engaged in navigation on the coasts of New Netherland. The second in command was Adriaen Joris of Thienpoint. May was named as the first Director General of New Netherland and he was ordered to remain in the colony.

The *New Netherland* sailed from the Texel in March, 1623, and reached Manhattan early in May. At the mouth of the Hudson, May found a French vessel at anchor. Its captain announced his intention of setting up the arms of the King of France on Manhattan Island and of claiming the country for

France. Director General May put cannon on the yacht *Mackerel*, which had just returned from a trading voyage up the Hudson River. The Dutch boat then forced the French ship to put to sea. The French captain tried to set up a French empire on the Delaware River, following his failure on Manhattan, but the Dutch colonists there also forced him to leave the "South" River. The incident mentioned shows that there was some sort of a defensive work at Manhattan, in 1623, from which May secured cannon to put aboard his Dutch "man-o'-war."

After this affair, Director General May resumed his work of colonization. Eight men were stationed at Manhattan to take possession there for the West India Company. Several families and a few men were sent to Long Island, to the South or Delaware River and to the Connecticut River. The *New Netherland* then sailed up the North River. May left a few settlers at Esopus (Kingston) where the draft of the ship prevented her sailing over the shoals of the upper channel of the Hudson. The vessel was accordingly lightened with the aid of boats, which had been left at "Sopus," by Dutch traders, who had been there during the previous year and who had then returned to Holland. Whatever was unloaded from the boat was left at Esopus with the settlers.

About eighteen families from the *New Netherland* settled at Fort Orange. This fort had been constructed at the foot of present State Street in present Albany. The location of Fort Nassau, at the mouth of the Tawasentha, was found to be inconvenient and, in 1622, plans were made for a new fort to be located at the site mentioned. The new Fort Orange was begun in 1622 and completed following the arrival of the colonists in 1623.

The Walloon farmers built log cabins and immediately began to till the soil. They worked so vigorously and efficiently that their corn "was nearly as high as a man" before the yacht *Mackerel* started its return voyage to Holland. Adriaen Joris sent the *New Netherland* back to Holland in command of his son and he remained at Fort Orange with the colonists during the succeeding winter of 1623-1624. Representatives of the adjacent Indian tribes came to Fort Orange and made covenants of friendship with Joris.

Elkins had been succeeded as commissary at Fort Orange by Daniel Van Krieckebeeck, familiarly known as "Beeck" to the

colonists. Peter Barentsen was put in charge of the fur trade at Manhattan and along the Mauritius or North River, following the dismissal of Elkins who had had charge of the fur trade all along the Hudson.

The Walloons, who settled on Long Island in present Brooklyn, located on a "bogt," which is the Dutch word for "bay," about opposite what was Corlaer's Hook on Manhattan Island. This small bay soon became known as the "Waal-boght," meaning Walloon's Bay. The Walloon pioneers, on the Long Island shore, multiplied rapidly and, before many years, had spread over a considerable section of the Waal-boght, now known as Wallabout. This was the first considerable settlement in the Brooklyn area.

The Walloon couples, who had married at sea on the voyage from Holland to Manhattan, were sent in a yacht to settle on the Delaware or South or New River, as it was then called. They located on the east or New Jersey shore, near present Gloucester and about four miles below the present City of Philadelphia.

Two families and about six men from the *New Netherland*, were sent to the Connecticut, or "Fresh" River, so called because, in contradistinction to the Hudson, it had no tides. This region was claimed as part of New Netherland and the claim was a just one as the Dutch were the first to explore and settle the river. At present Hartford, a small fort and trading post, known as "Good Hope," was started. However, it is stated, that the fort was not completed until the year 1633, ten years later.

The foregoing colonization of various areas of New Netherland, by the Walloons in 1623, was most important historically. They withdrew from Fort Orange and Esopus, a few years later, because of warfare between the Mohawks and Mohicans. Because of this withdrawal, the Walloon locations on Long Island, opposite Manhattan, take on the most importance as they were the largest permanent settlements of these people and the ones to which many of the later Walloons resorted.

CHAPTER 19.

1625-1626. IMMIGRATION OF SETTLERS FROM HOLLAND.

1625. PUBLICATION OF DE LAET'S DESCRIPTION OF NEW NETHERLAND AND JUET'S LOG BOOK OF HUDSON'S VOYAGE OF 1609—THREE VESSELS ARRIVE FROM HOLLAND CARRYING 45 DUTCH SETTLERS AND 103 HEAD OF CATTLE—WILLIAM VERHULST SUCCEEDS CAPTAIN MAY AS DIRECTOR GENERAL—DEATH OF PRINCE MAURICE, STADTHOLDER OF HOLLAND, AND JAMES I, KING OF ENGLAND—FREDERICK HENRY, SUCCEEDS HIS BROTHER, PRINCE MAURICE, AS STADTHOLDER AND PRINCE OF ORANGE—1626. PETER MINUIT, NEW DIRECTOR GENERAL, ARRIVES AT MANHATTAN AND SUCCEEDS VERHULST.

The year 1625 was important in the history of New Netherland. Early in that year, appeared an important work—the "History of the New World, or Description of the West Indies," by John De Laet of Amsterdam, who was an influential director of the East Indies Company. The new book was dedicated to the States General of the United Provinces and it was stated to be compiled from "various manuscript journals of different captains or pilots." It contained a number of quotations from Hudson's journal of his voyage of 1609 and it is most important in this regard, as that famous mariner's record, of his exploration of the great river, which bears his name, was unfortunately lost. De Laet also seems to have had the records of Captains Christiaensen, Block and May and his description of early New Netherland is generally considered to be an authority on the subject.

In the same year that De Laet's book appeared, a London publisher put out the log book of Hudson's voyage up and down the North River, written by Robert Juet, an officer of the *Half Moon*. Doubtless, De Laet's book had much to do with giving publicity

to the Hudson River and its shores and thereby stimulating its colonization.

A clause, in the charter of the West India Company, provided that it should "advance the peopling of the fruitful and unsettled parts," which were comprised within its extensive grants. Like all big organizations, the company had enemies who now began to give voice to statements that the great monopoly was so occupied with the enormous profits of buccaneering—polite piracy—and trade that it was doing nothing to carry on its implied pledge to work for the populating of the colonies under its control. These criticisms probably had something to do with the colonization enterprise of the company which located the Walloon families in New Netherland in 1623.

In 1625, the West India Company advertised for "adventurers" to the New World. Free transportation, employment, and other inducements were offered. A number of people enrolled themselves with the company as would-be-settlers. In April of 1625, three vessels of good size for that period were fitted out and sailed from Holland to Manhattan, carrying 45 men, women and children, together with 103 head of cattle, as well as household goods, seeds, farming implements and practically everything essential to life along the Hudson River, at that period. The cattle, which were transported to Manhattan, included stallions and mares, bulls and cows, swine and sheep. Probably there are descendants of these Dutch Colonial cattle in the State of New York today, as well as descendants of the people who came over at the same time.

Peter Evertsen Hulft, one of the directors of the Amsterdam Chamber of the West India Company, fitted out this expedition at his own expense. Besides Hulft's vessels, the other Amsterdam directors fitted out a fast-sailing yacht or "fluyt," as the Dutch called such vessels. This craft made four ships in the little fleet which sailed forth from the Zuyder Zee, bound for the Dutch port at the mouth of the Hudson on the other side of the Atlantic.

The voyage was most successful. Only two of the animals, which were carried aboard, died at sea. The cattle were first landed at "Nutten," or Governor's Island, in New York Harbor. As the pasturage was not good there "they were taken a day or two afterward, by barges and shallops, to Manhattan." The

Dutch called Governor's Island, "Nutten Island," during the first period of their settlement there, on account of its many excellent nut trees. The fact that barges were in use in 1625, by the traders and mariners of Manhattan, indicates that the little seaport was already doing a thriving business. These barges were generally used to transport goods between the shore and vessels lying at anchor and they must have depended largely upon oarsmen for their motive power, although they probably also had a simple sail rigging of some sort. After being turned loose on Manhattan Island, about twenty of the cattle died from eating poisonous plants—probably poison ivy.

Unfortunately, there is no record as to where the 45 young and old Hollanders settled along the Hudson. However, all in all, this migration was second in importance only to the Walloon settlements of 1623. It is probable that the trading vessels, which were constantly making voyages to and from Holland also brought many Dutch immigrants of whom we have no knowledge.

A vessel sailed from Manhattan to Amsterdam in July, 1625, and another in November of the same year. These were probably the ships of 280 tons burden, which had brought the settlers to Manhattan. They were "loaded mostly with peltries" and they carried back to Holland the news of the generally happy condition of the recently arrived settlers.

William Verhulst now succeeded Cornelis Jacobsen May, the Dutch sea captain, who had been Director General or Governor of New Netherland, from 1623 until 1625. Verhulst remained only one year, during which he visited the "South," or Delaware River.

With the immigration from Holland in 1623 and 1625, the Dutch Province of New Netherland now numbered over 300 people, most of whom were located at Manhattan, Fort Orange, Kingston, Wallabout, present Hartford, Jersey City and on the Delaware River.

The year 1625 was marked by the death of Maurice, Prince of Orange and the Stadtholder of the United Provinces, on April 23. This great general was succeeded by his brother, Frederick Henry, as Prince of Orange. By a majority vote of the Provinces, he was also elected Stadtholder. James I, King of England, died on March 27, less than a month before the death of Prince

Maurice. In September, 1625, the Dutch and English concluded an offensive and defensive alliance. As England and Holland were now allies, the colonization of New Netherland and the Hudson Valley went on without interruption or protest, although England had strong colonies to the north and south of the extensive Dutch colonial territory.

In 1625, the West India Company commissioned Peter Minuit of Wesel, to succeed William Verhulst as Director General or Governor of New Netherland. Minuit made the voyage to Manhattan in the *Sea Mew*, commanded by Adriaen Joris, who had charge of the Albany colonists and of Fort Nassau in 1623-1624. The *Sea Mew* sailed from the Texel on January 9, 1626, and reached Manhattan on May 4, 1626.



A COLONIAL DUTCH STONE FARMHOUSE NEAR HYDE PARK

CHAPTER 20.

1626-1628. MINUIT PURCHASES MANHATTAN ISLAND FOR $24.

1626. DIRECTOR GENERAL GIVES INDIAN OWNERS 60 GUILDERS FOR PROPERTY NOW (1931) WORTH BILLIONS—PURCHASE PRICE ABOUT 11 CENTS PER ACRE—WORK BEGINS ON FORT AMSTERDAM—30 HOUSES IN 1626 AND PROBABLE POPULATION OF 200 IN MANHATTAN—HORSE MILL BUILT AND SERVES AS CHURCH—DE RASIERES' DESCRIPTION OF MANHATTAN ISLAND—SEWAN OR WAMPUM MADE ON LONG ISLAND—MINUIT SENDS THREE ENVOYS TO NEW PLYMOUTH—THE DUTCH GOVERNOR OF NEW NETHERLAND MAKES FIRST MOVE TO PROMOTE FRIENDLY RELATIONS BETWEEN THE COLONIES—REV. JONAS MICHAELIUS, THE FIRST MINISTER, ARRIVES—1624-1627. TRADE OF NEW NETHERLAND DOUBLES—1628. MANHATTAN'S POPULATION, 270—CONDITIONS IN THE SETTLEMENT.

Peter Minuit's arrival in Manhattan forms a most important event in the early years of the Dutch Province of New Netherland. In regard to this event, Brodhead writes:

"The College of Nineteen of the West India Company, immediately upon its organization, intrusted, as we have seen, to the Amsterdam Chamber the particular management of the North American Province. Sworn to the double allegiance which the charter required, Director Peter Minuit, on his arrival at Manhattan, commenced an administration which was to be a faithful reflection of the peculiar commercial policy of his immediate principals. Their will, as expressed in instructions or declared in ordinances, was to be the supreme law of New Netherland. In cases not thus specifically provided for, the civil law and the statutes, edicts and customs of the Fatherland were to be paramount. To assist the Director, a Council was appointed, which was invested with all local, legislative, judicial and executive powers, subject to the supervision and appellate jurisdiction of

the Chamber at Amsterdam. Criminal justice was administered by the Council to the extent of fine and imprisonment but not to the taking away of life. If any person was capitally convicted, 'he must be sent, with his sentence, to Holland.' Next in authority to the Director and Council, was the chief commissary, or 'koopman,' who was the bookkeeper of the company's affairs and who also acted as Secretary of the Province. Subordinate to these, was the 'Schout,' whose responsible office combined the double duties of public Prosecutor and Sheriff. He was not a member of the Council but their executive officer and, besides his other ordinary functions, he was specially charged with due inspection and enforcement of the revenue regulations of the Colonial Customs House."

Director General Minuit's Council was composed of Peter Byvelt, Jacob Elbertson Wissinck, Jan Janssen Brouwer, Simon Dircksen Pos and Reynert Harmensson. Jan Lampo was schout or sheriff. Isaac De Rasieres acted as bookkeeper and provincial secretary for two years. Jan Van Remund succeeded him.

Minuit purchased Manhattan Island from its Indian owners soon after he arrived at the mouth of the Hudson River. He paid the red men 60 guilders, which equals about $24 of Uncle Sam's currency. The island has an area of about 22,000 acres, which made the purchase price a little less than 11 cents per acre.

It is the opinion of the editor of this work that there was some sort of a fortification—palisade or earthwork or both—prior to 1626. It would have been natural for the earliest traders to have stockaded their storehouse and it is reported that they did. However, in 1626, work was begun on a large fort with four angles, which was to be faced with stone. This fortification was laid out by Kryn Frederick, the colonial engineer, on the southern point of Manhattan Island in the present Battery Park section—although much of the present park was under water in the first days of Dutch occupation and much of it has been since filled in.

De Rasieres reached Manhattan in 1626 and began his duties as chief commissary and secretary of the Dutch Province. He was a nephew of Samuel Blommaert, one of the leading directors of the West India Company, and he seems to have been a man of considerable ability. Concerning the projected fort, De Rasieres wrote: "It ought, from its nature, to be a Royal fort, so that it

could be approached by land only on one side, as it is a triangle bounded by the two rivers. Three angles are indicated by nature. The most northern is opposite to and commands, within the range of cannon shot, the Great Mauritius River and the land. The southernmost, on the water level, commands the channel between Nutten Island and the fort, together with the Hell-gate. The third point, opposite to Blommaert's Valley, commands the low-land. The middle, which ought to be left as a landmark, is the height of a hillock above the surrounding land, and should always serve as a Battery, which might command the three points, if the streets were arranged accordingly."

The mention, by De Rasieres, of a "Battery" is probably the first designation by that familiar name of this famous section of New York City. When the first fort was completed, it was originally intended to gather all the people of Manhattan within its walls, but this was never done. The fortification was called "Fort Amsterdam," while the town continued as "Manhattan."

The West India Company had constructed a stone house in Manhattan. De Rasieres had his office within this building. In addition to the company's stone storehouse there were about 30 other houses at Manhattan, when Minuit arrived there in 1626. These were generally built of bark and saplings, in the manner of the Indians. Each colonist had his own house but the Director General and his secretary lived together.

New York of 1626 had no church and no clergyman. However, there were two "Krank-besoeckers," or "consolers of the sick"—Sebastian Jansen Krol and Jan Huyck, who read the scriptures to a congregation on Sunday. Aside from this, the New York of 1626 was entirely free from religious schisms, a condition which has, unfortunately, never existed since that far-off day.

A horse mill was built at Manhattan by Francois Molemacker which had a large room above the mill. This room served as a meeting place for the Dutch pioneers. A tower was also added to the mill. In it were hung the Spanish bells which were captured in Porto Rico in 1625 by the West India Company's fleet. It is easy to see that the horse mill had the general appearance of a church and served very well as such—the first church along the Hudson River.

The 1626 germ of the later great city had a population of about 200 people. At first, these pioneers had all the qualities which had distinguished them in the Netherlands. Although this feature is generally disregarded by historians, it is a fact that the new land, the new climate and the new conditions began to affect the physical, mental and psychological qualities of the Dutch settlers from the very first days on which they landed on the shores of the Hudson—whether at Manhattan or Fort Orange.

In 1626, each American farmer (of Dutch birth) on Manhattan Island, had his homestead and was furnished with cows. De Rasieres wrote a letter to his uncle Blommaert, in which he gave the following interesting description of New York City in 1626:

"The island of Manhattan is full of trees and, in the middle, rocky. On the north side, there is good land in two places, where the farmers, each with four horses, would have enough to do without much clearing or grubbing at first. The grass is good in the forests and valleys, but, when made into hay, it is not so nutritious for the cattle as the hay in Holland, in consequence of its wild state, yet it annually improves by cultivation. On the east side, there rises a large level field, of about one hundred and sixty acres, through which runs a very fine fresh stream, so that the land can be plowed without much clearing. It appears to be good. The six farms, four of which lie along the River Hell-gate, stretching to the south side of the island, have at least one hundred and twenty acres, ready to be sown with winter seed, which may, at the most, have been plowed eight times."

De Rasieres' "River Hell-gate" was the name the Dutch applied to the East River. His letter also throws some light on the time during which actual farming operations had been carried on upon the Island of Manhattan. If, in 1626, a field on the island had been plowed eight times it must have been cultivated as early as 1618.

The citizens of the New York City of 1626 had various occupations. Some were farmers, others went on trading expeditions among the Indians, while some were carpenters and builders. There were probably also a cobbler, tailor and blacksmith. As already noted, there was a miller at work in Manhattan. There must have been shipbuilders located on the island at that early

date, when the place had been settled for thirteen years, during which time it had been a busy port. The germ of the great city, which was to come, already existed in the diminutive city of 1626 on the tip of the Island of Manhattan.

From their early location on Manhattan, its strategic position, and their commercial ability, the Dutch of 1626 had a decided advantage over the Puritans of New England. This superiority was felt by the Yankees as early as 1623. The Manhattan traders monopolized almost all the fur trade of Naragansett Bay and Buzzard's Bay. The Dutchmen supplied the Indians with cloth, hatchets, knives, saws, etc., as well as rum. In return, they received furs, corn and venison. When a circulating medium was needed for trade with the red men it was necessary to use sewan or wampum, the currency of the Indians. The natives would not accept the gold and silver money of the European countries, which, as a matter of fact was and is only another form of sewan.

Sewan was the Indian name for this original money of the red men, which was called wampum by the English settlers and which is now generally referred to by that name. This Indian currency was of two kinds—"wampum," or white beads, made of the stem of the periwinkle, and "suckauhock," or black beads, made of a part of the inside of the clamshell. The black beads were the gold and the white beads were the silver of the Indians. They regarded the gold and silver money of the Europeans with the greatest contempt. Sewan, or wampum, being of a stated value, was the currency in use between the whites and the red men. It formed the jewelry of the Indians, as well as their money. "It ornamented their persons, distinguished the rich from the poor, paid ransoms, satisfied tribute, sealed compacts, atoned for injuries."

As the Indians were an important factor in the lives of the colonists for over a century after the first settlement of the Hudson Valley, the matter of their money and other features of their existence take on historical importance. In fact, the Indians of the Hudson Valley were just as much human beings as the European colonists—more so in some cases. The history of the region cannot be properly told without giving the red men of the Hudson as much consideration as the whites.

In the matter of the sewan, or wampum, the Dutch had a great advantage over the other colonists, inasmuch as this money was "minted" close to the Island of Manhattan. The Indians of Long Island made a greater part of the sewan in use in the north-eastern colonies—both English and Dutch. For this reason, the island was called "Sewanhacky," meaning "Sewan Land." This Indian mint, which was located so close to the door of New Netherland, was most advantageous to the Dutch traders of Manhattan and the Hudson River and they availed themselves of it to the limit. The vast amount of shellfish and shells on Long Island formed the source of supply for the great amount of sewan, which was made there.

From their intercourse with the Indians with whom they traded on Long Island Sound, Naragansett and Buzzard's Bay, the traders of Manhattan first learned of the Puritan settlement at New Plymouth. Director General Minuit decided to attempt to promote friendly relations with these early New England settlers, who had located in the New World seven years later than the Dutch. He directed Secretary De Rasieres to draw up a letter addressed to Bradford, the governor of New Plymouth, which expressed good will and a desire for friendly commercial relations. De Rasieres dated the letter at "Manhattan in Fort Amsterdam," which seems like a reversal of the true relations of these designations of the Dutch colonial capital. Governor Bradford replied in a letter in the Dutch language, which reciprocated Minuit's friendly overtures and congratulated him on the recent alliance of England and Holland, and also expressed appreciation of the friendly treatment accorded the Puritans during their stay in the Netherlands. However, in the letter, Bradford questioned the right of the Dutch to settle within the limits of the territory claimed by England.

These letters are important because they were the first overtures leading to friendship and coöperation between American colonies and they were the first actual steps leading to national independence and the creation of the United States of America. The rapid growth of the nationalistic idea, on the banks of the Hudson in the Dutch colony of New Netherland and the later English province of New York, is covered in later chapters of this work.

With regard to Bradford's mild protest against Dutch settlement within the limits of "New England," Minuit made an early reply. He wrote that the Dutch were within their rights as to their settlement and said: "As the English claim authority under the King of England, so we derive ours from the States of Holland and will defend it." He also affirmed the right of the Dutch to trade with the Naragansetts, as they had done for many years.

Bradford did not reply to Minuit's last letter. He sent copies, of the first letter from De Rasieres, and his reply, to the Council of New England. In regard to the matter, he wrote that the Dutch "for strength of men and fortifications far exceed us and all in this land. They have used trading here these six or seven and twenty years but have begun to plant of later time and now have reduced their trade to some order and confined it to their company, which heretofore was spoiled by their seamen and interlopers, as ours is this year most notoriously." He also said that, besides spoiling their trade, the Dutch still continued "to truck pieces, powder and shot" with the Indians, "which will be the overthrow of us all if it is not looked into."

In placing the time of the first visits of the Dutch to the shores of the Hudson, this work has noted certain references of Dutch writers and certain documents which indicate the Dutch ships may have gone into the Hudson River even before the year 1600. Bradford's statement that the Dutch "have used trading here" for twenty-seven years prior to 1626, seems to indicate that one or more ships from Holland had visited the Atlantic Coast prior to Hudson's voyage in 1609. Bradford's letter is also important in that it bears upon the strength, population and importance of New Netherland in 1627.

As Minuit received no reply to his last communication to Bradford, he sent Jan Jacobsen as a special "ambassador" on a friendly mission to the Plymouth colony. Jacobsen commanded the ship, *Three Kings*, of Wirgen, Holland, which then lay at the port of Manhattan. Minuit sent "a rundlet of sugar and two cheeses," in care of Jacobsen, as a present for Governor Bradford. These very desirable gifts may have had considerable to do with starting the American national idea on its way.

The Dutch "ambassador" was kindly received by Governor Bradford at New Plymouth. He returned to Manhattan on August 14, 1627, with letters to Minuit from Bradford, thanking

the Director General for his gifts and expressing friendship. He also invited Minuit to send a commission to New Plymouth, probably with the idea of establishing friendly diplomatic and trading relations between the two colonies. In response to this request, Minuit sent Secretary De Rasieres to New Plymouth on the bark *Nassau*, with a retinue of Dutch soldiers and trumpeters. The Dutch deputy spent two days in the Puritan colony, where he was cordially welcomed. As the Puritans had lived for years in Holland, prior to their immigration, they found many friends among the Dutch soldiers and there were many joyful reunions and renewals of former friendships. The Puritans also purchased goods and wampum from the stores on the *Nassau*.

While these colonial negotiations do not come strictly within the province of a regional history of the Hudson Valley, nevertheless they are important as showing that the first overtures for colonial friendships and coöperation came from the governor of the Dutch colony at the mouth of the Hudson. Minuit planted the first germ of the American nationalistic idea in 1627.

In the three years, from 1624 to 1627, the trade between Holland and New Netherland had more than doubled. The figures are as follows: 1624—Exports from Amsterdam, 25,000 guilders; imports from New Netherland, 28,000 guilders. 1627—Exports, 56,000 guilders; imports, 56,000 guilders.

The first regularly ordained clergyman on the banks of the Hudson, was Jonas Michaelius, who came out from Amsterdam, under the auspices of the Synod of North Holland of the Reformed Dutch Church and who located at Manhattan. The horse mill, which has been previously mentioned, served as a church and the congregation numbered about 50 Dutch and Walloon members. The latter people came from the Walloon settlements on Long Island and also comprised the Walloons who were brought down from Fort Orange in 1626, because of the Mohawk-Mohican war which had raged around there in that year. The Walloons spoke French and so Dominie Michaelius sometimes preached in that language as well as in Dutch. The pastor also learned the language of the adjacent Algonquin Indians so that he could act as a missionary among them. His was a pioneer work in this regard.

In 1628, the population of the little city of Manhattan was 270 people. That of the whites then located in the Hudson River

region probably did not much exceed 400 people, including the 30 or 40 traders and soldiers at Fort Orange, the few Dutch on the New Jersey shore and the Walloons of Brooklyn. In that year, Fort Amsterdam was being completed, with four bastions and a facing of quarried stone.

Regarding the Manhattan of 1628, Brodhead says:

"The colonists subsisted chiefly by farming, deficiencies in the crops being made up by supplies from the Company. Butter and milk, as well as horses and cows, were difficult to obtain, although the cattle sent out from Holland had thriven very well. The harvest was somewhat meagre this year, yet it had been 'better gathered than ever before.' But laborers were few, maid servants were scarcely to be had and the Angola slaves proved to be 'thievish, lazy and useless trash.' A general conflagration had destroyed some of the property of the colonists and a portion of the Walloons, whose engagements with the Company had expired, meditated a return to the Fatherland. The making of brick, lime and potash was now begun and grist mills and sawmills were built. Timber, in abundance, was prepared for export but there were not vessels enough provided for its shipment. A great want of system prevailed and more 'plain and precise instructions' were evidently necessary for the government of the provincial authorities."

The year 1628 was most important to the fortunes of Holland. Led by the great admiral, Peter Heyn, the Dutch ships nearly swept the fleets of Spain from the seas and the naval supremacy of Holland became unquestioned. Heyn's men-o'-war captured the Spanish treasure fleet, with its booty of twelve million guilders, in 1628. In 1630, the Dutch took Brazil. The people of Holland had become empire-mad and the overtures for peace, made by the King of Spain in 1629, were disregarded. Naturally, with the Dutch people in this imperialistic frame of mind, the cares and comparatively meagre returns of the small colony of New Netherland made a limited popular appeal in the Fatherland.

The year 1628 saw the Dutch colony in a flourishing condition. Had its governors, following Minuit, been of his capable, aggressive and efficient character, it is probable that New Netherland might have occupied a dominant position in the Colonial history of the Atlantic seaboard.

CHAPTER 21.

1626-1630. LIFE AND EVENTS AT FORT ORANGE.

1626. MOHAWK-MOHICAN WAR---DUTCH COMMANDANT KRIECKEBEECK AND SIX DUTCH SOLDIERS OF FORT ORANGE JOIN MOHICAN WAR PARTY—MOHAWKS DEFEAT THE ALLIES—KRIECKEBEECK SLAIN—MOHAWKS FORGIVE THE DUTCH—WALLOON SETTLERS OF FORT ORANGE AND KINGSTON REMOVE TO MANHATTAN—SOLDIERS REMAIN AT FORT ORANGE---1628. MOHICANS RENEW WAR. MOHAWKS DRIVE MOHICANS FROM THEIR CASTLE AT PRESENT RENSSELAER. MOHICANS DEFEATED IN BATTLE AT UPPER RED HOOK AND DRIVEN INTO CONNECTICUT. DUTCH SETTLE PRESENT RENSSELAER—1630. MAP SHOWS TWELVE FARMS IN PRESENT CITIES OF ALBANY AND RENSSELAER.

Fort Orange was a flourishing colony of about 100 people in 1626. This number included the Walloon farmers who had come with their families to the present Albany area in 1623, and it also embraced the natural increase in their families. The other inhabitants included the soldiers of the garrison, the Company officials and the Dutch traders who were attracted to this Indian trail center. Besides the foregoing, there were a few Dutch farmers and probably several Dutch mechanics. Early in the year, everything seemed most promising for the rapid growth and development of the little Dutch frontier post and its neighboring farm area.

The situation of Fort Orange was then so remote from Manhattan that the post and its neighborhood, on the upper Hudson, really formed a separate and practically self-governing colony. It was made safe from savage attack because of the friendly relations which Elkins had established between the Dutch and the neighboring red men—particularly the powerful Mohawk tribe. Had it not been for the good feeling existing between the Iroquois

and their Dutch "brothers" the little settlement could have been easily wiped out by the warriors of the Five Nations.

In 1626, the only Dutch settlements on the Hudson River were at Manhattan, present Jersey City, at Esopus (Kingston), and at Fort Orange on the present site of Albany. These Dutch settlements, with that of the Walloons in present Brooklyn, constituted the only locations of white people, within the limits of the present State of New York, in 1626. The little settlement at Fort Orange had assumed the character of a town and life went on there with some of the comforts and much of the paraphernalia of civilization.

As has been previously mentioned, Elkins had been dismissed as Commissary at Fort Orange and Daniel Krieckebeeck had been appointed in his stead. "Beeck" made himself most popular with the settlers and the neighboring Indians. However, he wound up his otherwise successful administration with a mistake which cost him his life and which might have meant the end of the colony at Fort Orange had it not been for the diplomatic efforts which his successor made to placate the chiefs of the Mohawk tribe.

The Mohicans had maintained an intermittent warfare with the Mohawks, or Caniengas, ever since the entrance of these Iroquois Indians into the Mohawk Valley, about or soon after 1580. The formation of the Iroquois Confederacy, about 1600, had given the Mohawks added strength but they seem to have fought their wars with the Mohicans entirely unaided by the four other tribes or "nations."

In 1626, the Mohicans resumed their warfare with the Mahowaugs, as they called their enemies of the "Flint People"—Caniengas. In that year, the chief Mohican settlements were in Rensselaer County, from Troy to present Schodack. One of their chief locations was in the present City of Rensselaer, opposite Albany, where they had a stockaded town. The Mohawks were located along the river, which bears their name, between the "Noses" and the Garoga Creek, near Fort Plain. The territorial claims of the Mohawks embraced a great part of eastern New York State. The Mohicans were the only Algonquin tribe of the Hudson River country which contested the Mohawks' claims of sovereignty over that region and its Indian tribes.

The Mohicans started the war in the Spring of 1626 by attacks or raids near the Mohawk castles. The Mohawks seem to have been successful in these encounters. Following these affrays, the Mohawks gathered their warriors and marched toward their enemies' country. Krieckebeeck was the Vice Director of the West India Company and the Commissary at Fort Orange. He had heretofore remained neutral in this bitter struggle. However, he made a great error of judgment when Mohican chieftains persuaded him to join a war party gathered to oppose the advancing Mohawks. Krieckebeeck set out in company with the Mohican warriors. With him, were six of his musketeers, two of whom were Portuguese. At a point several miles distant from present Albany, the Mohawks ambushed the advancing party. A shower of arrows met the marchers, and Krieckebeeck, three of the soldiers and a number of Mohican warriors were slain by this volley and in the fierce onslaught which followed. The Mohicans fled and the three surviving musketeers ran back to Fort Orange with the unwelcome news of the defeat, which caused a panic at the Dutch post and in its neighborhood.

One of the Dutch soldiers, Tymen Bouwensen, had the distinction of being the first, and probably the only, Dutchman, to be eaten by the Mohawks, who generally cooked and ate one or more of their enemies after a battle. Krieckebeeck and the two other soldiers were buried, side by side, by their conquerors. Two of the three survivors were Portuguese and one of them was hit in the back and wounded by an arrow. After the battle and the feast of roast Dutchman, the Mohawks took a leg and an arm of a slain soldier back to their castles "as a proof that they had overcome their adversaries."

The Mohawks used only bows and arrows in this encounter, as noted. These bows had great power and the arrows were a deadly missle at close range or in an ambuscade. They could be fired with much accuracy up to 50 yards and even beyond that distance. A red man could drive an arrow clear through the body of a deer. Arrows could be fired from a bow many times while a musket was being reloaded, and in an ambush the bow was a deadly weapon on this account.

The usual descriptions of the war of 1626, between the Mohawks and the Mohicans, give only accounts of the foregoing

encounter, in which Commandant Krieckebeeck was killed. However, there is evidence of other fierce conflicts elsewhere, in one of which, at least, the Mohicans won the day. There is historical proof, coming from the Mohawks themselves, that, in 1626, the Mohicans drove the Mohawks from one of their chief castles, on the eastern slope of the Big Nose, on the Mohawk River. There is a tradition that the Mohawks won a battle from the Mohicans on Oak Hill, near their castle of Tenotoge, about two miles northwest of the present Village of Fort Plain. This must have been the decisive battle of the war of 1626, as it was fought near the great castle of the Mohawks which was located on Oak Hill. The battle, in which the Vice Director was killed, was evidently the final one of the war.

The evidence as to the Big Nose attack mentioned, comes from the journal of Harmen Meyndertsz Van den Bogaert, a surgeon who was located at Fort Orange in 1634, in which year he started on a winter visit to the Mohawk and Oneida countries. This diary is mentioned later in this work. Van den Bogaert was employed by the West India Company and he was a prominent figure in the early days of the Albany district and New Netherland. There is an entry in this journal concerning the return march of Van den Bogaert and his two Dutch companions to Fort Orange. It reads: "We set forth an hour before daylight and, after marching by guess, two leagues, the savages pointed to a high mountain, where their castle stood nine years before. They had been driven out by the Mohicans and, after that, did not want to live there."

This entry was made on January 20, 1634, and "nine years before" would place the Big Nose attack in the war of 1626. The entry mentioned appears in Chapter 13, Volume 1, page 239, of the "History of the Mohawk Valley—Gateway to the West," by the author, published in 1925 by the S. J. Clarke Publishing Company.

Shortly after the Mohawk victory, near present Albany, Peter Barentsen arrived at Fort Orange in a trading shallop, or small schooner. As previously noted, Barentsen had charge of the fur trade along the Hudson River for the West India Company, south of the Fort Orange section. Barentsen immediately opened peace negotiations with the Mohawks, who justified their actions, in the speech of one of their chiefs, as follows: "We have done

nothing against the whites—why did they meddle with us? Had it been otherwise, this would not have happened from us." Barentsen, who seems to have been a clever man, soon succeeded in restoring the good relations, which had formerly existed between the Mohawks and the Dutch of Fort Orange. Minuit put Barentsen in charge of the post until conditions at Fort Orange again became normal. After that, Minuit sent Sebastian Jansen Krol from Manhattan to Fort Orange to act as the Vice Director and Commissary of the West India Company. Krol had been one of the "consolers of the sick," or readers of the scriptures, at Manhattan, and he probably continued to act in that capacity in his new location. Dirck Cornelissen Duyster was made assistant to Krol.

Soon after Krol arrived at Fort Orange, Barentsen sailed for Holland in the *Arms of Amsterdam*. This ship, which was commanded by Captain Adriaen Joris, carried a valuable cargo of furs and ship timber and brought to the members of the Amsterdam Chamber the news of the purchase of Manhattan Island and of the success and prosperity of the new settlers there, "whose wives had borne them children."

The war, between the Mohawks and the Mohicans, proved disastrous for the flourishing little colony at Fort Orange. The new settlers became panic stricken and made preparations to leave their position on the exposed frontier. Director General Minuit sent a boat up the Hudson River, which brought down nearly all the Walloons who had settled at Fort Orange and Esopus (Kingston). It is probable that a few Walloons remained at Fort Orange. A garrison of 16 soldiers was left at Fort Orange, under command of Krol and Duyster. Besides these, there were about 25 traders and others located at or near the post. In addition to these, there were probably several men who were employed by the West India Company and also probably some few pioneers who refused to be "scared out." When the war panic died down, it is evident that other settlers came to Fort Orange.

The departure of the Walloons, from the present Albany area, was important historically, inasmuch as the great majority of the settlers who later came into this district were Hollanders, who gave the Dutch character to early Albany, its neighborhood and the many settlements which were made by the Dutchmen, who went out from this colonization center, to settle the middle and

upper Hudson Valley and the eastern Mohawk Valley, prior to the English conquest in 1664.

It is practically impossible to determine the exact facts with relation to all the details of the settlement of any locality. Therefore, it is impossible to say just when other settlers came in and took up lands about Fort Orange, following the withdrawal of the Walloons.

It is also probable that some of the Dutch farmers remained. A map of 1630 shows about a dozen farms and farmhouses, located on both sides of the Hudson River, in present Albany and Rensselaer cities. These settlements must have been made prior to the purchases of the lands for the great manor of Rensselaerwyck, which were made in 1630 and 1637. The map mentioned would indicate a population in the present Albany-Rensselaer area of about 125 people in 1630—about 75 people on the farms and 50 people who were traders, soldiers, mechanics, etc., at or in the fort. In 1634, as previously noted, there was a surgeon, who was also a doctor, stationed at the fort. One may have been there in 1630. There is a tendency to underestimate rather than overestimate the population of the Albany area in its early days of settlement. In 1646, Jogues estimated the population at 100, which is ridiculous, as there were probably at least 300 people at and around Fort Orange in those days.

In the spring of 1628, the Mohicans renewed their attacks on the Mohawks. In the warfare which followed, the Mohawks were again victorious. So many of the Mohican warriors were killed or captured, that the remainder of the tribe left their Hudson River castles at "Greenbosch," and elsewhere, and fled to the "Fresh," or Connecticut, River country, where they established their final headquarters.

One of the great conflicts of the war of 1628 was fought at Upper Red Hook, on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9, and about 100 miles north of New York. Here the Mohawks decisively defeated the Mohicans in a bloody battle, and drove them into Connecticut. The Mohicans again attempted to conquer the Mohawks in 1669, when they were again defeated, as later noted in this work.

The first Dutch settlement was made at Greenbosch, present Rensselaer, in 1628, following the withdrawal of the Mohicans from their stockaded town at that place.

CHAPTER 22.

1629-1630. THE PATROON SYSTEM—RENSSELAERWYCK, PAVONIA.

1628. MINUIT DISMISSES DE RASIERES, WHO RETURNS TO HOLLAND AND PREPARES STATEMENT ON NEW NETHERLAND—PATROON SYSTEM PLANNED—1629. PROVISIONS OF THE CHARTER OF PRIVILEGES AND EXEMPTIONS—1630. KILLIAN VAN RENSSELAER PURCHASES LAND AND ESTABLISHES MANOR OF RENSSELAERWYCK—SENDS OVER DUTCH SETTLERS—ADDITIONAL PURCHASES IN 1637 INCREASES RENSSELAERWYCK TO 700,000 ACRES, COMPRISING GREAT PARTS OF PRESENT ALBANY, RENSSELAER AND COLUMBIA COUNTIES—1630. MICHAEL PAUW BUYS LANDS IN PRESENT JERSEY CITY AND SETS UP THE MANOR OF PAVONIA—DISSATISFACTION AMONG AMSTERDAM DIRECTORS OVER PATROONSHIPS—VAN RENSSELAER TAKES IN PARTNERS—LATER PHILIPSE, VANDER DONCK, VAN CORTLANDT, LIVINGSTON MANORS.

Because of differences which arose between Director General Minuit and Secretary De Rasieres, Minuit secured the dismissal of De Rasieres, who returned to Holland in 1628. He drew up a statement of affairs in New Netherland for his patron and uncle, Samuel Blommaert, one of the leading directors of the Amsterdam Chamber of the West India Company. The members of that body deliberated and decided upon a definite plan of colonization, which was the patroon system. This was to be furthered, according to the plans, by the establishment of separate and distinct colonies on the "North," or Hudson, and the "South," or Delaware, River. These colonies were to be like the lordships of Europe and England, but they were all to be under the authority of the West India Company. The latter organization was to retain control of the colony on Manhattan Island and of the fur trade. The Company was then engaged in its great maritime conflict with Spain, the conduct and profit of which occupied

its entire attention. Under these circumstances, the Company thought that colonization of the Hudson and Delaware rivers could be best carried on by private enterprise.

In order to attract private capitalists, the Chamber of Nineteen prepared a charter giving special privileges to members of the West India Company, who should plant colonies in New Netherland, excepting the Island of Manhattan.

The College of Nineteen adopted its patroonship plan in the summer of 1629, after a year's consideration. In the autumn, the States General issued several decrees for the government of the overseas possessions of the Dutch and also authorized the chambers of the West India Company to appoint a council of nine men who should have the general direction of Colonial affairs.

The plan of feudalism, on the Hudson, was one of the worst projects created by the Dutch company for the supposed purpose of developing its colony. It was one of the many handicaps which weighed upon New Netherland in the race for American Colonial supremacy. The patroon system was directly contrary to the tendency toward democracy in the Netherlands. While feudalism still held sway in the country sections of the Lowlands, the people of the towns were strongly imbued with the love of political and religious liberty and devoted to the idea of the development of popular government. The Dutch cities, to a large extent, dominated the politics of Holland and the doctrines of universal liberty, government by the people, and taxation only by consent of those taxed, were brought to New Netherland by emigrants from the Fatherland. These ideas found an early foothold on Manhattan Island and they have ever since distinguished the great mass of the so-called "common" people of the metropolis of the Western Hemisphere.

Considering that Holland had stood for the freedom of the people and had established that condition as a recognized principle, the creation of the feudal system on the banks of the Hudson is one of the strangest anomalies in the history of its valley. However, the States General were then following the course which has forever marked the rise and fall of all great popular governments. Having obtained freedom, the men who were then guiding the affairs of the Netherlands were becoming dazzled by the

possibilities of world imperialism and the glittering lure of untold wealth which followed in the train of Dutch naval triumphs and commercial success.

The patroon system set a precedent which was followed, during English provincial rule of New York, by huge grants of lands to favored individuals. The pioneer farmers of Colonial days preferred to locate on lands of their own in Pennsylvania and other colonies rather than become tenants on New York agricultural lands. Colonization in the Province of New York suffered accordingly.

The charter of "Privileges and Exemptions," under which patroonship came into being, offered Dutch emigrants as much free land as they could clear and improve. However, few farmers of Holland were able to furnish money, for the expenses of such emigration, from their own funds. Therefore, the West India Company offered a feudal domain in New Netherland to any member of the company who desired to finance such a principality.

Regarding the provisions of the charter, Brodhead says:

"The charter provided that any such member as should, within four years, plant a colony of fifty adults in any part of New Netherland, except the reserved island of Manhattan, should be acknowledged as a 'Patroon,' or feudal chief of the territory he might thus colonize. The lands, selected for each colony, might extend sixteen miles in length, if confined to one side of a navigable river, or eight miles on each side, if both banks were occupied; but they might run as far into the country 'as the situation of the occupiers will permit.' If a proportionate number of additional emigrants should be settled, the limits of the colony might be proportionately enlarged. Each patroon was promised a full title by inheritance, with 'venia testandi,' or the right to dispose of his estate by will. He was to have 'the chief command and lower jurisdictions' and the exclusive privilege of fishing, fowling and grinding within his own domain. In case any patroon 'should in time prosper so much as to found one or more cities,' he was to have 'power and authority to establish magistrates there.' The patroons were to furnish their colonies with 'proper instructions, in order that they may be ruled and governed conformably to the rule of government made or to be made by the

Assembly of the Nineteen.' From all judgments in the manorial courts of the patroons, for upwards of fifty guilders, an appeal might lie to the director and council in New Netherland. For the space of ten years, the colonists, under the patroons, were to be entirely free from 'customs, taxes, excise, imposts, or any other contributions.' But none of these colonists, 'either man or woman, son or daughter, man-servant or maid-servant,' could be allowed to leave the service of their patroons, during the period for which they might be bound to remain, except by the written consent of such patroon. The company pledged itself to do everything in its power to apprehend and deliver up every such colonist 'as shall leave the service of his patroon and enter into the service of another, or shall, contrary to his contract, leave his service.'

"The patroons themselves might trade all along the coast, from Florida to Newfoundland, provided the cargoes procured were brought to Manhattan, whence they might be sent to Holland, after paying a duty of five per cent to the company. The patroons were also promised the freedom of trade and traffic 'all along the coast of New Netherland and places circumjacent,' in every kind of merchandise, 'except beavers, otters, minks, and all sorts of peltry,' which trade the company reserved to itself. The fur trade, however, was permitted to the patroons, 'at such places where the company have no factories,' upon condition that all peltries thus procured should be brought to Manhattan and delivered to the director for shipment to Holland. Freedom of the fisheries was also promised. With the fish they caught, the patroons might trade to Italy and other neutral countries, paying to the company a duty of three guilders for every ton.

"All the colonists, whether independent or under patroons, were positively forbidden 'to make any woolen, linen or cotton cloth or to weave any stuffs there, on pain of being banished and as perjurers to be arbitrarily punished.' On the other hand, the company promised to protect and defend all the colonists, whether free or in service, 'against all outlandish and inlandish wars and powers.' The company likewise agreed 'to finish the fort on the Island of Manhattes and put it in a posture of defense without delay.' The company further promised to supply the colonists with 'as many blacks as they conveniently could,' but that they were not bound to do this 'for a longer time than they should think

proper.' The charter also distinctly provided that, 'whoever shall settle any colony out of the limits of Manhattes Island, shall be obliged to satisfy the Indians for the land they shall settle upon.' The patroons and colonists were likewise enjoined to make prompt provision for the support of 'a Minister and Schoolmaster, that thus the service of God and zeal for religion may not grow cool, and be neglected among them, and that they do, for the first, procure a Comforter of the Sick there.' Each separate colony might appoint a deputy to confer upon its affairs with the director and council of New Netherland, and every colony was required to make an annual and exact report of its situation to the authorities at Manhattan for transmission to the company at Amsterdam."

In commenting upon this charter of "Freedoms and Exemptions," Brodhead says:

"Yet, notwithstanding all the blemishes by which the selfishness of monopoly defaced the charter, it still had many redeeming features. It solemnly recognized the rights of the aboriginal red man and secured him satisfaction for his land. It invited the emigration of independent farmers by promising to every one a homestead. It provided for the good government of the subordinate colonies and for the right of appeal from the manorial courts. It promised protection and defense to all the colonists and it encouraged religion and learning by enjoining the support of churches and schools."

Brodhead also says: "The privileges, which the charter offered to patroons, were peculiarly attractive to the aristocratic sentiment, which grew with the acquisition of wealth in republican Holland." The same tendency has marked the growth of the republics of all time—the submergence of the principles of liberty, which gave the original successful government of the people great strength, and, with this fall, the rise of popular but sterile ideals and great wealth, which means the weakness and, generally, the eventual dissolution of republics. Such has been the lesson of history.

The foregoing details, regarding the origin of the patroon system in the Hudson Valley, are of importance, in this history, inasmuch as that system of feudalism bore such a prominent part in the early life on the Hudson River. It was particularly important in present Albany and Rensselaer counties, which, with part

of Columbia County, were embraced in the great manor of Rensselaerwyck. Other patroonships bore a vital part in their relation to the history of other Hudson Valley counties, as will be seen on later pages of this work.

The West India Company printed the charter of "Freedoms and Exemptions" in pamphlet form, in the summer of 1629, and it was circulated throughout the United Provinces. Two members of the Amsterdam chamber started to take advantage of the privileges of the charter before it had been completed. They were Samuel Blommaert and Samuel Godyn. They sent out two scouts to the South, or Delaware, River to secure lands. These emissaries bought lands in Delaware, for the two initial patroons, shortly before the adoption of the final charter. As previously noted, Blommaert was the uncle of Isaac De Rasieres, who had been secretary of the Province of New Netherland but who had left Manhattan because of differences with Minuit. De Rasieres wrote a description of the condition of the province and everything tends to indicate that his influence with Blommaert and his knowledge of the Dutch colony had much to do with the creation of the patroon system on the Hudson and elsewhere.

Killian Van Rensselaer was another Amsterdam director who was one of the first to become interested in the possibilities made available under the charter. He was destined to found the greatest patroonship on the Hudson River and also one of the most extensive individual land holdings in the thirteen original states.

Van Rensselaer was a diamond merchant and cutter of the metropolis of Holland. In 1630, he became interested in the territory adjacent to Fort Orange, where Sebastian Jansen Krol had been stationed for four years, as Vice Director and Commissary for the West India Company. Van Rensselaer commissioned Krol to purchase an extensive tract of land in the present Albany-Troy district.

Van Rensselaer's tract, as previously stated, was comprised in the present counties of Albany and Rensselaer and the northern part of Columbia County. On the west side of the Hudson River, it extended from Beeren (Bear's) Island, about 12 miles south of Albany, northward to Smack's Island and "stretching two

days' journey into the interior." It was purchased from the Indians by Krol on April 8, 1630.

Van Rensselaer immediately began plans for the settlement of his estate. A number of colonists were brought together, under the direction of Wolfert Gerritsen as "opper-bouwester," or overseer of farms. The expedition, which was well provided with farm implements and cattle, embarked on the ship *Eendraght*, or *Unity*, in command of Captain John Brouwer. The ship sailed on March 21 and reached Manhattan on May 24, 1630. The Dutch colonists and their cargo then sailed up the Hudson River to Fort Orange, where they were immediately settled and farming operations were started in "the colony of Rensselaerwyck." Wyck is a Dutch word meaning place, locality, or country, and the name means "Rensselaer's Land."

On July 27, 1630, Van Rensselaer's great estate was added to by purchases from the Indians by his special agent, Gillis Hossett. While sailing up the Hudson River, Hossett came to a place where men were felling trees, which were to be used as timber for the great ship, the *New Netherland*, which Director General Minuit was having built at Manhattan. This ship, a giant vessel for those days, is mentioned later. At the scene of the lumbering operations, several Indians had gathered. From these chiefs, Hossett purchased another tract of land "on the west side of the North River, south and north of the Fort Orange," and extending nearly to the "Monemin's castle," on an island in the sprouts of the Mohawk, now known as Van Schaick's or Haver's Island. The chief, Nawanemitt, owned the lands along the east side of the Hudson River, extending from Castle Island to the mouth of the Mohawk River. Van Rensselaer's agents brought, from this sachem, the lands "called Semeseeck, lying on the east side of the aforesaid river, opposite the Fort Orange, as well as above as below, and from Poetanock, the mill creek, northwards to Negagonce, being about twelve miles large measure."

Following these purchases, which were made on August 8, 1630, Fort Orange and the land immediately adjacent thereto, together with Schenectady trail, was all that then remained in the ownership and under the jurisdiction of the West India Company, in the present Albany neighborhood.

On August 13, these purchases were confirmed by formal patents signed by Director General Minuit and his council at Manhattan. In 1637, Van Rensselaer bought additional lands so that his estate finally consisted of a great area running along the Hudson River for a distance of twenty-four miles and extending inland for twenty-four miles from each river bank. This made Rensselaerwyck a manor twenty-four miles long and forty-eight miles wide, with an area of 700,000 acres. This was a region as large as many European principalities and it was destined to play a great part in the history of the Valley of the Hudson.

Michael Pauw was another director of the Amsterdam Chamber who took advantage, in 1630, of the land now available in New Netherland under the recently adopted charter. He first secured lands south of present Jersey City, which bore the Indian name of "Hobokan Hacking." A few days later, he purchased the whole of Staten Island. In the fall of 1630, Pauw bought the lands now comprised within the limits of Jersey City. Here the Indians came with their furs, on their way to Manhattan, directly opposite. Pauw gave the Latinized form of his name, "Pavonia," to the neighborhood.

There was much dissatisfaction among the other members of the West India Company, because two of its directors had secured such rich possessions "by the cunning tricks of merchants." To overcome this strong feeling, the original patroons were virtually obliged to receive other members of the company into partnership in their ventures. Kilian Van Rensselaer divided his great estate into five shares. He retained two of these, together with the title and honors of original patroon. One share was allotted to John De Laet, the historian; one to Samuel Blommaert, and one to Samuel Godyn. All of these were powerful directors of the Amsterdam Chamber. Blommaert had two partners in the ownership of his share of Rensselaerwyck. They were Adam Bissels and Touissant Moussart. By articles of association, the six men became co-directors of the "colonie" of Rensselaerwyck. However, in the board of management, Van Rensselaer controlled two votes and the other five directors two votes. The spelling, "colonie," was generally applied to Rensselaerwyck in the Seventeenth Century. It survives today in Colonie, the name of a township of Albany County, north of the City of Albany, which embraces territory of former Rensselaerwyck.

The patroonship, on the Delaware River, was also divided among nine directors. It was known as "Swaanendael," or "Swan Dale." In 1631, a Dutch colony of 30 people was planted near the present City of Lewiston in Delaware, which was the first European settlement in that state.

The two patroonships on the Hudson River—Rensselaerwyck and Pavonia—were followed by others, chief of which were Vander Donck's, Philipse's, Van Cortlandt's and Livingston's, which have later mention.

The granting of the three great patroonships—Rensselaerwyck, Pavonia and Swaanendael—created almost immediate friction among the directors of the West India Company. These tracts covered lands where the Indians came with their rich store of peltries. Although the West India Company created these separate colonies, they became rivals in a way to the enterprises of the parent organization. This was particularly true of Rensselaerwyck, where a powerful colony grew up which, at times, claimed practical independence with regard to the Director General at Manhattan, the capital of New Netherland. The peculiar situation thus created at Fort Orange will be noted in later accounts in this work and particularly in those which relate to the rule of Director General Peter Stuyvesant.

With all its faults, the charter of Freedoms and Exemptions had resulted in again colonizing the Fort Orange area with farmers in 1630 and, from that year, the development of the present Albany district went forward slowly but uninterruptedly. This was true because Fort Orange and later Albany were never destroyed or injured by any of the French and Indian raids or warfare which ensued during the Colonial history of the Hudson Valley.

CHAPTER 23.

1629-1633. MINUIT RECALLED— VAN TWILLER ARRIVES.

1629-1630. TRADE INCREASES—MANHATTAN AN IMPORTANT PORT ON THE ATLANTIC COAST—1631. LAUNCHING OF THE GREAT SHIP, "NEW NETHERLAND," AT MANHATTAN—VESSEL OF 600 TONS, WITH 30 CANNON, ONE OF LARGEST THEN AFLOAT —"NEW NETHERLAND" CARRIES CARGO FROM MANHATTAN TO HOLLAND—1631. MINUIT RECALLED TO HOLLAND, ENDING BEST COLONIAL ADMINISTRATION OF NEW NETHERLAND—1632. WOUTER VAN TWILLER APPOINTED DIRECTOR GENERAL, REACHES MANHATTAN IN 1633—SCHOOLMASTER ROELANDSEN AND DOMINIE BOGARDUS ARRIVE—1633. DE VRIES VISITS VIRGINIA'S GOVERNOR, BEGINNING FRIENDLY INTERCOLONIAL RELATIONS.

While rich possessions along the Hudson River were being handed to the patroons, Director General Minuit continued to occupy himself with the affairs of Manhattan and its thriving fur trade. After the trouble between Minuit and De Rasieres, which was followed by the latter's return to Holland, the position of secretary, and storekeeper or commissary, was given to Jan Van Remund, who held the offices for several years. The imports from Amsterdam amounted to 113,000 guilders in 1629 and 1630, while the exports from Manhattan to Holland reached the figure of 130,000 guilders. The capital of New Netherland had already become an important maritime center. Shipbuilding had reached a point where the vessels constructed on the island were famous in the ports of England and Europe. In 1631, the shipbuilders of Manhattan launched one of the greatest ships which then sailed the seas. It was called the *New Netherland*, of over 600 tons burden, and it carried thirty cannon. It was not until two centuries later that the shipwrights of Manhattan built as large a vessel as this mammoth ship of those early days. The *New Netherland* was loaded at Manhattan and sailed to Holland,

where it probably excited much interest, not only as a ship but in the little Dutch colony overseas where it was built.

As previously stated, a real quarrel had arisen in the Amsterdam Chamber of the West India Company, between the members who had secured patroonships in New Netherland and those who had not shared in these rich prizes. The enemies of the patroons now vented their wrath on Director Minuit, as he had given the patents following the purchases of the lands from the Indians. He was recalled from his directorship in 1631. Conrad Notelman was sent from Holland to Manhattan to act as "schout," or sheriff, in place of Lampo, and also to notify Minuit of his recall. The Director resigned his government into the hands of the Council, of whom Secretary Van Remund was the acting head.

Everything considered, Peter Minuit had made an excellent governor, and his recall was one of the many calamities which befell the colony on the shores of the Hudson. Criticism of the cost of building the ship, *New Netherland*, was also one of the causes for Minuit's dismissal. The director had built this great vessel largely as an advertisement for the colony, and it probably did attract much popular attention to the overseas location of the Dutch pioneers. Envy, jealousy and the bickerings of the Amsterdam directors, regarding the patroonships, caused the downfall of the best governor that the Dutch colony had during its fifty years of existence.

The quarrel of the Amsterdam directors, over the privileges in colonial possessions of which a few of them had taken advantage, was carried before the States General, where complaints were made against Director General Minuit, who had officially ratified the purchase of the patroons and who, it was charged, had favored them as against the company. Charles Burr Todd, in "The Story of the City of New York," thus summarizes Minuit's recall and eventful homeward journey, which had great bearing on the quarrel between England and Holland over the right to the territory then embraced in New Netherland:

"Minuit embarked for Holland in the spring of 1632 in the ship, *Eendracht* (*Union*)—which also carried five thousand beaver skins belonging to the company—leaving the affairs of the colony in the hands of his council. But his troubles were not yet over. His ship was driven by stress of weather into Plymouth,

England, and was seized by the authorities there on the charge that she had traded to and obtained her cargo in countries subject to the English King. Minuit promptly advised the directors and himself hurried up to London and laid the case before the Dutch ambassadors, by whom it was brought to the attention of King Charles. The ambassadors also wrote to the States General, asking them to send over all the documents proving the right of the Dutch to trade to New Netherland, 'as that right will undoubtedly be sharply disputed in England.' A long and spirited correspondence followed, in which the right of the two nations to the disputed territory was freely canvassed without accomplishing any result, the English government at last consenting to release the *Eendracht*, 'saving and without any prejudice to his Majesty's rights.' The seizure, however, had served to assert the claim of the English to New Netherland, which uninterrupted possession by the Dutch might have impaired."

Minuit's recall did not quiet the differences between the Amsterdam directors of the West India Company and the sovereign patroonships which had unwisely been created. These differences continued throughout the Dutch colonial occupation of New Netherland and the Valley of the Hudson.

In 1632, Peter De Vries sailed for the Dutch colony of Swaanendael on the South, or Delaware, River, where he was to become the patroon and commander. He found the settlement a blackened ruin and all the colonists slain. An Indian chief had stolen a tin plate bearing the arms of Holland. Gillis Hossett, who was in command of the colony, made such a fuss about this petty thievery that the savages killed the Indian culprit. His relatives turned their wrath against the whites and eventually induced the other Indians to fall on them and murder them all. De Vries was an unusual man of his time and one of the leading personages of New Netherland. He considered that retaliation against the savages would only produce a bloody war without any satisfactory results. Accordingly, he made peace with the astonished savages, which was ratified with presents of "duffels, bullets, hatchets, and Nuremburg toys." Thereafter, in sadness, De Vries sailed away to Manhattan.

New Netherland went for more than a year without a director. The powerful influence of Killian Van Rensselaer, the

patroon, asserted itself in the appointment of Wouter Van Twiller of Nieuwkirke, one of the clerks in the West India Company's warehouse at Amsterdam. Van Twiller had married a niece of Van Rensselaer and he had been employed by the patroon in shipping cattle to Rensselaerwyck. The new director was "incompetent, narrow-minded, irresolute and singularly deficient in knowledge of men." The time demanded a strong, efficient executive at the head of New Netherland and favoritism placed an incompetent there. All these mistakes of the Dutch executives tended to weaken the colony, make it easy prey for England —then followed the growth of the American national ideal in thirteen colonies—all English—and eventually the United States were born. All the mistakes of the Amsterdam directors had a direct bearing in creating the American nation.

Director General Van Twiller arrived in Manhattan in the early spring of 1633. He came over in the ship *Soutberg*, which captured a Spanish vessel, the *Saint Martin*, on the voyage. This prize was brought safely into the port of Manhattan. It is probable that Dominie Everardus Bogardus and Adam Roelandsen came over with Van Twiller. Bogardus succeeded Michaelius, as pastor of the Reformed Dutch Church of Manhattan, and Roelandsen was the schoolmaster of the Dutch colonial capital. Jacob Couwenhoven and Govert Loockermans also were passengers on the *Soutberg*. They were new employes of the company and later became prominent in the colony. The name Couwenhoven was later "Anglicized" Conover.

Secretary Van Remund and Schout Notelman continued in office under Van Twiller. The Director's Council consisted of Jacob Jansen Hesse, Martin Gerritsen, Andries Hudle and Jacques Bentyn. Cornelis Van Tienhoven was made bookkeeper at Fort Amsterdam. Michael Paulsen became commissary of Pauw's colony at Pavonia on the site of present Jersey City. Hans Jorissen Houten succeeded Sebastiaen Jansen Krol as Vice Director and Commissary at Fort Orange.

As far as trade went, the colony was in a prosperous condition. In 1632, the exports of furs alone from Manhattan exceeded 140,000 guilders. Van Twiller's sole Colonial policy, during his term of office from 1633 to 1642, seems to have been merely the maintenance and extension of the Company's com-

mercial monopoly. As a nephew of Van Rensselaer, he could also be depended upon to further the powerful patroon's interests. However, in spite of Van Twiller's incompetency and smallness of character, the colony of New Netherland progressed under his directorship.

It is interesting to note that, in 1633, the diplomatic and clever De Vries had opened friendly relations with the English governor, Sir John Harvey, at Jamestown. Harvey asserted the English king's right to New Netherland but the matter seems to have been amicably settled over a "Venice glass of sack." Harvey did not know of the Dutch location on the Delaware River before De Vries told him, but said that he had heard that the Dutch had a fort on "Hudson's River, as the English called it." Harvey said to De Vries, "There are lands enough—we should be good neighbors with each other. You will have no trouble from us—if only those of New England do not approach too near you, and dwell at a distance from you."

De Vries' visit to the capital of the English colony was the beginning of pleasant relations between the Virginians and the people of New Netherland and later New York. His mission was also of national interest, as it constituted the second approach toward friendly relations between the colonies on the Atlantic Coast of the present United States. The first overture, along these lines, had been made by Director General Minuit to Governor Bradford of New Plymouth, which had created friendly relations, for a time at least, between New Netherland and New England. It is not too much to say that the visits of De Rasieres to New Plymouth, in 1626, and of De Vries to Virginia, in 1633, were the first steps made toward uniting the colonies and toward the creation of the United States of America—and the initiative for these steps came from the Dutch colony of New Netherland, the great majority of whose people lived on the shores or at the mouth of the Hudson River. This is a historical fact which should have consideration by all future historians of the United States, who should give due recognition to the great part which the Hudson Valley has had in the making of America.

CHAPTER 24.

1633-1637. THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW NETHERLAND UNDER VAN TWILLER.

1633. VAN TWILLER SENDS JACOB VAN CURLER TO FINISH FORT GOOD HOPE ON THE CONNECTICUT RIVER, ON THE SITE OF PRESENT HARTFORD—1633. PENNSYLVANIA SETTLED BY DUTCH—ELKINS' ENGLISH SHIP "WILLIAM" SAILS UP HUDSON RIVER DESPITE VAN TWILLER'S PROTEST—DUTCH FORCE SENT TO FORT ORANGE COMPELS ELKINS TO WITHDRAW—INDIANS RESENT ELKINS' TREATMENT—WINDMILLS ERECTED AT MANHATTAN—MUCH BUILDING THERE—CHURCH BUILT—BUILDING AT FORT ORANGE AND PAVONIA—CONDITIONS AT RENSSELAERWYCK—MILLS ERECTED—DUTCH TRADERS OF FORT ORANGE SELL ARMS TO INDIANS—1634-1635. VAN DEN BOGAERT'S JOURNEY FROM FORT ORANGE TO THE MOHAWK AND ONEIDA COUNTRY—1637. ARENT VAN CURLER COMES TO RENSSELAERWYCK—VAN RENSSELAER ADDS GREAT TRACT TO HIS MANOR—AMSTERDAM CHAMBER BUYS PAVONIA—VAN TWILLER RECALLED.

As has been previously noted, the Mohicans fled to the Connecticut River, following their defeats by the Mohawks in the war of 1628. The Pequods claimed the new territory occupied by the Mohicans and three battles were fought between the two tribes which resulted in the rout of the latter. With the consent of Meautiny, chief of the Pequods, the Mohicans, under their chief, Sequeen, placed the remnant under the protection of the Dutch. Sequeen is stated to have been the sagamore of Pyquag, or Wethersfield, and to have been under Sowheag, the great sachem who was located at Mattabesick or Middletown. The Indian meaning of Connecticut is "Long River."

After the defeat of the Mohicans, Chief Sequeen made a visit to Boston in an effort to enlist the English colonists as his allies

but the New Englanders refused to be embroiled in the savage warfare.

In 1633, Director Van Twiller sent Jacob Van Curler, one of his commissaries, with six others, to finish Fort Good Hope on the present site of Hartford, Connecticut, and to buy the lands there from the Indians. Van Curler made the purchase and finished the redoubt which was located on the Connecticut River. It was outfitted with two cannon.

As the colony of Swaanendall on the Delaware River had been wiped out, steps were now taken by the Dutch to strengthen their colonization there. Arent Corssen was appointed commissary and sent to the South River Dutch colony and instructed to purchase lands there of the Indians. In 1633, Corssen purchased a site on the Schuylkill in the present State of Pennsylvania from its aboriginal owners. "The Indian title being thus secured, formal possession of Pennsylvania was taken by the Dutch who erected a trading house there and afterward a more considerable post, to which they gave the name of Fort Beversrede."

The Dutch were thus the first settlers of the present states of New York, New Jersey, Delaware, Connecticut and Pennsylvania which they considered as part of their colonial empire of New Netherland. These settlements take on added interest as nearly all the expeditions, which created this Dutch colonial empire, went out from Manhattan, at the mouth of the Hudson River.

Shortly after Director Van Twiller arrived at Manhattan, an English ship, the *William* entered the harbor. The "Koopman" on board this vessel was Jacob Eelkens, the former commissary at Fort Nassau, the Dutch fort at present Albany which preceded Fort Orange. He had been superseded by Krol in 1622. From present Albany, Eelkens had gone to England. About 1633, some London merchants engaged him to manage a fur trading expedition to New Netherland. Eelkens intended to go with the *William* to Fort Orange and to trade with the Indians there. Van Twiller objected but Eelkens replied that the territory was claimed by England and that he was in the English service. After a week's stay at Manhattan, the *William* weighed anchor and sailed up the Hudson. It was the first English ship to ascend the river. Van Twiller then started to play the fool. He opened a

cask of wine before his door and invited the people to drink to the Prince of Orange and to "assist in protecting him from the violence which the Englishman had committed." However, the people only laughed at him as they did frequently thereafter, either privately or publicly. The energetic De Vries happened to be at Manhattan and he incited the timid Director to take action. A few days afterward, "a pinnace, a caravel and a hoy," with Dutch soldiers on board, were sent to Fort Orange with an order for Eelkens and his ship to depart at once.

Eelkens had pitched a tent about a mile below Fort Orange and had been doing a lively business with the Indians for two weeks before the little Dutch army and navy arrived. Houten, the Dutch commissary, had put up a rival tent alongside that of Eelkens and the red men had their first experience of competition in trade at present Albany. When the little fleet arrived, its Dutch commander ordered the protesting Eelkens to go aboard his boat, while the Dutch soldiers reshipped his goods. The Dutch boats then accompanied the *William* to Fort Amsterdam and from there Eelkens was ordered to put to sea and he returned to England.

The attempt of a trader sent out by the English to traffic with the Indians on the North or Hudson River had failed but the Dutch retained their monopoly of the fur trade at some cost. The Indians were angered because Eelkens had been prevented from dealing with them. He had secured their friendship and virtual alliance by the council of Tawasentha in 1617 and they evidently had remained upon excellent terms with the enterprising and audacious Dutchman. It is also probable that he had offered the red men excellent terms for their furs. All in all, the Indians were in a bad humor as regards the Dutch of Fort Orange following the summary ousting of Eelkens. The savages vented their anger by stealing cattle from the settlers and several Dutchmen were also killed by the Indians before peace was restored at Fort Orange.

Manhattan now began to be visited by craft of other nations besides the Dutch. In 1633, vessels from Virginia, England and New England touched at Manhattan. The weak Van Twiller managed to get embroiled over several questions regarding these and other vessels. In this year, New England settlers located at

Windsor, Connecticut, which was within the limits claimed by the Dutch for the province of New Netherland.

Concerning the general condition of affairs in New Netherland and particularly on the banks of the Hudson in 1633 and 1634, Brodhead says:

"While important public questions had thus continued to try the inexperienced Van Twiller, from the day he landed at Manhattan, the domestic concerns of the province had required much of his attention. From the first, he seems to have formed an extravagant estimate of the wealth and resources of his commercial employers. They had authorized him to make large expenditures at the points where their fur trade centered and where their revenue officers were stationed. Fort Amsterdam, which had become dilapidated, was repaired and a guard-house and a barrack for the newly arrived soldiers was constructed within the ramparts at the cost of several thousand guilders. Three expensive wind mills were also erected but they were injudiciously placed so near the fort that the buildings within its walls frequently intercepted and turned off the south wind. Several brick and frame houses were built for the director and his officers, and, on the company's farm north of the fort, a dwelling house, brewery, boat-house and barn. Other smaller houses were built for the corporal, the smith, the cooper and the midwife; and the goats, which Harvey had sent from Virginia as a present to Van Twiller, were accommodated with an appropriate stable. The loft, in which the people had worshipped since 1626, was now replaced by a plain wooden building like a barn 'situate on the East River,' in what is now Broad Street, between Pearl and Bridge streets; and, near this 'old church,' a dwelling house and stable were erected for the use of 'the Domine.' In the Fatherland, the title of 'Domine' was familiarly given to clergymen and head masters of Latin schools. The phrase crossed the Atlantic with Michaelius and it has survived to the present day among the descendants of the Dutch colonists of New Netherland.

"Manhattan was also invested with the prerogative of 'Staple right,' one of those peculiar feudal institutions enjoyed by Dordrecht and other towns in Holland, in virtue of which all the merchandise passing up and down the rivers on which they were situated was subject to certain impost duties. The right was now

to be exercised at Manhattan and all vessels passing before Fort Amsterdam were to be obliged either to discharge their cargoes or pay the 'recognitions,' which the West India Company imposed.

"Besides the costly works which Van Twiller undertook at Manhattan, two houses were ordered to be built at Pavonia, another in Fort Nassau on the South River, and, at Fort Orange, 'an elegant large house with balustrades and eight small dwellings for the people.' All these enterprises were undertaken on account and at the expense of the company. The sound of the hammer was now constantly heard, but only at the points where the trade of the company was to be protected. No independent farmers attempted the cultivation of the soil. The agricultural improvement of the country was in the hands of the patroons.

"'The colonie of Rensselaerwyck, during the first three years after its settlement, had grown very gradually. A few farms, on the rich alluvion, yielded large returns. But most of the colonists clustered around the walls of the company's reserved Fort Orange. From the form of the river bank at this place, which was supposed to resemble a hoop net, the hamlet soon received the name of the 'Fuyck.' This was subsequently changed to Beverwyck, by which it was long known. At first, owing, perhaps, to the discord between the patroons and the company, its population increased very slowly and for several years it was esteemed at Manhattan a place of 'little consequence.' Arent Van Curler, a man of large benevolence and unsullied honor, was the patroon's commissary and secretary; Wolfert Gerritsen, superintendent of farms; and Jacob Albersten Planck, schout. Roeloff Jansen, Brandt Peelen, Martin Gerritsen, Maryn Adriaensen, Gerrit Teunissen, Cornelis Teunissen, Cornelis Maassen Van Buren, Jan Labbatie, and Jan Jansen Dam were among the most prominent of the pioneer colonists. Some of these afterward removing from Rensselaerwyck to Manhattan, became distinguished or notorious in the larger field of provincial politics."

On an old map of the colony of Rensselaerwyck, "Blommaert's Burg" is the title of a location at the mouth of Blommaert's Kill, now called Patroon's Creek. "DeLaet's Island" is the name given to what is now Van Rensselaer Island at Albany. "DeLaet's Burg" is the title of the site of the present City of Rensselaer. On

this map "Godyn's Islands" are located near the east shore below present Rensselaer. These names were probably complimentary designations placed on the map at the request of or to flatter the vanity of the partners in the great manor. They do not seem to have had any popular usage.

Although Brodhead speaks as though Van Curler was in present Albany in 1634, as a matter of fact he did not arrive until 1637. His name was "Arent" and not "Arendt." "Arent" is the Dutch equivalent of the English "Aaron."

Following the recall of Krol, Jorissen Houten became commissary at Fort Orange. The subsequent officials were: Harmen Meyndertsz Van den Bogaert, Arent Van Curler, Carl Van Brugge, Jan Labbatie, John Dyckman, John De Decker, John La Montagne.

Although the settlement of Beverwyck at Fort Orange and the colonization of Rensselaerwyck progressed much slower than the growth of Manhattan, nevertheless they did make steady progress. Although Beverwyck was a small hamlet, it early had the elements of a city and it soon took on a commercial importance out of all proportion to its size.

Wind, water and horse mills were probably built as early as 1631 around Fort Orange. There was a mill on Governor's Island in 1639 and a horse mill on the Rutten Kill in 1646. Sawmills and flour mills were also erected. A brewery was built in 1637 and, by that year, Beverwyck probably had all the small industries necessary to a frontier town and population center. Water commerce with Holland and the West Indies, by sloops and yachts, must have necessitated some sort of a shipyard which was probably located on the present site of Albany at an early date.

Although the regulations of the province made it a capital crime to sell firearms to the Indians, the Dutch of Beverwyck began to sell them to the Mohawks about 1640. Thus armed, these Iroquois warriors were more able to cope with their enemies and their conquests then went on more rapidly. The Indians allied with the French were armed with guns before the Mohawks received them.

There are indications that Martin Gerritsen was at least acting commissary at Fort Orange in 1634, although his name does not appear in the list of these officials. In the same year Harmen

Meyndertsz Van den Bogaert was the surgeon there. Trade in furs was dull and the French were drawing the traffic of the Indians to themselves to the injury of the Dutch factor at Fort Orange. This was made possible by a truce then existing between the Mohawks and the French. Van den Bogaert was a courageous, burly, fighting Hollander who readily undertook a midwinter trip into the Iroquois country with the object of offering those Indians inducements to continue their trade at Fort Orange. With two companions, Van den Bogaert went through the Mohawk country, visiting all the "castles" and ended his trip at Oneida Castle on upper Oneida Creek, near the site of present Munnsville. He left a very interesting and historically important journal, which is the earliest known description of the Mohawk Valley. This trip was made in December, 1634, and January 1635. It is the first known journey of an emissary from Fort Orange going to the Mohawk and Oneida castles and it was a midwinter trip which required great courage and hardihood. Any student of history who wishes to acquaint himself with the psychology of the Iroquois Indians of those early days, can learn more from Van den Bogaert's journal than from any other source. While the Dutch surgeon's journey was the first official mission of its kind of which we have knowledge, Dutch traders had been going into the Mohawk country for twenty years prior to Van den Bogaert's midwinter trip.

Arent Van Curler came to Rensselaerwyck in 1637 at the age of seventeen, when he acted as assistant commissary. He was a cousin of Van Rensselaer, the patroon, and he soon secured advancement to the position of Commissary-General or superintendent of the "colonie" of Rensselaerwyck and he also acted as colonial secretary until 1642 when he was succeeded by Anthony De Hooges. Van Curler was one of the greatest figures connected with the early history of the State of New York. He was the leading spirit in the settlement of Schenectady in 1661-1662 and he had a prominent part in Fort Orange, Beverwyck and Mohawk Valley affairs until his untimely death by drowning in 1667. Adriaen Vander Donck, founder of Yonkers, succeeded Planck as schout or sheriff at Fort Orange. He started a conspiracy against Van Curler which fortunately failed and Vander Donck was forced to quit the colony.

The first and chief dispute between the West India Company and the patroons whom it had created, was that over the fur trade. Both parties appealed to the States General to settle these difficulties. The patroons claimed the right to traffic in furs within the limits of their estates at points where the Company had no stations.

In 1635, the English took possession of the mouth of the Connecticut River at Kevit's Hook, which the Dutch had purchased of the Indians. The invaders tore down the arms of Holland at that point. When a Dutch sloop, from Manhattan, with Dutch soldiers on board attempted to land, the English soldiers mounted cannon on shore and the Hollanders sailed back to Van Twiller's capital. Van Twiller's inefficient and often ridiculous conduct of the affairs of New Netherland provoked popular contempt for himself and his weak government.

Dominie Bogardus described him as "a child of the devil" and threatened to denounce him from the pulpit. Officials of the colony openly criticised him. Van Dincklagen, the schout-fiscal or sheriff, was one of these. He was reputed to be "one of the most learned and accomplished men in the province." Van Twiller removed the sheriff from office but this action eventually resulted in the recall of the incompetent director.

In 1637, the "colonie" of Rensselaerwyck was in a growing and prosperous condition. A considerable number of new colonists from Holland emigrated to the present Albany district in the fall of 1636. Van Rensselaer now desired to enlarge his estate and, on April 13, 1637, his agents made another enormous purchase of land to add to his principality. This tract bore the Indian name of "Papsikaen." It was located on the east side of the Hudson River extending southward from Castle Island to Smack's Island. This purchase brought the total area of Van Rensselaer's estate up to 700,000 acres. In the same year, the directors of the Amsterdam chamber purchased the territorial rights of Michael Pauw to Pavonia or present Jersey City and Staten Island. After the sale of this property by its patroon, Rensselaerwyck became the only patroonship on the Hudson River for a time.

Despite the misgovernment of Director General Wouter Van Twiller, the province of New Netherland continued to progress

and increase its commerce, prosperity and population during his administration. The fur trade had steadily increased in spite of the loss of the Company's monopoly on the Connecticut River, because of the settlement of New Englanders in that eastern section of New Netherland. In 1635, the fur trade of the province amounted to 135,000 guilders. Manhattan was the center of a thriving maritime commerce. Dutch boats were seen everywhere off the Atlantic Coast. The West India Company had opened a profitable commerce with New England. Its vessels bore horses, cattle and sheep from Holland to New England. Provisions and live stock brought high prices in Massachusetts. The Dutch of Manhattan had also started profitable commerce with the West Indies.

In 1636, New England became involved in a war with the Pequods who were practically exterminated in a series of savage forays by white men in which Indian men, women and children were killed. The Indians made reprisals and carried off two white girls. They were ransomed not by the English but by a Dutch boat sent out by Van Twiller. The incompetent Director General should at least have credit for this act of humanity which he performed during his term of office.

Van Dincklagen, the sheriff of Manhattan, returned to Holland in 1636, where he severely criticised Van Twiller's administration in a memorial which he sent to the States General. He also attacked the conduct of Dominie Bogardus. After long consideration of the subject, the Amsterdam chamber decided to recall Van Twiller. In 1637, the directors appointed William Kieft as the new Director General, or governor, of New Netherland.

CHAPTER 25.

1638-1641. WILLIAM KIEFT, DIRECTOR GENERAL.

1638: WILLIAM KIEFT REPLACES WOUTER VAN TWILLER AS DIRECTOR GENERAL—FINDS CONDITIONS BAD AT MANHATTAN—TRADE DECLARED FREE IN NEW NETHERLAND—DE VRIES BRINGS COLONISTS FROM HOLLAND TO STATEN ISLAND—1639. KIEFT BUYS FROM INDIANS LARGE TRACTS OF LAND IN WESTCHESTER AND QUEENS COUNTIES.

During Director General Van Twiller's administration of the colony's affairs there had been no new locations of settlements along the Hudson River, but there had been comparatively large development of the areas already occupied by the Dutch pioneers and traders. There may, however, have been some scattered squatters here and there as that is a matter of which there is frequently no record. In fact, it must always be remembered that not all of the facts and figures of the early history of any of the areas comprised within the thirteen original states are recorded or have even legendary remembrance. Future research may show the location of pioneers along our river at points other than those now known to have been occupied by Hollanders or Walloons prior to 1638, when Kieft went into office.

When the new Director General assumed his duties, the settlements of New Netherland comprised those at Manhattan, present Jersey City, present Brooklyn, Staten Island and those in the present Albany neighborhood, which is comprised within the limits of present Albany and Rensselaer counties. During the Mohawk-Mohican war of 1626, the Esopus settlement had been abandoned when the few Walloon pioneers were conveyed to Manhattan at the order of Director General Minuit. In 1638, there were no settlements along the great stretch of the Hudson River between Manhattan and the outpost locations of the Dutch pioneers of Rensselaerwyck, nearly 150 miles northward. Director General Kieft's administration was to see the beginnings

of such settlements, about or before the year 1640, in the Tappan, Dobbs Ferry, Tarrytown, Kinderhook and Waterford neighborhoods.

Kieft's administration was detrimental in its results as regards the province of New Netherland and its lower Hudson River settlements. His brutality brought on an Indian war which, for a time, threatened the very existence of the Dutch province. Where Van Twiller was foolish and incompetent, Kieft was aggressive, brutal, rapacious, inconsiderate and seemingly vicious in action.

The new Director General reached Manhattan on March 28, 1638, in the good ship *Herring*. He found that Van Twiller's administration had badly affected general conditions on Manhattan. Fort Amsterdam was dilapidated, only one of the three windmills was in a condition to operate, the five farms of the company were untenanted. However, Van Twiller's own affairs had prospered during his term of office and there seems to have been considerable adverse criticism regarding the contrasting condition of the late governor's affairs and those of the province which he had so poorly administered.

Kieft organized a new council with Johannes La Montagne, a Huguenot physician, as counselor. Cornelis Van Tienhoven became provincial secretary, and Ulrich Lupold, a German, continued as schout or sheriff. The council managed all the general affairs of the province and was the supreme court of justice. Kieft, by proclamations and regulations, attempted to remedy all the abuses caused by Van Twiller's lax rule. Only the colonial secretary was empowered to write public or official papers. Tobacco, for the first time, became subject to an excise impost. However, in spite of all of the many official proclamations, abuses continued. To add to Kieft's troubles a Swedish colony was planted in present Delaware which was claimed by the Dutch as part of New Netherland. The expedition was in command of Peter Minuit, the first Director General or governor of the Dutch province.

In 1638, by proclamation, the Amsterdam chamber virtually declared trade free in New Netherland. This was done in reply to the constant complaints regarding the company's management of the colony and to encourage populating the country. The Am-

sterdam directors offered free passage to the province for those who wished to emigrate from Holland. In 1638, DeVries sailed from Holland with a number of colonists who were located on his new colony on Staten Island, where he had secured lands during Van Twiller's administration. Other immigrants soon followed from the Fatherland and settlers began to come in from Virginia and New England. In 1639, Director General Kieft bought of the Indians a great area of land comprising nearly all of present Queens County and also a large section along the Hudson River in which the site of present Yonkers was included. Numerous grants of land were soon made to the new settlers, who came in ever increasing numbers. Kieft showed much executive ability, at least in the early part of his administration and the affairs of the colony soon took order after the bungling of Van Twiller's term of office.

Affairs on the Connecticut soon took on an ominous aspect for the Dutch claimants of the territory. The English colonists increased in numbers and, in 1640 they denied the right of the Dutch to any of the lands around their Fort Good Hope at present Hartford. The ensuing years were to see the gradual drawing in of the outer boundaries of New Netherland until it finally comprised the Hudson and eastern Mohawk valleys, western Long Island and northeastern New Jersey at the time of the conquest by the English in 1664. At that time by far the greater part of the population of the province was comprised within the limits of the lower and middle Hudson Valley, including the Island of Manhattan. The English rapidly encroached upon the eastern limits of New Netherland comprised within present Connecticut and eastern Long Island. They even attempted to plant a colony at Schout's Bay in present Queens County, but these trespassers were promptly arrested by the provincial secretary, the sheriff and twenty Dutch soldiers who brought them to Manhattan and the attempted settlement was broken up.

CHAPTER 26.

1640. VOYAGE OF DE VRIES UP THE HUDSON—MANHATTAN TO FORT ORANGE.

1640. APRIL 15, DAVID PIETERSEN DE VRIES SETS SAIL FROM MANHATTAN FOR FORT ORANGE—VISITS TAPPAN AND WESTCHESTER SHORE—PURCHASES TAPPAN FROM INDIANS—APRIL 27, REACHES ESOPUS—VISITS BRANDT PEELEN'S FERTILE FARM AT PRESENT ALBANY—DRIVEN TO THE HIGH GROUND BY SPRING FLOOD—AT FORT ORANGE—VISITS COHOES FALLS—DE VRIES CONCLUDED THAT THE HUDSON'S SHORES WERE UNSUITED FOR SETTLEMENT.

DeVries' colony on Staten Island did not prosper and he settled himself on the Hudson River shore of Manhattan Island, about five miles above Fort Amsterdam. In 1640, he decided to explore the shores of the North River. On the 15th of April, 1640, he set sail from Manhattan in his own sloop and, in the evening, arrived at "Tappan," landing at what is now Piermont. Going inland, along or through the valley of the Sparkill, he came to present Tappan, about two miles west of the Hudson. Here "He found a beautiful valley under the mountains of about five hundred acres in extent and through which ran a fine stream offering attractive mill seats." This was the valley of the Sparkill, which runs through the present little village of Tappan. DeVries was so delighted with this beautiful spot that he purchased it from the Indians. Evidently the name of Tappan was then given to the entire region comprised within the southern part of present Rockland County. Continuing his explorations, DeVries sailed across the broad Tappan Zee to Weckquaesgeek, which is now comprised within the town of Greenburg in Westchester County. The shipbuilders of Manhattan went to that country "to procure green masts."

On April 26, 1640, DeVries sailed over Haverstraw Bay, which is about four miles in width and comprises the widest sec-

tion of the Hudson River. The sloop entered the Highlands at noon, which DeVries described as "prodigiously high, stony mountains," where the river, at its narrowest part, was "not over five or six hundred paces wide." About sunset, the boat reached the Danskammer, north of present Newburgh, where a party of Indians were having a riotous time. As the attitude of the savages was threatening, the sloop's company stood on guard.

On April 27, the sloop reached "Esoopes," on the present site of Kingston, "where a creek emptied and the Indians had cleared some corn land." In the evening, the sloop reached Catskill, where Indians were busy planting corn. Up to this point, DeVries wrote that the banks of the river were "all stony and hilly" and he judged them to be "unfit for dwellings." He found many Indians fishing as he passed Beeren Island and noted the fine, fertile meadows along the river which he wrote were "good for cultivation." In the late afternoon, the sloop anchored at Brandt Peelen's farmhouse on Castle Island, "which lies a little below Fort Orange." Peelen invited DeVries to be his guest. He showed his fertile river flatlands and astonished the Dutch "explorer" by telling him that he had raised fine crops of wheat on them for eleven successive seasons without fertilizing or fallowing the soil. During DeVries' stay at Peelen's, a spring freshet came down the Hudson on April 30th, which proved to be the highest flood that had occurred since that of 1617, when Fort Nassau was swept away. The freshet lasted three days, during which the settlers took to the woods where they "pitched tents and kindled great fires." The flood waters even ran into Fort Orange on the present site of Albany.

DeVries next visited the fort and Rensselaerwyck. He wrote that the patroons had all "the farms around and every peasant was a trader." DeVries noted the fertility of the country and the great abundance of game, particularly deer and wild turkeys. Beverwyck, in 1640, was already a village and the "colonie" was in a flourishing condition.

In the days of the Dutch colony, the falls of the Mohawk River at Cohoes formed one of the great natural wonders of the Atlantic seaboard and it was visited by many travelers who came to Fort Orange or later Albany. On his voyage up the Hudson, DeVries visited this cataract, which is as interesting today as it

was in that far-off time. He made the trip from Fort Orange through the forests and over the Indian trail accompanied by several Indians. He wrote that the Cohoes Falls seemed to him "as high as a church" and the waters as they fell were "as clear as crystal and as fresh as milk." Near the falls, DeVries found "Broer Cornelis," then the frontier colonist of New Netherland. His full name was Cornelis Antonissen Van Slyck and he had a very considerable part in the history of the province at that time, which is mentioned later.

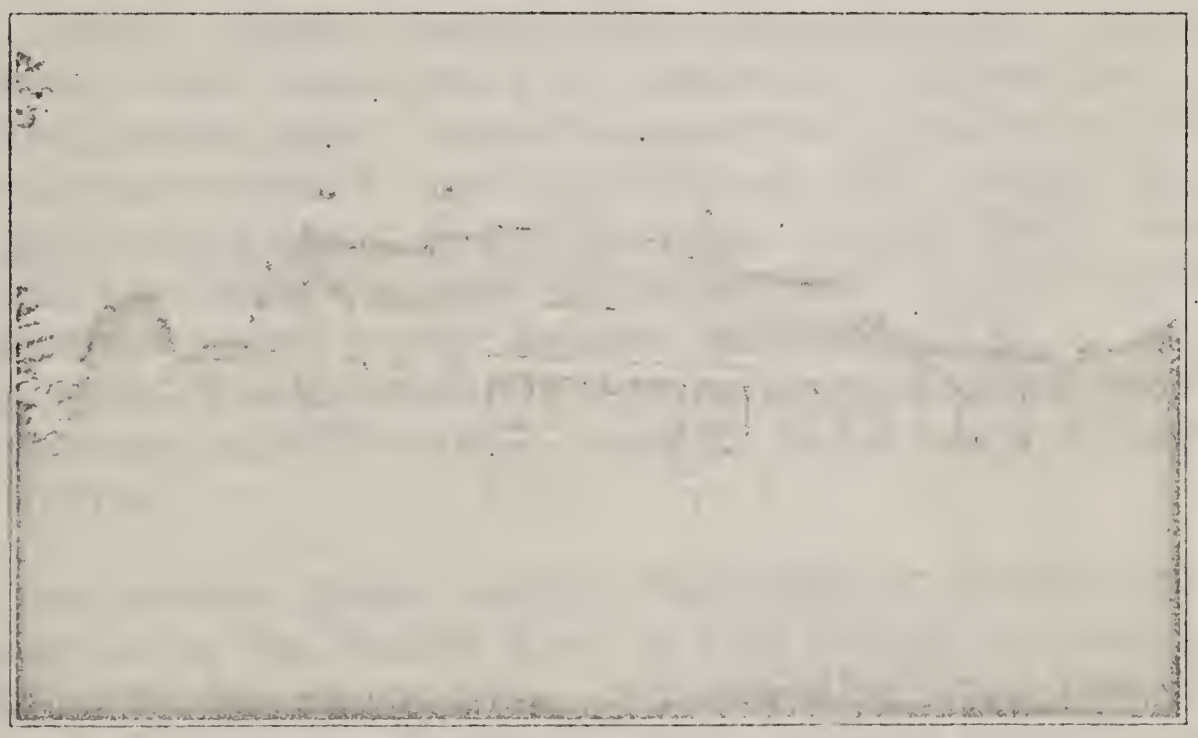
Regarding the Mohawks, DeVries said that they were a brave people who had "brought the other tribes under contribution." They had enormous dugouts, made of the entire trunks of trees, which could hold eighteen or twenty men. Regarding the sale of guns and ammunition to the Indians, DeVries said: "But he was a rascal who first sold them and showed their use, for they said it was the Devil and did not dare to touch them. There used to be but one Indian who went about with a gun, whom they called 'Kallebacker.' "

After staying at present Albany for six weeks, DeVries parted with the commander at Fort Orange and sailed rapidly down the river. In the evening, he anchored at Esopus (Kingston), where, he said, "a creek empties and there is some corn land where some Indians live." There could have been no redoubt with a garrison at present Kingston when DeVries sailed by nor any white settlers or the keen and discerning Dutchman would have noted their presence, as he probably landed at this point.

DeVries set sail at sunrise of the next day which was May 15, 1640. Passing the Danskammer, he saw "many Indians a fishing." His boat sailed across the broad waters of present Newburgh Bay, through the majestic Highlands and over the wide lake-like section of the Hudson River, which is embraced in Peekskill and Haverstraw bays and the Tappan Zee. At Tappan, at the lower end of the Zee, he anchored for the night. As previously noted, this was at present Piermont and DeVries may have worked his boat into the mouth of the Sparkill to lay up for the night. The next morning, with a strong ebb tide and a strong northwest wind, DeVries sailed his sloop over the twenty-five miles of water between Tappan and Fort Amsterdam in three hours. He had made the voyage, from present Albany to present

New York, in a little over two daytime sailing days, which was very good time for that period.

DeVries' conclusion regarding the Hudson River was that it was "little fitted to be peopled, for he had seen only here and there a little corn land, which the Indians had prepared by removing the stones." However, as an experienced mariner, he had noted that "the tide runs up the whole river to Fort Orange" and that fact may have brought to his mind, as it might have to others, the great possibilities of Hudson River commerce. DeVries published his journal of his Hudson River voyage of 1640 in the year 1655, after his return to Holland.



MANSION ON THE BOSTON POST ROAD, U. S. ROUTE 1,
WESTCHESTER COUNTY

CHAPTER 27.

1640-1650. FORT ORANGE, BEVERWYCK AND RENSSELAERWYCK.

CONDITIONS OF COLONISTS' LIFE—LUXURIANCE OF VEGETATION AND ABUNDANCE OF GAME—A KNIFE BUYS A DEER FROM INDIANS—EUROPEAN GOODS HIGH IN PRICE—INCREASE OF IMMIGRATION FROM HOLLAND—COMFORTABLE FARMHOUSES BUILT BY PATROON—MONOPOLIES AND PRIVILEGES OF PATROON—1642. DOMINIE MEGAPOLENSIS ARRIVES—FIRST CHURCH BUILT—FORT CRALO BUILT AT GREENBOSCH (RENSSELAER)—1643. COLONY SHIP, "ARMS OF MANHATTAN," HELD UP AT MANHATTAN—PRESENT ALBANY-RENSSELAER AREA ESCAPES RAVAGES OF WAR RAGING IN LOWER HUDSON VALLEY—1644. FORT BUILT ON BEEREN ISLAND—RENSSELAERWYCK CLAIMS STAPLE RIGHT—FATHER JOGUES ESCAPES FROM MOHAWKS AT FORT ORANGE—JOGUES' DESCRIPTION OF BEVERWYCK—1646. DEATH OF FIRST PATROON—1648. ANDRIES JANSZ, FIRST SCHOOLMASTER.

The previous chapter covered the voyage of DeVries from Manhattan up the Hudson River to Fort Orange, in 1640, together with his return trip. In commenting upon DeVries' journal of his voyage, Brodhead writes as follows regarding the settlers at Fort Orange and in the "colonie" of Rensselaerwyck in 1640, together with some quotations from the journal:

"The colonists lived amid nature's richest profusion. In the forests, by the waterside and on the islands, grew a rank abundance of nuts and plums; the hills were covered with thickets of blackberries; on the flatlands, near the rivers, wild strawberries came up so plentifully that the people went there to 'lie down and eat them.' Vines covered with grapes, 'as good and sweet as in Holland,' climbed over the loftiest trees. Deer abounded in the forests, in harvest time and autumn, 'as fat as any Holland deer can be.' Enormous wild turkeys and myriads of partridges,

pheasants and pigeons, roosted in the neighboring woods. Sometimes, the turkeys and deer came down to the houses and the hog-pens of the colonists to feed, and a stag was frequently sold by the Indians for 'a loaf of bread or a knife or even for a tobacco pipe.' The river produced the finest fish, and there was a 'great plenty of sturgeon,' which, at that time, the 'Christians did not make use of but the Indians ate them greedily.' Flax and hemp grew spontaneously, peltries and hides were brought in great quantities by the savages and sold for trifles. 'The land was well provisioned with all the necessaries of life.' European manufactured goods, cloths, woolens and linens were alone scarce and dear.

"The colonie of Rensselaerwyck was the only successful patroonship under the charter of 1629, and the marvelous crops of corn, which Peelen raised on his fertile island, were, for many years, the wonder of New Netherland." Constant emigration from Holland rapidly increased its population and comfortable farm-houses, many of them built at the patroon's expense, arose at various points. Beverwyck was already a village. Had the colonists contented themselves with agriculture, instead of seeking to become traders as well, the prosperity of the frontier settlement of the province would have been assured.

"Arent Van Curler continued to act as the commissary of the colonie and the representative of the patroon. His jurisdiction included all the territory, on both sides of the North River between Beeren Island and the mouth of the Mohawk, except the precinct of Fort Orange. This post, which was the property of the West India Company when the first purchases in this neighborhood were made by Van Rensselaer, was always occupied by a small garrison, commanded by officers under the immediate direction of the provincial authorities at Manhattan.

"According to the Charter of Privileges, the patroon was invested with the 'chief command and lower jurisdiction' within his colonie. In person, or by deputy, he might administer justice and pronounce and execute sentences for all degrees of crime. He had the power of life and death. He could decide civil suits. The right of appeal to the director and council at Manhattan was, indeed, nominally reserved to the colonists, but the right was virtually annulled by the obligation under which all the colonists

upon the manor were obliged to come, not to appeal from the judgment of the manorial tribunals. The civil law, the ordinances of the Province of Holland and of the United Netherlands and the edicts of the West India Company and of the director and council at Manhattan, were the legal code of New Netherland. * * * The laws and customs of the colonie (Rensselaerwyck) partook largely of the spirit of feudalism. The terms of the leases under which the farms were held required a return of all produce and of this produce, the patroon had the pre-emptive right. An annual ground rent was levied on each house erected. When property changed hands, the patroon was privileged to have the first offer and, if he declined to purchase, he was entitled to a certain proportion of the consideration money received. He was the legal heir of all intestates. Without his leave, none could fish or hunt within the manor. At the patroon's mills alone, could the colonists grind their corn.

"The greater part of the colonists were farmers and their servants, who had been sent out from Holland at the patroon's expense. For these farmers, lands were set apart, houses erected and stock and agricultural implements provided. Besides these substantial encouragements, small advances of money and supplies of clothing were frequently furnished to the emigrant on his leaving Holland. These advances the colonist was to repay after his arrival with a large interest. The capital of the patroon was freely and liberally expended, and the emigrant began his frontier toil with more ample resources and with greater facilities than the first tenants of a wilderness generally enjoy. Yet the scheme of feudal colonization was not a happy one either for emigrant or patroon. Apart from the political evils which it entailed, it necessarily introduced a system of accounts which encouraged deceit and tempted to dishonesty. The payments of the colonists began to fall in arrear, the patroon's revenue suffered, and he felt himself obliged, before long, to instruct his colonial officers that there was 'no latitude to be given to the conscience or discretion of the boors, but the law to be stringently enforced."

The foregoing details regarding Fort Orange and Rensselaerwyck are given because of the later great historical and commercial importance of the area involved and also because Beverwyck

eventually became the capital of the State of New York. The details regarding the patroon, his colony, and his colonists are also important as they give the reader an understanding of the beginnings of human activities in present Albany and Rensselaer counties and also furnish information which will explain later historical developments.

DeVries' journal gives an interesting picture of the Hudson River in 1640 and of the flourishing colony in the present Albany neighborhood. Previous pages have also shown the development of Manhattan into a real maritime and commercial center. It should be realized that, even at that early year, present New York and present Albany had already started their important civic careers and that the colony of New Netherland had all the elements to make the active and progressive state of New York. The following chapters of the story of the Hudson Valley will be covered with less detail than the former ones, which have had elaborate consideration for a work of this scope. This has been done because the beginnings of things, including cities and states, are of vital importance. The few hundreds of pioneers who constituted the population of the Valley of the Hudson in 1640 had more to do with dictating the course of empire along its shores than the millions who came after them. The great State of New York today has grown from the small beginnings which were in evidence along the Hudson River in the year 1640.

The story of the colony of Rensselaerwyck and that of Fort Orange is here carried along to the Indian war which Kieft provoked and which raged from 1643 until 1645.

The year 1642 was marked in Beverwyck by two events of great religious importance. The first was the arrival of Domine Johannes Megapolensis, the first regularly ordained clergyman to be established at present Albany. The second was the capture of Father Isaac Jogues, the French Jesuit priest, and his torture and imprisonment in the lower Mohawk castle of Osseruenon at present Auriesville. This was the stronghold of the Turtle clan of the Mohawk tribe. Van Curler made a journey to this castle and endeavored to secure the release of the priest. Although the Indians received the Dutch envoy with friendship they refused to give up their captive. On his return trip, Van Curler examined the site of Schenectady with much interest and it is probable that

281-282



FORT CRALO (1642), RENSSELAER
Oldest known house in New York State

he conceived the idea of later planting a settlement there because of this visit during his journey into the Indian country. On his return to Beyerwyck, this great early American wrote concerning the Valley of the Mohawk as follows: "A half day's journey from the colonie, on the Mohawk River, there lies the most beautiful land that the eye of man ever beheld."

Following his arrival at present Albany, a small wooden church was built for Domine Megapolensis, who became one of the great men of New Netherland. He removed to Manhattan in 1648. In 1643, Megapolensis began to preach to the Indians and he even "converted" some of the Mohawks, although it seems to have been a difficult task. Michaelius at Manhattan, evidently did some missionary work among the Indians and Megapolensis was evidently the second minister to engage in that religious work. John Eliot did not begin his missionary work among the Massachusetts Indians until 1646. In 1644 at Greenbosch (Rensselaer) Domine Megapolensis wrote his famous description of the Mohawk Indians. That he had the friendship and confidence of the Mohawks is clearly shown in this historic paper, which gives a remarkable insight into the character and manners of these Iroquois Indians.

In 1642, Fort Cralo was built at Greenbosch (the present city of Rensselaer) opposite Fort Orange. It was constructed of brick and is probably the oldest house now standing in New York State. It is now a historical museum under the care of the Daughters of the American Revolution. It was built to serve as the east shore manor house of Rensselaerwyck. It was here that Dr. Schuckburgh, an English Army surgeon, originated the first "Yankee Doodle" lines in derision of the Colonial militia. This was during the French and Indian War. The Revolutionary American soldiers arranged new words to fit the ancient tune and "Yankee Doodle" was practically our only national air of the War for Independence.

The colony of Rensselaerwyck and the Dutch authorities at Manhattan now began to have frequent clashes as the patroons of the colony claimed practical independence of the Director General. The colony ship, *Arms of Rensselaerwyck*, was held up at Manhattan in 1643 and its cargo requisitioned by Kieft. In 1644, Nicholas Koorn, commander of Rensselaerwyck, built a fort

on Beeren Island in the Hudson River at the southernmost limits of the colony. It mounted several cannon and commanded the river. The colony then practically assumed the function of an independent province by claiming a "staple right" or duty of five guilders ($2.00) on every trading craft passing up or down the river, which was obliged to lower its colors in honor of Rensselaerwyck, which then asserted a sovereign jurisdiction over a navigable waterway against all persons save and except the servants of the West India Company. Koorn fired on one vessel, whose skipper refused to salute. Then the wordy war of Rensselaerwyck as against Manhattan waged fast and furious until 1650, when the States General decided against Rensselaerwyck, which formerly claimed the very ground on which Fort Orange was built. This decision confirmed the title of the land of the West India Company and assured it the ownership of the territory within a cannon shot of the fort and the trail across the patroon's estate which led to the Mohawk River at present Schenectady.

During the fierce Indian war which raged about Manhattan, caused by Kieft's diabolical massacres of Indians at Manhattan and Pavonia in 1643, the colony of Rensselaerwyck remained undisturbed. The pioneers in present Albany and Rensselaer counties were spared these horrors because of their remote position and their friendly relations with the neighboring Indians and particularly the Mohawks, with whom Van Curler made a treaty in 1645.

Van Curler was director of the colony of Rensselaerwyck when a party of Mohawks brought the captive Jesuit priest, Father Jogues to Fort Orange in 1644. Van Curler and Domine Megapolensis aided Jogues to escape to France on a Dutch ship. In 1646, Jogues wrote an account of his escape together with some description of Beverwyck and Manhattan. His references to "the colony" are evidently to that area that was in view from the house in which he lay concealed during his stay at Beverwyck. His figure of "about a hundred persons" there is probably low, particularly for the number of houses. Of the fort, he wrote "A miserable little fort, called Fort Orange, built of logs."

Regarding Fort Orange, Jogues wrote: "The colony is composed of about a hundred persons, who reside in some twenty-

five or thirty houses built along the river as each found most convenient. In the principal house, lives the patroon's agent; the minister has his apart in which service is performed. * * * All their houses are of boards and thatched, with no mason work except the chimneys. The forest furnishing many large pines, they make boards by means of their mills, which they have here for the purpose. They found some pieces of ground all ready which the savages have already cleared and in which they sow oats and wheat for beer, and, for their horses, of which they have great numbers. There is little land fit for tillage being hemmed in by hills which are poor soil. This obliges them to separate and they already occupy two or three leagues of country. Trade is free to all. This gives the Indians all things cheap, each of the Hollanders outbidding his neighbor and being satisfied providing he can gain some little profit.

"This settlement is not more than twenty leagues from the Agniehronons (Mohawks) who can be reached by land or water as the (Mohawk) river on which the Iroquois lie, falls into that (the Hudson) which passes by the Dutch, but there are many low rapids and a fall of a short half league, where the canoe must be carried."

Jogues' figures, as to population, are evidently low. It is probable that the population of Beverwyck, in 1644, was over 150 and that of the colony of Rensselaerwyck was over 300 people. We have the names of settlers who came to Rensselaerwyck from 1630 to 1646. The adult males alone who settled there in that period numbered 175. A number of them brought their wives and children, as in the case of Dominie Megapolensis.

Jogues was also in error as to all the houses being of wood, inasmuch as Fort Cralo had been built of brick in 1642, at Greenbush opposite Fort Orange. There may have been other brick houses in the present Albany section. Although Jogues was a keen observer and his account is most interesting, the close confinement in which he remained, while hidden at present Albany prior to his sailing, precluded absolute accuracy in his statements.

Kilian Van Rensselaer, the first patroon died in 1646. His son, Johannes Van Rensselaer, a minor, succeeded him while Johannes Van Wely and ex-Director General Wouter Van Twiller were the executors. They appointed Barent Van Schlech-

tenhorst, of Nieuwkerke in Gelderland, as director of the colony. He came to Rensselaerwyck in 1647. Andries Jansz became the first schoolmaster at Beverwyck in 1648.

In 1641, Adriaen Vander Donck, a man of considerable learning, went from Breda in Holland to Rensselaerwyck, when he was appointed schout fiscal or sheriff of the colony. He had taken a lease of the westerly half of Castle Island, which was known as "Welysburg." It adjoined the fertile farm of Brandt Peelen, to which reference has been previously made. As noted later, Vander Donck was the founder of Yonkers.

Reverend Doctor Johannes Megapolensis, who came to Fort Orange in 1643, was a learned clergyman who belonged to the classis of Alkemaer in Holland. The patroon paid the expense of the transportation of the minister and his family and gave him a salary of 1,000 guilders for the first year and 1,200 guilders for the three successive years. The classis of Amsterdam gave the Reformed Dutch clergyman the call to preach at Rensselaerwyck and the Amsterdam chamber approved the call. A number of new colonists embarked with the Dominie on the ship *Houttuyn*, which reached Manhattan in August of 1642.

The patroon now required that all the colonists, except the farmers and tobacco planters, should live near each other so as to form a "Kerck-buurte," or church neighborhood. This was located near Beaver's Creek, where a ferry was established to communicate with Greenbosch or Greenbush on the opposite shore. This ferry brought the colonists on both sides of the river in much closer connection and united the settled community which was then located on both banks of the Hudson in the present Albany-Rensselaer neighborhood.

The church was not built until 1643 but the houses which were to surround it were planned at once. The dwelling of Maryn Adriaensen, who was then removing to Manhattan, was bought for a parsonage and Megapolensis began his duties. He was loved and revered by the colonists and he soon became a power in the community and his advice was constantly sought by Van Curler, the director of the colony.

The foregoing chapter brings the story of the Fort Orange and Rensselaerwyck area up to the end of Kieft's term and to the accession of Director General Petrus Stuyvesant in 1647.

CHAPTER 28.

1641-1643. KIEFT'S ADMINISTRATION.

TRADERS SUPPLY MOHAWKS WITH 400 GUNS—THEY SUBDUE MANY OTHER INDIAN TRIBES—DUTCH SOLDIERS ATTACK RARITAN INDIANS—1640. NEW CHARTER FOR LANDED COLONISTS—IMPORT AND EXPORT DUTIES—DE VRIES STARTS TAPPAN COLONY—WAR WITH RARITANS—1641. TROUBLE WITH WECKQUAESGEEKS—MEETING OF "TWELVE MEN"—1642. REQUESTS FOR POPULAR RIGHTS—ANNE HUTCHINSON SETTLES AT NEW ROCHELLE—ENGLISH SETTLE ON LONG ISLAND SOUND—KIEFT BUILDS STONE HOTEL—1643. STONE CHURCH BUILT IN FORT AMSTERDAM—SETTLEMENTS ON THE HUDSON RIVER.

Up to 1640, the relations of the colonists at Manhattan with the neighboring Indians had been generally friendly. Freedom of trade, including that with the red men, promoted excesses and even the farmers began to neglect agriculture for traffic in furs with the savages. "To push their trade, to the best advantage, the colonists separated themselves from each other and settled their abodes 'far in the interior of the country.' Presently they began to allure the savages to their houses 'by excessive familiarity and treating.' This soon brought them into contempt with the Indians, who, not being always used with impartiality, naturally became jealous." The traffic in arms was also a source of much trouble with the aborigines. The colonists of Rensselaerwyck and "free traders" from Holland had supplied the Mohawks with guns and ammunition for four hundred warriors. This was in defiance of the fact that the West India Company had declared contraband the trade in fire arms. Thus armed, the Mohawks became a powerful war force with regard to the small populations of New Netherland and New France. This fact had an important effect on the history of North America, because it tended to limit the aggressions of the French of Canada who were constantly extending their empire. With their firearms, the Mo-

hawks and the other tribes of the Five Nations soon conquered or virtually exterminated the adjacent Indian tribes and they even reduced the Hudson River Indians to a condition of vassalage. This incensed the River Indians against the Dutch of Manhattan, where the Director General and the other provincial authorities virtually prevented the sale of guns and ammunition to the neighboring Indian tribes.

As the River Indians became inimical to the Dutch, Director Kieft began to apprehend that Manhattan might be attacked. He accordingly ordered all the residents of the provincial capital to provide themselves with guns, and at the sound of three shots, to hasten fully equipped to a designated assembly place.

A petty crime perpetrated by Dutch servants of the company soon brought on trouble. These whites stole pigs from the De Vries estate on Staten Island. The blame was unjustly placed on the innocent Raritan Indians who lived about twenty miles inland. Director Kieft sent twenty soldiers under Van Tienhoven, the provincial secretary to punish the Indians unless they made reparation for their supposed "crime." Several of the Indians were killed and their crops were destroyed. Thus the brutal Kieft laid the basis for a bloody war which later desolated New Netherland. He further alienated the neighboring Indians by an attempt to levy contributions on them, which was virtually a form of taxation.

On July 19, 1640, a new charter of "Freedoms and Exemptions" was agreed upon by the company which was intended to do away with the differences then existing between that body and the patroons. By this instrument, the charter of 1629 was materially amended. All citizens of the Netherlands, whether members of the company or not were to be allowed to secure lands and form colonies which, however, were to be reduced in size. Instead of four Dutch miles, they were limited to one Dutch mile along the shores of a navigable river or bay and an extent of one mile into the interior. Besides the patroons, another class of proprietors was recognized. Anyone, who should transport five adults besides himself to New Netherland, was to be considered a "master or colonist," and he was thereby entitled to occupy 200 acres of land with the privilege of hunting and fishing. The company exacted a duty of ten per cent on all goods exported to

New Netherland and of five per cent on all cargoes sent out of Manhattan, except peltries. The latter class of goods paid an export duty of ten per cent. One of the greatest reforms instituted by the amended charter was that the prohibition of manufacturing within the province was repealed.

With the adoption of the new charter, New Netherland began to progress more rapidly. On December 1, 1640, De Vries began the erection of buildings and the actual colonization of the estate which he had bought from the Indians at Tappan in the previous spring. He named the place "Vriesendael" and located there for several years.

In 1641, another colony was established near that of De Vries. This was founded by Myndert Myndertsen Vander Horst of Utrecht. The new colony extended from the "Achter Cul" or Newark Bay, northward toward Tappan and included the lower valley of the Hackensack River. The main settlement was close to the town of the Hackensack Indians. Here Vander Horst's people began the erection of a post which was garrisoned by a few soldiers.

The "colonies" of De Vries and Vander Horst formed the beginnings of the settlement of the Hackensack Valley and of present Rockland County in New York and present Bergen County, New Jersey. Although both settlements were abandoned in the Indian war of 1643-1645, the settlements were later resumed and they formed the nuclei of one of the most important regions of Dutch settlement. There are more old stone Dutch farmhouses in these two counties at the present time than in any similar area in New York or New Jersey.

At the time of the Revolution, the Hackensack Valley was thickly settled and highly developed agriculturally by its Dutch farmers. The settlement of Vriesendael can be included in the general Hackensack Valley Colonial area, although it was not directly in that watershed basin. Tappan lies in the valley of the Sparkill which is a small stream running into the Hudson through a pass in the Palisade range. However, only a small elevation of land separates this little valley from that of the Hackensack River which flows into Newark Bay.

Another colony was established in 1641 by Cornelis Melyn who located at the Narrows on Staten Island. Evidently the set-

tlement of that area was progressing as Director General Kieft had already located a distillery and buckskin factory on the island. As the attitude of the Staten Island Indians became unfriendly, Kieft ordered a small redoubt to be built on one of the headlands of the Narrows. This post was garrisoned by Dutch soldiers who were ordered to raise a flag whenever a boat arrived in the lower bay. This was the beginning of the watching for ships and relaying their names to New York, which has continued to the present day.

Although Kieft was brutal in his attitude toward the Indians, he was most active in administering the affairs of the province. However, much of his attention was given to the petty rather than the larger affairs of the time. Regulations were made affecting the currency of the province, which consisted almost entirely of sewan or wampum. This was in circulation among the whites as well as the Indians. Of all the sewan in use in the Northeastern United States, that of Manhattan and Long Island was esteemed the best and most valuable.

The unjust cruelties and wanton murder of Raritan Indians by Dutch soldiers soon had a result which should have been anticipated. In revenge for their wrongs, a war party of the Raritans attacked De Vries' plantation on Staten Island, killed four of the settlers and burned the dwelling and tobacco house. Kieft issued one of his numerous proclamations in which he offered a bounty of ten fathoms of wampum for the head of every Raritan Indian which was brought to him. Incited by these bounties, some of the River Indians now attacked the Raritans. Kieft's dull brutality was now bearing results, for he had already sowed the seeds for a general Indian war.

More than twenty years prior to 1641, an old Indian chief had been wantonly murdered in Manhattan by several Dutchmen. He was a chief of the Weckquaesgeek tribe and, at the time of this outrage, he was accompanied by his young nephew, who then swore revenge on the Dutch for the brutal act of several of their number. The boy had now grown to be a man and, in retribution for his uncle's slaying, he killed Claes Smits, a wheelwright, who was building a house at Deutel Bay, on Manhattan Island. Kieft demanded the murderer of Smits from the Weckquaesgeek, but the sachem refused to give him up, saying that he had but executed justice after the Indian fashion. Kieft then

sent soldiers to arrest the young Indian, but they returned empty-handed. Kieft wanted to start a general Indian war at once, but a considerable part of the people were unfriendly to him and asserted that he wanted to start a war in order to make it easy for him to make "a wrong reckoning with the company."

With brutal cunning, Kieft now tried to get popular support for his vicious plans. This movement, however, had its good side, as it was the feeble beginning of representative government in New York State. The Director General summoned all the masters and heads of families in Manhattan and its neighborhood district to meet at Fort Amsterdam. There the question of reprisals for the murder of Smits was put up to them. The people assembled chose "Twelve Select Men" to consider the propositions put forward by Kieft. They were all Hollanders or emigrants from Holland and the names of this first representative assembly were: Jacques Bentyn, Maryn Adriaensen, Jan Jansen Dam, Hendrick Jansen, David Pietersen De Vries, Jacob Stoeffelsen, Abram Molenaar, Frederik Lubbertsen, Jochem Pietersen Kuyter, Gerrit Dircksen, George Rappelje, Abram Planck. De Vries was chosen president of "The Twelve Men," as they were known.

The general answer to Kieft's questions by "The Twelve Men" was that they were in favor of a war expedition against the Weckquaesgeeks, if three demands for the murderer were not finally complied with and after due preparations. De Vries seems to have looked with apprehension on the war and would have delayed it until the province was stronger in men. He contended that the Dutch were scattered all about the country and their cattle running wild in the woods. This would indicate that there were settlements of Dutch pioneers on the Hudson shores in present Westchester County as early as 1641, when the war was considered. The Amsterdam Chamber of the West India Company was strongly opposed to war with the Indians.

In 1641, Peter Minuit died at Fort Christina, the Swedish settlement on the Delaware River, of which he had been in command three years. He was the best director general that New Netherland had in its fifty years of existence, and had he been continued in control of the province, there is no doubt but that its condition would have been far better in 1641 than it was under Kieft. Besides the Swedish settlements on the Delaware

River, the Director General was now worried by English settlements in the same locality, which was, of course, within the limits of the territory claimed for New Netherland.

At the beginning of 1642, Kieft again attempted to secure the consent of the Twelve Men for his proposed Indian war, and, on January 21, they convened and gave assent to a war expedition against the Weckquaesgeeks, as that tribe had not given up the murderer of Smits. In addition to authorizing the war, the Twelve Men now made demands for popular reforms and real representation in the government of the province. They asked for a colonial council of at least five members and that four councilmen should be elected by the people. Judicial proceedings were demanded before a full board and an annual muster of the militia was requested. All freemen should be allowed to visit vessels arriving from abroad and they should also have the right to trade freely with neighboring colonies. These were the main demands of the people's representatives, and to them Director Kieft responded in evasive fashion. On February 18, he dissolved the Twelve Men. At the same time he forbade the calling of any public assembly except at his own orders.

In March, Kieft sent out an expedition of 80 Dutch soldiers into present Westchester County against the Weckquaesgeeks. The party lost its way and were compelled to return. The Indians were now alarmed and asked for peace. A treaty was made between the red men and the Dutch at the house of Jonas Bronck on the Bronx River. The Indians agreed to surrender the murderer of Smits but they never did so.

In 1642, Anne Hutchinson, fleeing from the religious persecutions of New England, settled at Pelham Neck, near New Rochelle. In the same year, thirty-five English families settled themselves on Long Island Sound in present Bronx County. Many English refugees now came to Manhattan seeking relief from the religious persecutions of New England, and many of them settled on Long Island. Added to these newcomers, were many fugitive servants who fled from New England and Virginia to Manhattan.

Trade and intercourse between the provinces brought many tourists to Manhattan and, to give them accommodations, Kieft had built "a fine hotel of stone," at the expense of the company.

This original New York hotel was built on the water side at what was later known as Coenties Slip.

As the little city grew, the need of a new church became apparent. De Vries, while dining with Kieft, broached the subject. The progressive Dutchman said: "The first thing they built in New England, after their dwelling houses, was a fine church. We should do the like. We have fine oak wood, good mountain stone, and excellent lime which we burn from oyster shells—much better than our lime in Holland."

The money for the church was raised by popular subscription. It was located within the fort and built of stone and was 72 feet long, 50 feet wide and 16 feet high. The building was completed in 1643 and it stood until 1790, when the fort was demolished to make way for the Government House, which stood on Bowling Green where the United States Customs House is now located.

The foregoing chapter brings the history of New Netherland and the Valley of the Hudson up to the fateful year of 1643, when the general Indian war broke out in the lower valley. The general prosperity of the province had improved with each passing year and its population had shown a rapid increase during Kieft's regime, and, at the beginning of 1643, it probably amounted to 2,000 people. Everything indicated even more rapid progress in the near future, but these rosy prospects were soon to be dulled by a bloody and probably unnecessary war from which it took the province some years to recover.

Recent years had shown the Dutch spreading out into the wilderness and it is probable that a number of them located as squatters. Although the early dates of such settlements are frequently uncertain, it is known or estimated that, at the beginning of 1643, there were, in addition to the towns of Manhattan and Beverwyck and the colony of Rensselaerwyck, settlements at the following locations on the shores of the Hudson or its adjacent waters: Staten Island, Long Island, Westchester County, both on the shores of Long Island Sound and on the banks of the Hudson at Dobbs Ferry and Tarrytown; at Tappan, Kinderhook, Waterford and northward on the Hudson probably to Stillwater.

Many of these new settlements were to be imperilled or destroyed by the war which now threatened.

CHAPTER 29.

1643-1645. INDIAN WAR IN LOWER HUDSON VALLEY.

1643. INDIAN WAR PANIC IN NEW NETHERLAND AND NEW ENGLAND—MOHAWK WAR PARTY PASSES DOWN HUDSON RIVER COLLECTING TRIBUTE—RIVER INDIANS FLEE TO MANHATTAN AND PAVONIA—KIEFT ORDERS MASSACRE OF INDIAN REFUGEES BY DUTCH SOLDIERS—TERRIBLE SCENES—80 INDIAN WOMEN, CHILDREN AND MEN KILLED AT PAVONIA AND 40 AT MANHATTAN, AS THEY SLEPT—REPRISALS BY INDIANS ON OUTLYING COLONISTS—KIEFT BECOMES UNPOPULAR—DEVRIES STARTS PEACE MOVEMENT—FRESH OUTBREAKS—ASSEMBLY OF "EIGHT MEN"—ANNE HUTCHINSON KILLED AT NEW ROCHELLE—GENERAL INDIAN ATTACKS—TAPPAN DESTROYED—1644. FATHER JOGUES SAILS FOR FRANCE—EXPEDITIONS AGAINST INDIANS—TWO INDIAN CAPTIVES TORTURED TO DEATH AT MANHATTAN BEFORE KIEFT—1645. PEACE MADE AT FORT AMSTERDAM—KIEFT VISITS FORT ORANGE—CONDUCTS INDIAN PEACE COUNCIL.

At the beginning of 1643, there was virtually an Indian war panic both in New England and in New Netherland. "The wildest stories were circulated among the fireside gossips at Manhattan. The outlying Indians were accused of setting fire to the powder of the Dutch wherever they could find it and of attempting to poison and bewitch the director. Anxiety and terror already pervaded the defenseless hamlets around Fort Amsterdam, when an event occurred which precipitated open hostilities and nearly annihilated the rising hopes of the West India Company."

Trouble was first started by a Hackensack Indian who murdered a Dutch colonist at that place because some Dutchmen had stolen his beaver skin coat while the savage was drunk. While Kieft was demanding retribution, more serious trouble followed. In February, 1643, a band of 80 Mohawk warriors armed with guns, came from their castles on the Mohawk, down the Hudson

River to demand tribute of the Tappan and Weckquaesgeek Indians. The River tribes fled before this small band of the dreaded "Man-Eaters." The Iroquois killed 70 victims and took many women and children captive. About 500 River Indians gathered at DeVries' house at Tappan and asked protection. The next day, they joined the Hackensacks who had gathered at Pavonia to the number of about 1,000. Some of them fled to Manhattan and took refuge at Corlaer's Bouwery, where a few Rockaway Indians had lived for some time. Many Westchester Indians also fled to Manhattan.

The Dutch now had an opportunity to protect and befriend the neighboring River Indians who had become estranged. No use, however, was made of this unusual chance. Instead, the advocates of an Indian war now saw their chance and soon made the most of it. On February 22, 1643, they made an appeal to Kieft to start hostilities. Bogardus, DeVries, La Montagne and others protested against such rashness. Kieft, however, resolved to attack the Indian refugees both at Pavonia and at Manhattan, and he sent out parties of soldiers to fall on the red men at present Jersey City, while a party of volunteers marched on Corlaer's Hook to strike at the unfortunate Indians who were gathered there.

The Dutch soldiers, under Sergeant Rodolf, attacked the sleeping Indians at Pavonia at midnight of February 25, 1643, and a general massacre followed in which men, women and children were murdered indiscriminately. "Mangled victims, seeking safety in the thickets, were driven into the river and parents, rushing to save their children, whom the soldiers had thrown into the stream, were driven back into the waters and drowned before the eyes of their unrelenting murderers." Eighty Indians were slaughtered at Pavonia.

On the same night, the Dutch volunteers attacked the Weckquaesgeek Indians at Corlaer's Hook and murdered 40 of them as they slept. In the morning, the "victorious" war parties returned to Manhattan. Those from Pavonia, had 30 prisoners and carried the bloody heads of many victims. The savage Kieft royally welcomed them and many of the people joined in the celebration of these easily accomplished wholesale murders. The two massacres, by Dutchmen of Manhattan, form one of the

blackest pages in the Colonial history of the United States. Outrages against the friendly Indians of Long Island made those red men enemies of the Dutch and the Indian tribes on all sides of Manhattan were now arrayed against the Dutch colonists. The North River Indians became frenzied with hate and killed outlying settlers and burned their properties whenever they had the opportunity. Eleven tribes now rose against the Dutch. Those of the colonists, who escaped with their lives, now fled to Fort Amsterdam. In order to prevent an exodus of the settlers, Kieft had to make all the men soldiers to serve with pay for two months. However, many people returned to Holland. In all these days of danger, the brutal Kieft had not ventured outside the walls of New Amsterdam. The Indian reprisals made a change in the minds of the fickle public which had made a holiday over the sight of the bloody heads of the Indians brought in by their Dutch murderers. Some of the burghers talked about taking the law into their own hands and sending Kieft back to Holland. One of the citizens fired on Kieft but missed him and was shot down by the sentinel of the fort.

Through the efforts of DeVries, peace was made with the Long Island Indians on March 25, 1643. At the request of Kieft, several sachems of the Long Island tribes went to the Hackensack and Tappan Indians and, through their coöperation, the Director General made peace with the River Indians on April 22, 1643. However, the younger braves of the tribes were not satisfied with the treaties which seemed a small recompense for the wholesale murders of human beings by the Dutch. A chief of the Tappan tribe warned DeVries of this feeling but, when he gave the same message to Kieft, the dull but brutal director, refused to admit the danger of a renewal of war.

Prompted largely by a desire to present a united front against the Dutch, the French and the Indians, the colonies of New England met at Boston and, on May 19, 1643, agreed upon Articles of Confederation and formed the United Colonies of New England. Kieft, soon after, opened communication with this Union, in which he protested against the infringement of Dutch territorial rights on the Connecticut.

War between the Naragansetts and the Mohicans broke out in the Connecticut Valley in the summer of 1643. In August,

the warriors of the lower River tribes again started hostilities against the Dutch. Pacham, the chief of the Tankitekes, who resided near Haverstraw, visited the Wappingers and advocated a general massacre of the Dutch colonists. On August 7, 1643, a shallop sailed down the Hudson from Fort Orange with a cargo of 400 beaver skins. River Indians captured and plundered the boat and killed one of the crew. The savages later captured two other boats in the river. A fourth boat was also attacked but the Dutchmen were now on their guard and they killed six Indians in the scrimmage which followed. Nine of the Dutch settlers were killed and a woman and two children were made prisoners. Other Dutch settlers were slain about this time by Indians who approached their remote farmhouses with professions of friendship.

News of the fresh outbreak of war soon reached Manhattan. The crisis again promoted the cause of popular government on the banks of the Hudson, as Kieft felt impelled to call another council of the people. The populace now elected "Eight Men" to represent them with the Director General. The names of this second assembly, of present New York State, were: Jochem Pietersen Kuyter, Jan Jansen Dam, Barent Dircksen, Abraham Pietersen, Isaac Allerton, Thomas Hall, Gerrit Wolfertsen, Cornelis Melyn. Kuyter and Dam were members of the previous board of Twelve Men. Melyn was a patroon of a manor on Staten Island which has been previously mentioned. Two Englishmen were on the board of Eight Men—Allerton and Hall. Allerton was a prominent merchant of Manhattan. He came over on the *Mayflower* but removed to Manhattan in 1638. Hall was a deserter from the Holmes party on the South or Delaware River in 1635. The presence of these two men of English birth on the second body of popular representatives, indicated the very considerable influx of people from the other colonies, who were then coming into New Netherland and the Valley of the Hudson in increasing numbers. However, comparatively few of these people penetrated to the neighborhood of Fort Orange and the colony of Rensselaerwyck, which seems to have remained distinctively Dutch up to the time of the English conquest in 1664.

On September 15, 1643, two days after their election, the Eight Men met at the call of Kieft "to consider the critical cir-

cumstances of the country." Before they took up any other business, Dam was expelled from the board by the votes of the other seven representatives. Dam had signed a letter to Kieft demanding an attack on the Indians and this letter, with several signatures, was Kieft's excuse for the butcheries of Indians at Pavonia and Manhattan. Dam protested in vain. This incident showed that these horrible massacres now were generally disapproved by the Dutch colonists of Manhattan. The remaining seven men chose Jan Evertsen Bout of Pavonia, as the eighth member to succeed Dam. The Eight Men then resolved upon retaliatory hostilities against the River Indians and the preservation of peace with the Long Island tribes.

A military force was now organized and drilled. Among them, were 50 Englishmen, who were under the command of Captain John Underhill, who served in the Pequod war. Dissatisfied with the religious despotism of New England, he had come to New Netherland and settled at Stamford, then within the bounds of that province.

The Weckquaesgeeks now went on the warpath and killed 18 settlers in present Westchester County and the Bronx. They killed Anne Hutchinson, at her home on Pelham Neck, and murdered all her family except an eight-year-old granddaughter, whom they carried into captivity. They destroyed the settlement at Vredeland, killed a number of the settlers and burned their buildings.

The Long Island Indians now attacked the Gravesend settlement. Forty brave men put up such a defense that the fierce savage attackers had to retire. Lady Deborah Moody had settled at Gravesend on Long Island by Kieft's special permission. She had also been a victim of the vicious religious persecutions of New England. Her special "sin" had been "the error of denying baptism to infants."

Maspeth on Long Island was attacked and the settlers driven from their homes, their property burned and several of them killed. The settlers fled to Manhattan where Doughty, a lay preacher who was the founder of the Maspeth colony, acted as minister for the English residents.

The next attack was made by the Hackensack Indians on Vander Horst's plantation at Hackensack. The garrison con-

sisted of five soldiers, a man and five boys. They fought off the savages until they were able to make their escape in a boat. Three or four soldiers at Pavonia were the next victims of the war. The Indians now again had possession of practically all the country around Manhattan and of the shores of the Hudson up as far as Beeren Island, the southern outpost of the colony of Rensselaerwyck. Only the Dutch settlements in the present counties of Albany, Rensselaer, Columbia and Saratoga, remained undisturbed by this bloody warfare, which was caused by the brutality of one man—Director General Kieft. To combat the host of savage warriors about them, the Dutch of Manhattan only had a force of 300 men. Two hundred of these were Dutch militia, 50 were soldiers of the garrison and 50 were Englishmen.

Probably the best citizen Manhattan had known up to that date now left the province. This was David Pietersen DeVries. He was an intelligent, brave, progressive, constructive civilized man, who had opposed Kieft's savage brutalities from the first. He was admired and respected by the Indians and he had risked his life on many missions among them. Although the red men had spared his life, they had burned his plantation at Tappan, which he had founded with high hopes of its becoming a rich settlement. Utterly disgusted with Kieft's brutality and stupidity which had caused the near ruin of the province, DeVries now decided to leave a country where stupidity and cruelty ruled supreme. DeVries had protested to Kieft against all his official outrages and he left him with the words: "The murders, in which you have shed so much innocent blood will yet be avenged upon your own head."

The Eight Men now met, with utter ruin seemingly impending. Cornelis Melyn of Staten Island, was the presiding officer. They appealed directly to the College of Nineteen of the West India Company, stating the critical condition in which the province was now situated. They also sent a strong appeal for aid to the States General. These letters are most important historically as they formed the first appeal of popular representatives of the people of New Netherland to the home country authorities. The addresses were not made alone to the chamber of the West India Company but to the Dutch congress—the

States General—which was a body founded on similar principles as the Eight Men themselves—representative government. In fact, the appeal of the Eight Men to the States General constituted a message from one legislative assembly to another and in this it was most important from the point of view of the progress of liberty in the New World, in present New York State and on the shores of the Hudson River. Popular government was to have long and serious setbacks, in the provinces of New Netherland and later New York, but its general progress was continuous. The councils of Twelve Men and Eight Men formed its first beginnings in present New York State.

The vessel which bore these two letters to Holland also carried Father Isaac Jogues, who had escaped from his Mohawk captors while on a visit to Fort Orange. As mentioned elsewhere, he was concealed there for six weeks, following his escape, and put aboard a ship bound for Holland at the earliest opportunity. The Mohawks were enraged at his escape but they were appeased by the presentation of gifts by the colonial authorities amounting to three hundred livres ($60).

Kieft hospitably received Father Jogues on his arrival at Manhattan, where he remained for a month during which time he made careful observations regarding the colonial capital, which was then suffering the effects of the savage warfare which raged all about the tiny city. Jogues noted that Fort Amsterdam was without ditches and that its ramparts of earth had crumbled away but they "were beginning to face the gates and bastions with stone." He saw that there were four or five hundred men on the island of Manhattan. They were "of different sects and nations" and "speaking eighteen different languages." The mechanics lived under the walls of the fort but the other people lived in the straggling town and were open to attack by the Indians. No religious exercises, other than the Calvinistic, were carried on but, wrote Jogues, "this is not observed, for there are in the colony, besides the Calvinists, Catholics, English, Puritans, Lutherans, Anabaptists, here called Mennonists," etc. Jogues pitied the Dutch for their sufferings and losses which already amounted to 200,000 livres ($40,000). Kieft supplied Jogues with "black clothes and all things necessary" and gave

him free passage to Europe. The French priest left Manhattan with grateful feelings toward the kindly Dutch. His description of Manhattan indicates the beginnings of present tolerant and cosmopolitan New York City.

The military force at Fort Amsterdam was put under strict discipline in the fall of 1643. An expedition of mixed troops, Dutch and English, was sent against the Staten Island Indians, without any result except the commandeering of a supply of much needed corn. Expeditions were also sent against the Connecticut Indians near Stamford and the Weckquaesgeeks of present Westchester County. These Indians fled before the advancing Dutch who burned two of their three "castles."

In spite of the war, a number of English colonists located at Hempstead on Long Island in 1644. A Dutch expedition against the Canarsee Indians resulted in the killing of 120 red men. Two Indian prisoners were taken to Manhattan where they were frightfully wounded and mutilated by the Dutch and English soldiers. One prisoner dropped dead as the result of his wounds and the other was beheaded by Kieft's orders to end his sufferings. Some of the Indian women, who had been taken as prisoners in Westchester County, who saw the bloody spectacle, cried "Shame, shame," and said that such savage cruelty had never been seen or heard in their own tribe.

When the reader is appalled by some of the Indian atrocities of our Colonial and Revolutionary history, he or she would do well to remember that the cult of kindness is modern and that the white settlers were guilty of as horrible deeds as the so-called "savages." There were no massacres by the Indians which exceeded in ferocity those by the Dutch at Pavonia and Manhattan in 1643.

The Dutch on Manhattan were in distress for want of clothes as well as other things. Early in 1644, a ship arrived at the town which had been sent by the patroon to his colony at Rensselaerwyck. Kieft tried to commandeer 50 pairs of shoes for the soldiers but Peter Wynkoop, the supercargo, refused to furnish them. Kieft then made a levy on the boat and took the shoes. He also found arms and ammunition and confiscated the ship and its cargo.

Kieft now sent an expedition of 150 Dutch soldiers against the Connecticut Indians, whose village was attacked and 500 of them were killed. Fifteen Dutchmen were wounded.

Because of the losses they had suffered, several of the Indian tribes made peace with Kieft at Fort Amsterdam. They included the Croton, Weckquaesgeek and Connecticut Indians. On April 15, 1644, sachems of the Long Island Indians came to Manhattan and also concluded peace. However, the River Indians remained hostile and, to guard the city against possible attack, "a good solid fence" was ordered built on present Wall Street, which takes its name from this defensive wall. As soon as the River Indians had stored their corn for the winter, they again began to murder the Dutch colonists whenever the opportunity offered.

Kieft again called the Eight Men and proposed a levy "on wine, beer, brandy and beaver," which the people's representatives opposed. Kieft however proclaimed the duties. The brewers refused to pay and their beer was given as a prize to the soldiers.

Kieft now became involved in public and private quarrels which seemed to distract his mind from the war which he brutally but vigorously waged against the hostile Indians. The Eight Men wished to continue the conflict with the River Indians to a conclusion. As Kieft remained inactive, Cornelis Melyn, president of the Eight Men, addressed a letter to the States General urging that body to act in support of the people of the province. Two others of the eight—Dircksen and Hall—personally protested to Kieft regarding his conduct of the war. The Eight Men also sent a lengthy letter to the West India Company on October 28, 1644, which ended with a request for the recall of the now thoroughly unpopular and inactive governor. The actions of the Twelve Men and Eight Men are of much importance as indicating the growth of popular and representative government on the banks of the Hudson and in the present State of New York.

The West India Company was practically bankrupt in 1644 and in no condition to aid the people of Manhattan. The Company even asked the States General for a subsidy of one million guilders. The College of Nineteen considered the letters sent by the Eight Men. In the last communication, it was indicated that

the colonists would return to Holland if a new governor were not sent out. Accordingly, Lubbertus Van Dincklagen, the former sheriff of the province, was provisionally appointed to succeed Kieft as Director General of New Netherland.

The Rekenkamer or Bureau of Accounts of the West India Company made an inquiry into the affairs of New Netherland and offered a number of wise recommendations. They said that Kieft's advice to exterminate the Indians should "by no means be adopted" but that the desire of the people that the red men should be appeased ought to be carried out. They advised the recall of "the director and council, who are responsible for that bloody exploit of the twenty-eighth of February, 1643," to justify their conduct before the College of Nineteen. Among other recommendations, were those that a council of three be appointed—the director and his assistant and the sheriff—that the salary of the director should be 3,000 guilders ($1,260) and the total expenses of New Netherland, 20,000 guilders ($8,400).

The disastrous Indian war ended with treaties with the warring tribes in the spring of 1645. With the corn planting season at hand, the red men desired peace. Some of the neighboring tribes "buried the hatchet" at Fort Amsterdam on April 22, 1645. Treaties were later concluded with the Indians of Long Island Sound and Rockaway.

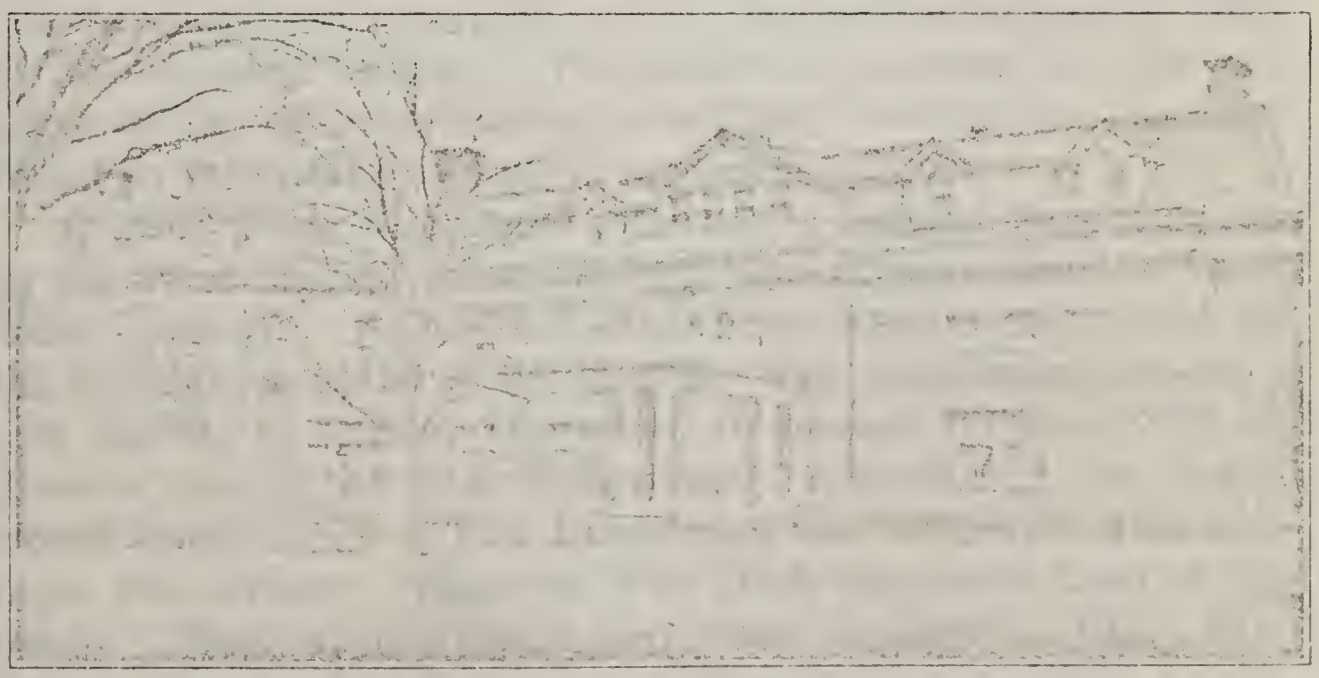
In July, 1645, Director General Kieft visited Fort Orange for the first time during his term of office. He sailed up the Hudson accompanied by La Montagne. His mission was to cement the friendship of the Mohawks with the Dutch. It is said that this conference was arranged by the astute Arent Van Curler, the director of Rensselaerwyck, who had great influence with all the Indian tribes in the neighborhood of Fort Orange. The Mohicans and other adjacent tribes were also present at the council. Presents were exchanged in ratification of the treaty, which was conducted with the aid of an Indian interpreter named Agheroense. Vander Donck and other residents in Rensselaerwyck raised Kieft's spirits somewhat by making him a much needed loan.

On August 30, 1645, a general peace treaty with the warring tribes was made at Manhattan. The articles of the treaty had been adopted at a meeting of the citizens on the previous day.

Brodhead, in his "History of the State of New York," thus describes the treaty scene:

"In front of Fort Amsterdam, under the open sky, in the presence of the sun and the ocean, on the spot 'where the commerce of the world may be watched from shady walks,' the sachems of the Hackensacks and Tappans, the delegates from Long Island and the Mohican chief, who spoke for the Weckquaesgeeks, Sint-Sings, and other river tribes, all acknowledging the Iroquois Confederacy, which was represented by ambassadors, as witnesses and arbitraters, seated themselves in grave silence, in the presence of the director and council of New Netherland and the commonalty of Manhattan, and, solemnly smoking the great calumet of peace, pledged themselves to eternal amity with the Dutch."

In celebration of the peace, Kieft designated the sixth of September as a general day of thanksgiving in the Dutch and English churches. Thus a brutal character, who had produced a terrible war by the most horrible massacres, proclaimed a day of rejoicing at the end of his bloody orgy. However, the people of New Netherland were too happy over the end of hostilities to bother with the director's inconsistencies.



A MODERN HUDSON RIVER HOUSE AT NYACK

CHAPTER 30.

1644-1646. LAST YEARS OF KIEFT'S RULE.

1645. PURCHASES OF LAND ON LONG ISLAND—PETER STUYVESANT APPOINTED DIRECTOR GENERAL—VANDER DONCK LEAVES RENSSELAERWYCK; RECEIVES PATENT FOR LANDS AT PRESENT YONKERS AND BRONX—VAN SLYCK RECEIVES LAND GRANT AT CATSKILL—VAN SLYCK'S INDIAN PRINCESS—1646. BRUECKELEN MADE A VILLAGE—1646. STUYVESANT SAILS FROM HOLLAND BOUND FOR MANHATTAN.

The end of the Indian war found Manhattan and its adjacent settlements in a pitiful condition, but their recovery was rapid. New settlers came in almost immediately after the treaty with the Indians was made. To insure title to the settlers' lands, Kieft completed purchases from the Indians on Long Island, so that title to nearly all the lands in present Kings and Queens counties became vested in the West India Company.

Kieft and several others soon became involved in a gold mine craze and soldiers were even sent to the Raritan to protect some of the supposed "mines." The result of the craze and the analyses of the minerals ending in nothing. Gold never has been found on the Atlantic Coast in paying quantities.

In 1644, Peter Stuyvesant returned to Holland from Curacao in the West Indies, where he had been director for the West India Company. He had lost a leg in an unsuccessful attack on the Portuguese island of St. Martin. The Amsterdam directors now decided to appoint Stuyvesant to succeed William Kieft as director general of New Netherland. Accordingly, the provisional appointment of Van Dincklagen was revoked and he was made vice director. Hendrick Van Dyck was made fiscal of the colony. These appointments were made on May 5, 1645. Differences among the directors as to the company's policies in the province, delayed Stuyvesant's departure for more than a year during which time Kieft remained in charge at Manhattan.

Domine Bogardus now began to attack the unpopular Kieft from his pulpit which set up a violent quarrel between the clergyman and the director general. Rensselaerwyck had come through the Indian war period without any loss. This was because of its remote position as regards Manhattan and because of the general good relations existing between the Dutch at present Albany and the Mohawks and other neighboring Indians. Harmen Meyndertse Van den Bogaert succeeded Hans Jorissen Houten as the vice director and commissary at Fort Orange in 1646. Van den Bogaert had come to the province from Holland in 1631 as surgeon of the ship *Eendracht*. He had served at Fort Orange as surgeon in 1634, when he made the winter exploration trip into the country of the Mohawks and Oneidas, which has been previously mentioned.

Adriaen Vander Donck, who had been sheriff of Rensselaerwyck, had married a daughter of Francis Doughty, the English clergyman at Manhattan, and wished to remove to that place. He was succeeded in office by Nicholas Koorn. While Vander Donck was getting ready to depart, his house burned down. Commissary Van Curler invited Vander Donck and his wife to share his house during a very severe winter. The two men became involved in a violent quarrel because Van Curler insisted that Vander Donck should pay the value of the house to the patroon. Vander Donck and his wife took refuge in the fort at the invitation of Van den Bogaert. They remained there until a great freshet came in March which threatened to wash away the fort. With the opening of navigation, the Vander Doncks removed to Manhattan. This migration of these two people was responsible for the first development of the lands on which the great and growing City of Yonkers now stands and the city takes its name indirectly from Vander Donck.

A short time after Vander Donck left Fort Orange, he explored the east side of the North River above Manhattan Island in what is now Bronx County and lower Westchester County. He looked over this region with the idea of securing lands and establishing himself as a patroon. He was taken with the valley of the Nepera or Sawkill, which empties into the Hudson River at present Yonkers. The stream seemed to him well adapted for the location of mills.

Vander Donck had been instrumental in arranging the treaty between the Director General and the Mohawks and other Indians at Fort Orange in 1645 and he had also loaned Kieft money to procure the necessary sewan for gifts to the chiefs. Accordingly the Director General was most favorably disposed toward Vander Donck's request, in 1646, for a patroon's patent in the present Yonkers neighborhood, because, he said Vander Donck "had contributed a vast deal by his services as mediator" in arranging the aforesaid peace treaty and had "advanced the principal part of the money as the director general was, at that period, not well provided with it to procure sewan." Kieft thereupon made the grant and Vander Donck bought from its Indian owners the lands "as far as Paperinemin, called by our people (Spyt den Duyvel) in Spite of the Devil." The new patroonship soon afterward received the name "Colen Donck" or Donck's Colony. The States General afterward confirmed to the new patroon the right to dispose of his manor by will.

The Indian name of Yonkers was Ke-ke-shick. The origin of the name of Yonkers is as follows: In Holland, the sons of wealthy men were given the title of "Jonkheer," meaning "young heir" or "young mister." The purchase by Vander Donck was first called "Jonkheersland" as well as "Colen Donck." Jonkheersland later became simplified into "Jonkheer's" or, in its English equivalent, "Yonkers." This name was at first applied, not only to Yonkers, but to a considerable section of present Westchester County.

In the same summer that Kieft issued a patent of Yonkers lands to Adriaen Vander Donck, he also gave to Cornelis Antonissen Van Slyck a grant for "the land of Katskill, lying on the River Mauritius, there to plant, with his associates, a colonie according to the freedoms and exemptions of New Netherland." The considerations for this patent were the great services Van Slyck had rendered "this country, as well in the making of peace as in the ransoming of prisoners, and it being proper that such notorious services should not remain unacknowledged." The word "notorious" is here used in its earlier sense which meant "noted" rather than its present unfavorable significance. In making this grant, to Van Slyck, Kieft disregarded the preten-

sions of the patroon of Rensselaerwyck, which had been denied in action taken against Koorn in 1644.

Van Slyck was granted his patent on August 22, 1646. He was a resident of Brueckelen at the time of the grant. Cornelis Antonissen Van Slyck was living near Cohoes Falls in 1640 when DeVries visited that place. He seems to have previously lived in the Mohawk country where he married an Indian woman of that tribe. By this marriage, he acquired great influence over the Mohawks who always showed the greatest love and esteem for "Broer Cornelis" and his children, one of whom—Jacques—was one of the original proprietors of the Schenectady patent of 1661. Although there is no documentary evidence to that effect, it is probable that the influence of the elder Van Slyck was of great aid to Van Curler in securing this first grant of land for white settlement well within the actual territory of occupation of the Mohawks.

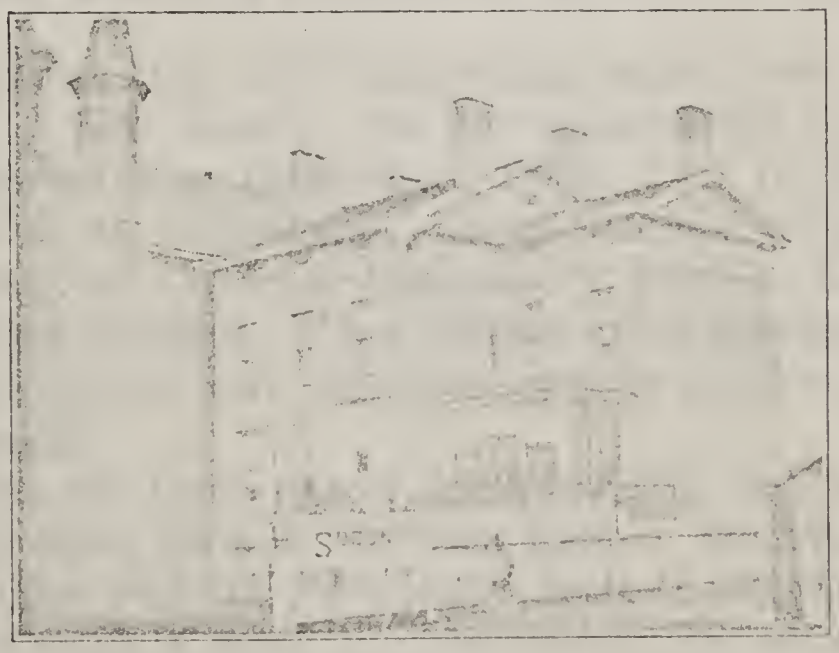
About 1620, a French trader named Hartell entered the Mohawk country and fell in love with a Mohawk Indian girl, who owned the island in the Mohawk River at Schenectady now called Hog Island. She was proprietor of these lands under the laws of the Five Nations. Hartell had two daughters by his Mohawk wife. One was Ots-toch, who married Van Slyck, and the other was Ke-nut-ye, who married a Bradt. Otstoch was wild and savage like her mother while Kenutye was small and handsome and very white like her father, the French trader.

"Brother Cornelis" seems to have been moving about a considerable part of the time. He married Otstoch at the Canagere castle of the Mohawks, then located near the present village of Canajoharie on the Mohawk River. His grandson, Captain Harmanus Van Slyck, became a prominent citizen of Schenectady and later of the Mohawk Valley near Canajoharie but on the opposite side of the river. Here, he was granted an extensive tract of land by the Mohawks in 1716, because of his relationship to the tribe. "Brother Cornelis" evidently followed the occupation of a trader among the Indians and he evidently frequently changed his residence as the occasion demanded. Thus we find him locating, for a time at least, at present Cohoes, Canajoharie, Brooklyn and Catskill.

On November 26, 1646, the settlement of Brueckelen on Long Island became a village. The citizens were given the right to elect two magistrates with full judicial powers. Jan Teunissen was appointed deputy sheriff of the first Brooklyn, serving under the sheriff at Manhattan. The Brueckelen of 1646 was located about a mile from the East River. The settlement opposite Manhattan was called simply "The Ferry."

Kieft's last year in office was occupied largely in the constant difficulties arising from Swedish occupation of Delaware and English domination in the Connecticut Valley, where the Dutch claim to that territory had become a joke among the New Englanders. In September, 1646, the Commissioners of the United Provinces of New England met at New Haven, which, of course, was within the territory claimed for New Netherland. Kieft protested by letter but without avail.

Kieft's disastrous administration now drew to a close. In December, 1646, Director General Stuyvesant and his staff sailed from Holland bound for Manhattan.



TYPICAL OLD BRICK HOUSE AT HUDSON

CHAPTER 31.

1647-1648—EARLY YEARS OF STUYVESANT'S RULE.

MAY 11, 1647. PETER STUYVESANT REACHES MANHATTAN AFTER A VOYAGE OF 5½ MONTHS FROM HOLLAND—CHANGES NAME OF MANHATTAN TO NEW AMSTERDAM—STUYVESANT'S DESPOTIC RULE CLASHES WITH DEMAND FOR POPULAR RIGHTS—TRIAL OF KUYTER AND MELYN, FIRST ACT IN STRUGGLE FOR LIBERTY IN NEW YORK STATE—BOTH MEN BANISHED; SAIL ON SHIP WITH KIEFT, WHO IS DROWNED IN SHIPWRECK—ASSEMBLY OF NINE MEN CHOSEN—STUYVESANT ATTEMPTS TO OPEN FRIENDLY RELATIONS WITH ADJACENT COLONIES—1648. TROUBLE WITH RENSSELAERWYCK—STUYVESANT VISITS FORT ORANGE—CONFERS WITH MOHAWKS—STUYVESANT'S DESPOTISM MAKES HIM UNPOPULAR—HE CONFISCATES VESSELS AND DRIVES MARITIME COMMERCE FROM NEW AMSTERDAM.

On Christmas Day, 1646, Stuyvesant sailed from the Texel with a fleet of four vessels. He was accompanied by Vice Director Lubbertus Van Dincklagen, Fiscal Van Dyck, Captain Bryan Newton, an Englishman who had service with the West India Company at Curacao; Commissary Adriaen Keyser and Captain Jelmer Thomas. A few soldiers and a number of Dutch colonists and traders were also passengers in the fleet bound for New Netherland.

The ships set their course southwesterly and touched at Curacao and other ports in the West Indies. Stuyvesant was a despot and filled with the pomp and conceit of petty power. He considered himself a great man because of his office while all others, with whom he came in contact, were regarded by him as belonging to a lesser and lower order of human beings. This psychological condition was responsible for his crude and despotic acts and attitude rather than his desire to preserve the dominant rule of the Company in New Netherland. It is an attitude frequently seen in individuals, who are given more or

less power over their fellow human beings, and its ugly results form the basic reasons for democratic rule, even though the latter may be less efficient than that of a despotism.

Stuyvesant's petty despotism asserted itself on the long voyage. A "prize" was taken by the fleet. Fiscal Van Dyck tried to sit at the council board to dispose of the vessel when the Director General roughly ordered him away. The Fiscal received the same treatment a second time and for his rightful attempt he was denied shore leave while the ship lay at Curacao for three weeks.

On May 11, 1647, after a voyage of nearly six months, Stuyvesant and his staff and the other passengers of the fleet landed at Manhattan. The people turned out en masse to welcome the new director and they made a great holiday of the occasion. They little knew that they were welcoming a despotic ruler but they could have rightfully judged him as such by his first speech in response to his uproarious welcome. He said: "I shall govern you as a father his children for the advantage of the chartered West India Company and these burghers and this land."

Stuyvesant's conceit and regal disdain for the people soon made itself felt among the populace of the province. He began his government on May 27, 1647, when Kieft left his post and the new Director General was publicly inaugurated. Although a despot, Stuyvesant handled the details of his government with vigor and efficiency. He at once organized his council which was composed of Van Dincklagen, vice director; Van Dyck, the fiscal; Commissary Keyser, Captain Bryan Newton, Counselor La Montagne and Secretary Van Tienhoven. Baxter, the English secretary, was continued in that post. He had been appointed by Kieft in 1642 because it was necessary to issue public papers, proclamations and announcements in English as well as Dutch on account of the constantly increasing number of English-speaking colonists.

Stuyvesant instituted his administration vigorously. He was a devout member of the Reformed Church of Holland and he soon became a member of the consistory of "The Church in the Fort." The new director issued a number of reformatory proclamations. One of them was the prohibition of the sale of liquor to the Indians. An excise duty was levied on wines and liquors

which created considerable public opposition. The general condition of the Village of Manhattan was also taken in hand by Stuyvesant. "At this time its aspect was unattractive, fences were straggling, the public ways crooked and many of the houses encroached on the lines of the streets. Proprietors of vacant lots were, therefore, directed to improve them within nine months." The director appointed Van Dincklagen, Vander Grist and Van Tienhoven as the first "surveyors of buildings" to supervise and regulate the erection of houses within and around the City of New Amsterdam. From the foregoing it will be noted that Stuyvesant changed the name of Manhattan to New Amsterdam and that he already considered it a city. As the church in Fort Amsterdam was still in an unfinished condition, the director and Jan Jansen Dam, a colleague, undertook its completion. Domine Bogardus resigned as pastor and his place was taken by Rev. Johannes Backerus, who was given a salary of 1,400 guilders ($588).

The struggle, between Stuyvesant's despotism and the people's demands for political representative rights, started soon after he assumed control at New Amsterdam. The colonists felt that they should enjoy the same political freedom which was the lot of the people of Holland. He refused a request for a searching investigation of Colonial affairs prior to his administration as he denied that the citizens had any right to ask for or have such an inquiry. Stuyvesant thereupon turned against Kuyter and Melyn who had asked for the investigation particularly of Kieft's regime. Kieft now saw his chance for revenge against the men who had opposed his vicious conduct of affairs and he petitioned Stuyvesant that the two former members of the council of Eight Men be banished "as pestilent and seditious persons."

Thereupon ensued the first struggle in the long battle for popular rights which was waged for over a century on the banks of the Hudson, in the province of New Netherland and later New York. Kuyter and Melyn were ordered to answer Kieft's petition within forty-eight hours. Both patriots put up an excellent case but the very strength and truth of their answers so angered the tyrannical and egotistical Stuyvesant that he asked that Melyn be executed and his property confiscated and that Kuyter be subjected to "arbitrary correction" and be fined 300 guilders.

The majority of the Director's council modified his decision and Melyn received a sentence of seven years banishment and a fine of 300 guilders and Kuyter was to be banished for three years and pay a fine of 150 guilders. Stuyvesant, as a petty tyrant, now denied the two men the right of appeal to the authorities in Holland. So the sentence of banishment stood and Kuyter and Melyn, New York State's first victims in the fight for liberty, were deported. The despotic director had used the old, time-worn trick of accusing the accusers and, with the power in his hands, he was enabled to perpetrate this official injustice.

Kieft was highly delighted with the revenge he had secured against the men who led the opposition to his brutal misgovernment. On August 16, 1647, the ship *Princess* sailed from New Amsterdam for Holland. It carried as passengers Kieft, Kuyter, Melyn, Domine Bogardus and Vander Huygens. Kuyter and Melyn were brought on board "like criminals." Kieft carried away a fortune of 400,000 guilders. This is equivalent to $160,000 which was a princely amount for that day.

Fate was now to mete out justice and punishment to an official who had played one of the blackest parts in the history of America. The *Princess* was navigated by mistake into the Bristol channel. It struck on a rock and was wrecked on the coast of Wales. With death staring him in the face, Kieft approached Melyn and Kuyter and said: "Friends, I have been unjust toward you—can you forgive me?" The next morning, the ship went to pieces and Kieft was one of the 80 people who were drowned. Kuyter and Melyn saved themselves together with 18 others. Kuyter had the waters dragged for the boxes of papers which they were carrying to Holland. One small box was recovered.

Holland had maintained the great democratic principle of "taxation only by consent" since 1477. Stuyvesant had orders to repair Fort Amsterdam but there was no money in the provincial treasury and the people were unwilling to be taxed without their consent. The exigency forced the despotic director to concede something to the demands for representative government.

The people of Manhattan, Brueckelen, Amersfoort and Pavonia were ordered to hold an election for eighteen representatives, which formed the third popular assembly of the

province. The director and council selected Nine Men, from the eighteen elected, to advise and assist in the conduct of affairs. It is remarkable that Stuyvesant had to concede something to the people so soon after his unjust banishment of the two leading champions of popular rights.

Stuyvesant, who was ill with influenza, wrote his first communication to the Nine Men on December 15, 1647. In it he brought several important matters to their attention. The fort should be repaired for the safety of the city. The city should be provided with a proper schoolhouse. No school had been held for three months because of this lack. The church had been started in 1642 and should be completed at once. Provisions and regulations for the control of fires should be made. Most of these matters were acted upon favorably by the Nine Men.

One of the many funny features of history was now presented to Stuyvesant. Lord Stirling, who died in 1646, had claimed western Long Island. His widow, to maintain the claim, sent Andrew Forrester, a Scotchman, to New Amsterdam, where he announced himself as "governor of Long Island." He was put aboard a ship for Holland but escaped at an English port.

In spite of his tyrannical attitude in the provincial capital, Stuyvesant tried to open amicable relations with the governors of adjacent colonies, to whom he addressed friendly letters soon after his inauguration.

In 1648, a new Dutch fort, named Beversrede, was built on the Schuylkill. This was constructed to offer some opposition to Swedish supremacy on the Delaware River. Troubles with the English on the Connecticut and the Swedes on the Delaware continued to perplex Stuyvesant as they had Kieft.

The director succeeded in organizing a fire-bucket department in New Amsterdam in 1648. Among many ordinances, Stuyvesant now issued one providing for an annual "Kermis" or fair commencing on St. Bartholomew's Day and lasting for ten days thereafter. At this fair, persons were privileged to sell goods from tents. Trade on the North or Hudson River and on the South or Delaware River was reserved to citizens of the colony who possessed the necessary qualifications and who had obtained a pass of the director general. However, the East River was declared to be "free and open to everyone, no matter to

what nation he may belong." The contraband trade in fire-arms and smuggling were ordered suppressed. All these regulations were enforced most strictly.

Stuyvesant now experienced his first difficulty with the authorities of Rensselaerwyck who assumed the authority of executives of a virtually independent colony. On March 22, 1648, Brandt Van Schlechtenhorst, the new director and commissary of Rensselaerwyck, began his duties. He was known as "a person of stubborn and headstrong temper" and he was thus a fit antagonist for Stuyvesant who was the same type of individual. The director general issued a proclamation calling for a general fast day throughout New Netherland. Van Schlechtenhorst entered a protest against it as conflicting with "the right and authority of the Lord Patroon." Stuyvesant had noted the contraband trade in fire-arms which had been carried on in the colony of Rensselaerwyck and he decided to visit Fort Orange. Van den Bogaert had been succeeded there as vice director and commissary by Carl Van Brugge.

On July 21, 1648, Director General Stuyvesant arrived at Fort Orange where he was greeted by artillery salutes from the cannon of the fort and from the patroon's "three pieces of cannon." Van Schlechtenhorst was summoned to appear before the director general and the battle for authority began. To Stuyvesant's many indictments, Van Schlechtenhorst replied that the director general acted "as if he were the lord of the patroon's colonie."

The director general ordered that the palisades of Fort Orange be replaced by a stone wall. He also made efforts to induce the Mohawks and other Indians, who were present, to preserve peace with the Dutch and with their "brethren, the English and French." Stuyvesant then boarded his boat and sailed down the Hudson while salutes were fired by the combined artillery of Fort Orange and Rensselaerwyck. He had accomplished practically nothing.

Van Schlechtenhorst continued his former policy of conducting an independent colony and again Stuyvesant warned him to refrain from encroaching on the territory of Fort Orange. Houses were being built close to the fort and Stuyvesant objected as he claimed that it made the post insecure. Van Schlechten-

horst retorted that the same condition existed at New Amsterdam, "where streets full of houses clustered around the fort." Van Schlechtenhorst forbade the company's commissary at Fort Orange to quarry stone or cut timber within the colony of Rensselaerwyck, and he continued to erect houses for the patroon "even within pistol shot of Fort Orange." Stuyvesant now sent a corporal's guard to Fort Orange and order Commissary Van Brugge to arrest Van Schlechtenhorst. The presence of the soldiers was unpopular with the people of Beverwyck as their manners were insolent and overbearing. The Mohawks called Stuyvesant "Wooden Leg" and they wondered why he wished to demolish the houses at Beverwyck, "which were to shelter them in storms and winter." They could not understand why "Wooden Leg" wanted to restrict the colonists' activities. They said, "Come to us in the Maquaas country and we will give you plenty of land."

Van Brugge understood the situation at Fort Orange better than Stuyvesant and he did not arrest Van Schlechtenhorst or destroy the company's infringing houses. However, he ordered Van Schlechtenhorst to appear and answer the director general's complaints at Fort Amsterdam. The soldiers were ordered to return to New Amsterdam. The director of Rensselaerwyck protested against all of Stuyvesant's complaints and declared the serving of the summons to be illegal. Stuyvesant replied that the provincial government's authority "extended to the colonie of Rensselaerwyck, as well as to the other colonies, such as Heemstede, Vlissingen and Gravensande." Van Brugge and Labbatie, in charge at Fort Orange, were ordered to go ahead with the repairs to the fort and to take timber and stone for that purpose from any place in New Netherland. All buildings, which stood within gun shot of the fort, were to be destroyed and the authority of the company over the precinct of the fort and their "ancient and uninterrupted use" of the land adjacent to the fortification were to be maintained. Van Schlechtenhorst was ordered to appear during the next April at Fort Amsterdam and answer the charges against him.

Stuyvesant was utterly without diplomacy and his method of settling all differences was by the exercise of petty despotism. His course, taken in connection with Rensselaerwyck, alienated

the population of that thriving and progressive colony and particularly that of its little City of Beverwyck, now Albany. The director's drastic measures only made the people of the colony more insistent on their rights and the preservation of their colony as largely independent of the government at New Amsterdam. This breach continued for over forty years afterward as will be noted in the happenings at Albany at the time of Leisler's rebellion.

Stuyvesant not only alienated the people of the present Albany district but he also created discontent and bad feeling at New Amsterdam. His dictatorial rule of eighteen months found him in disfavor with the people in the fall of 1648. Kieft had left debts due the company of 30,000 guilders which Stuyvesant attempted to collect from the people. They objected as their own claims against the company for wages and grain remained unpaid. The Nine Men convened and secured the postponement of the company's levies for a time. Stuyvesant's dictatorial tendency to the confiscation of vessels and their cargoes on the slightest pretext had ruined the commerce of the port of New Amsterdam and trade had ceased with New England and the West Indies. As their complaints to Stuyvesant were fruitless, the people attempted to send a delegate to go to the States General of Holland and tell of the condition of the province. As Stuyvesant virtually wished to write the communication and as the Nine Men objected to this, "the matter therefore fell asleep." In December, 1648, an election of the Nine Men was held. Adriaen Vander Donck, the new patroon of Yonkers, and Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt were elected with seven of the old members.

The close of the year 1648 marked the passing of the 39th and the beginning of the 40th year since Hudson's voyage. It also was the 35th year since the permanent settlement of New Amsterdam in 1613.

CHAPTER 32.

1649-1652. THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW NETHERLAND UNDER STUYVESANT.

ENGLISH COLONISTS SIDE WITH STUYVESANT IN CONTROVERSY OVER POPULAR RIGHTS; DUTCH FOR LIBERTY—VANDER DONCK, FOUNDER OF YONKERS, IMPRISONED—MELYN RETURNS—STUYVESANT ORDERED TO APPEAR BEFORE STATES GENERAL—DOMINE MEGAPOLENSIS SETTLES AT MANHATTAN—DELEGATES OF NINE MEN PRESENT THEIR PROTEST, "VERTOOGH VAN NIEUW NEDERLANDT," TO STATES GENERAL, OCTOBER 13, 1649—1650. LONG ISLAND DIVIDED BETWEEN ENGLISH AND DUTCH—SCHOOLHOUSE BUILT AT BEVERWYCK (ALBANY); ANDRIES JANSEN, FIRST SCHOOLMASTER—STUYVESANT CLASHES WITH RENSSELAERWYCK AUTHORITIES—1650. PEACE COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS—"BOSCH LOOPERS" SUPPRESSED—1651. DYCKMAN VICE DIRECTOR AT FORT ORANGE (ALBANY)—PEOPLE OF RENSSELAERWYCK TAKE COLONIAL OATH OF ALLEGIANCE—TROUBLE AT BEVERWYCK, WHICH STUYVESANT ANNEXES TO FORT ORANGE—1652. CAPTAIN THOMAS CHAMBERS HEADS PARTY OF DUTCH PIONEERS WHO SETTLE ESOPUS (KINGSTON).

The third year of Stuyvesant's government—1649—was made noteworthy by the beheading of the English King, Charles I. on January 30, and the consequent establishment of an English republic, which virtually amounted to a military despotism, under Cromwell. These events threatened a rupture between England and the United Provinces of the Netherlands, where the Duke of York and the Prince of Wales had taken refuge. At the same time the commissioners of the United Colonies of New England made overtures to Director General Stuyvesant for a conference to consider the boundary and trade difficulties existing between New Netherland and New England. Nothing immediately came of the correspondence which followed.

In 1649, Stuyvesant again came into conflict with the Nine Men in their demands for a representative to be sent to Holland

to appear before the States General in regard to the condition of the province. The English settlers sided with the director in the controversy while the Dutch colonists were all for liberty and popular representation. Because of his activity in behalf of the rights and liberties of the people, Adriaen Vander Donck, the patroon of Yonkers who was a member of the Nine Men, was arrested and imprisoned. Vander Donck was later unseated by a vote of seven of the Nine Men. Van Dincklagen sided with Vander Donck.

At this time Melyn returned to New Amsterdam. The States General had reviewed the case of Kuyter and Melyn and had suspended Stuyvesant's sentence of banishment. The director general was ordered to appear before the States General and defend his act. Melyn insisted that these proceedings be read to the people of New Amsterdam, which was done after some exciting debate on the subject. Stuyvesant's despotic nature had been highly offended by Melyn and his enmity extended not only to Melyn but to his family. In the suspension of the sentence of banishment on Kuyter and Melyn, the cause of popular rights achieved one of its chief early victories in the thirteen original states. Popular dissatisfaction with the director now became general and Vander Donck was regarded as a political martyr. A memorial to the States General was now prepared and signed, on July 26, 1649, by the Nine Men of the present and former boards as follows—Vander Donck, Heermans, Hardenburg, Couwenhoven, Loockermans, Kip, Van Cortlandt, Jansen, Hall, Elbertsen and Bout. The memorial made a number of excellent proposals as to provincial policies and the States General were asked to take authority over New Netherland, which act would have ended the disastrous rule of the West India Company.

The Nine Men selected three of their number to present their "Vertoogh" or remonstrance to the States General. They were Vander Donck, who drew up the paper, Couwenhoven and Bout. They sailed from New Amsterdam for Holland on August 15, 1649. Domine Backerus left the little city on the same boat, which bore a request from Stuyvesant to the Classis of Amsterdam to send a schoolmaster to the colony. Stuyvesant wrote that "nothing is of greater importance than the right early instruction of youth." Domine Megapolensis, who had been pastor at

Beverwyck for six years, had come down the river to sail to Holland. Stuyvesant induced Megapolensis to stay and succeed Backerus as the clergyman of the Reformed Church of New Amsterdam. Melyn had been unsuccessful in securing a reversal of Stuyvesant's sentence and he also sailed with the delegates of the Nine Men for Holland.

Stuyvesant now attempted a shrewd trick. He sent Van Tienhoven, the colonial secretary, aboard a fast yacht in order to reach Holland ahead of the delegates of the Nine Men. However the ship in which the Nine Men sailed reached Holland well ahead of that carrying the secretary who was to represent Stuyvesant before the States General. On October 13, 1649, the delegates of the Nine Men presented their protest to the States General and, on December 2, Van Tienhoven presented Stuyvesant's case. These transactions brought the province of New Netherland prominently before the people of the United Provinces of the Netherlands. The remonstrance of the Nine Men was printed at The Hague in 1650 under the title of "Vertoogh van Nieuw Nederlandt."

As the situation and advantages of the Hudson Valley region became known to the Hollanders, a large number of them made application as emigrants to the province. Vander Donck succeeded in arranging for the transportation of 200 people to New Netherland.

The committee of the States General, which was appointed to consider the "great Remonstrance presented from the commonalty," now made a lengthy report with numerous excellent suggestions for the reform of the government of New Netherland. It suggested, among other things, that Stuyvesant should be called to Holland to report, that the Nine Men should be continued in office three years longer and that at least 15,000 guilders should be spent each years, by the "commissioners of New Netherland" in the Amsterdam chamber, for the transportation of poor agricultural emigrants to the province. This provisional order was bitterly opposed by the Amsterdam chamber as would naturally be expected of this colonial monopoly.

The delegates left Vander Donck in Holland to prosecute their cause and Couwenhoven and Bout sailed for New Amsterdam taking with them 200 guns and a flag for the burghers.

Domine Wilhelmus Grasmeer sailed with them to take charge of the church at Rensselaerwyck, and William Vestens also was a passenger of the ship. He was to be a schoolmaster and "consoler of the sick" at New Amsterdam. Jan Cornelissen was already a school teacher in the little city, where an academy was then contemplated.

Stuyvesant had prevented a muster of the militia for two years and, when the colors and stands of arms for them arrived, he prevented their delivery. Stuyvesant now found himself in the peculiar position of being supported by the English and almost unanimously opposed by the Dutch, with whom his unpopularity constantly increased.

The director general, on September 17, 1650, sailed for Hartford where he met the commissioners of the United Colonies of New England in an effort to settle the boundary and other differences between them and New Netherland. The matter was finally put into the hands of commissioners. Stuyvesant appointed Captain Thomas Willett and George Baxter to represent New Netherland and Simon Bradstreet and Thomas Prence acted for New England. The result of the conference was a treaty in which the English secured control of practically all the territory in Connecticut which had been claimed by the Dutch as part of New Netherland. Long Island was divided at the westernmost limits of Oyster Bay. The eastern part was to be in control of the English while the western was recognized as part of New Netherland. The boundary line on the mainland was to run from Greenwich Bay for twenty miles up into the country, provided the line did not come within ten miles of the Hudson River.

The commissioners appointed by Stuyvesant were Englishmen and the Dutch of New Netherland, who formed the large majority of its population, protested against the English commissioners and this wholesale surrender of Dutch territory. The Nine Men again protested to the States General.

The attitude of the executives of Rensselaerwyck in assuming a practically independent state for that colony now occupied Stuyvesant's attention. The Director General determined to stop the levying of tolls at Beeren Island by the Rensselaerwyck authorities and to make the North River free. The director also

denied the claims of the patroon's agents to the territory about Catskill. At about this time, Domine Grasmeer arrived at Fort Orange and began to preach there. A schoolhouse was built at Beverwyck (present Albany) in 1650 and Andries Jansen became the first schoolmaster there.

In the fall of 1650, an Indian of the Tappan tribe went to Fort Orange and warned the commandant there that the Mohawks were planning an attack upon the Dutch. That Iroquois tribe, he said, had tried to rouse the southern River Indians to rise against the settlers in their localities. The people held a meeting and the colonial authorities selected delegates to go to the Mohawk country, who started on their peace mission on October 2, 1650. A peace council was held at one of the Mohawk castles where presents to the amount of 600 guilders were distributed. The chief trouble with the Mohawks was caused by the trading licenses of the "bosch-loopers" or "woods runners," known by the French as the "coureurs de bois." This system of licenses was abolished with the consent of the people. Peace was restored with the Mohawks and the threatened attack did not eventuate. Popular government was making advances in New Netherland, as the people of Beverwyck and Rensselaerwyck seem to have had a large part in arranging these peace negotiations with the neighboring Mohawks.

Vander Donck and Melyn, then in Holland, endeavored to help colonial affairs in New Netherland by bringing the general misconduct of government before the States General. Although Vander Donck made out an able case his efforts and those of Melyn were practically fruitless. Melyn returned to New Netherland where he was persecuted by Stuyvesant, who also started a general persecution of all friends of popular liberty. The English colonists were generally friendly to Stuyvesant and were treated by him with consideration. The despotic governor arrested Van Dincklagen, the vice director, and imprisoned him for a time. Van Schlechtenhorst, the director of Rensselaerwyck, was called to New Amsterdam and arrested and detained there four months.

Stuyvesant made a visit to the South or Delaware River in 1651, secured large cessions of lands from the Indians and built a new post—Fort Casimir—near the present site of New Castle,

Delaware, and about four miles below the Swedish Fort Christina.

In 1651, Labbatie was removed as vice director and commissary at Fort Orange and Johannes Dyckman was appointed in his place. Van Schlechtenhorst now managed to escape from New Amsterdam and return to Beverwyck. Van Schlechtenhorst had been attacked with the "gold fever" which possessed many of our pioneers. Without proper assaying implements, these amateur mineralogists were generally deceived, by any glittering object, into believing that they had discovered gold or silver mines. A daughter of a Catskill farmer had found a stone which was considered to be silver. Van Schlechtenhorst sent his son Gerrit to make a search for the source from which the stone had come. He had established a farm in that section. The son had hardly reached the place, on September 10, 1650, when a torrential rain set in. The neighboring Kill rose thirty feet in three hours and the farm house was swept away. Young Van Schlechtenhorst saved the horses and cattle. This disaster distracted the agent's search for the Catskill "gold mine" and it seems never to have been resumed.

Van Schlechtenhorst now endeavored to preserve the freedom of the colony of Rensselaerwyck. Accordingly, he called upon all the householders and freemen of the colony to take the "Burgherlyck" oath of allegiance. Accordingly, on November 28, 1651, this order was obeyed by a number of the people who agreed "to maintain and support, offensively and defensively, against everyone, the right and jurisdiction of the colony." One of those taking this oath, was John Baptist Van Rensselaer, a younger half-brother of the patroon, who was the first of the family to come to the colony.

The quarrel between Stuyvesant and Van Schlechtenhorst, over the autonomy of Rensselaerwyck, came to a head in January, 1652. At that time, the authority of Dyckman, vice director, commissary and commander at Fort Orange, came in conflict with that of Van Schlechtenhorst, director of the colony of Rensselaerwyck. On a New Year's night spree, several soldiers of Fort Orange fired their guns at the patroon's house. The thatched roof caught fire and the building would have burned had not the people saved it. This renewed the animosity of the settlers against the soldiers of the garrison. On January 2, 1652,

young Gerrit Van Schlechtenhorst was assaulted on the streets of Beverwyck by several soldiers. Philip Pietersen Schuyler attempted to protect his brother-in-law and Dyckman threatened him with his drawn sword. Friends of Van Schlechtenhorst now vowed revenge and Dyckman loaded the cannon of Fort Orange with grape shot to repel a possible attack.

Dyckman had another argument with Van Schlechtenhorst on February 8, 1652, when he attempted to read some placards in the colonial courthouse. Stuyvesant had sent them up from New Amsterdam to be published in the colony of Rensselaerwyck. Van Schlechtenhorst tore the documents from Dyckman's hands and protested against the infringement of the rights of the patroon and his colony. Stuyvesant, on March 5, sent up another placard publishing the claim that the jurisdiction of Fort Orange extended 600 paces from its walls. No house was afterward to be built within these limits except by the consent of the director and council at Fort Amsterdam. Dyckman was ordered to display these placards on posts on the new line. Van Schlechtenhorst ordered the constable to remove the posts and he issued a proclamation saying that the colonists of Rensselaerwyck had never sworn allegiance to the West India Company or to Stuyvesant and that they recognized and that the only superior authority that they regarded was the States General of Holland. A report now became current that Stuyvesant would revisit Fort Orange and that "a new gallows" was being prepared for the older and younger Van Schlechtenhorsts and for the patroon Van Rensselaer.

Stuyvesant sailed up the Hudson during the latter part of March. He ordered the authorities of Rensselaerwyck to furnish a statement of the bounds of the colony and he sent a platoon of soldiers to the patroon's house who hauled down the colonial flag. On April 10, 1652, Stuyvesant issued a proclamation declaring that the little City of Beverwyck was annexed to Fort Orange. "By this act, Stuyvesant completed his long cherished design and the present City of Albany was released from feudal jurisdiction." Van Schlechtenhorst issued a counter proclamation upholding the claims of the patroon. The director general thereupon ordered the colonial director to be arrested and im-

prisoned in Fort Orange. He was later sent to New Amsterdam under guard, where he remained until the following September.

Stuyvesant, during his stay at Fort Orange, issued several grants of land in Beverwyck to prominent colonists. These grants confirmed the ownership of the land by the West India Company. John Baptist Van Rensselaer was appointed director of the colony. Gerrit Swart was made sheriff with orders to maintain religious worship in the colony.

Prior to his last trouble with Dyckman and Stuyvesant, Van Schlechtenhorst had bought a large tract of land embracing the present City of Troy, which was called Paanpaack, and another tract farther north known as Panhoosic. A farmer, named Thomas Chambers, had occupied lands on the first tract. Chambers, with some neighbors, in 1652, removed to Esopus, or Atkarkarton, and began the permanent settlement of the present City of Kingston.

Stuyvesant returned to New Amsterdam and, on July 1, 1652, he issued an order that no person could thereafter buy lands from the Indians without the consent of the director general and his council. He also declared as void the sales of land by the Indians to Van Schlechtenhorst at Catskill and Claverack and to others. The Amsterdam chamber later modified this order so that the aforesaid purchasers kept their lands. A considerable number of land purchases from the natives and consequent settlements in New Netherland soon took place.

Rensselaerwyck now obtained the services of both a clergyman and schoolmaster. Gideon Schaats, a schoolmaster and theological candidate, of Beest in Holland, was engaged by the patroon on May 8, 1652, both to preach and teach at Beverwyck.

CHAPTER 33.

1652-1658—NEW AMSTERDAM MADE A CITY, 1652.

1652, AMSTERDAM CHAMBER OF WEST INDIA COMPANY GRANTS POPULAR DEMAND FOR BURGHER GOVERNMENT AND MAKES NEW AMSTERDAM A CITY—VAN TIENHOVEN FIRST CITY SCHOUT (MAYOR)—1653, FATHER PONCET, JESUIT PRIEST, KINDLY TREATED AT BEVERWYCK (ALBANY)—FIRST "LANDTDAG" OR PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY MEETS IN NEW AMSTERDAM—1654, END OF DUTCH FORT AT HARTFORD AND OF DUTCH EMPIRE ON CONNECTICUT RIVER—STUYVESANT SAILS FOR WEST INDIES TO PROMOTE TRADE—1655, DE DECKER SUCCEEDS DYCKMAN AS VICE DIRECTOR AT FORT ORANGE (ALBANY)—STUYVESANT CONQUERS SWEDES ON DELAWARE RIVER—VAN DYCK MURDERS A SQUAW—INDIANS ATTACK NEW AMSTERDAM AND KILL VAN DYCK—DRIVEN FROM CITY—ATTACK PAVONIA AND HOBOKEN—100 DUTCH KILLED—1655, FORT ORANGE (ALBANY) OFFICIALS RENEW ALLIANCE WITH MOHAWKS—1656, NEW AMSTERDAM HAS 120 HOUSES AND 1,000 PEOPLE—NEW CHURCH STARTED AT BEVERWYCK (ALBANY)—1658, NEW HAERLEM MADE A VILLAGE.

Adriaen Vander Donck, the founder of Yonkers, was largely responsible for the chartering of New Amsterdam as a city in 1653. The "Jonkheer" had remained in Holland where he constantly urged, on the attention of the members of the States General, the complaints of the people of New Netherland. His agitation, of the several subjects in the province which needed reform, had brought the affairs of the Dutch colony prominently before the people of Holland. The various chambers of the West India Company wished to share the provincial trade with the Amsterdam chamber, which had long had its monopoly.

The members of the Amsterdam chamber now realized that they must grant some concessions to the people of the province or lose its control. The directors sent to Stuyvesant their approval

of the burgher or city form of government for New Amsterdam. This had been demanded by the Nine Men in 1649. The citizens of the provincial capital were to be allowed to elect a schout or sheriff, two burgomasters and five schepens, "as much as possible according to the custom of," the City of Amsterdam, which was the metropolis of Holland. The foregoing eight officers were to form a municipal court of justice, subject to the right of appeal to the supreme court of the province.

The schout, or sheriff, also had duties which included those of a mayor and city attorney. His instructions read that he should "as the director-general and council's guardian of the law, in the district of the city of New Amsterdam, preserve, protect and maintain, to the best of his knowledge and ability, the preeminences and immunities of the privileged West India Company, in so far as they have been delegated by previous instruction to the board of Burgomasters and Schepens." The sheriff was delegated to preside at all meetings of the city government. He was to prosecute all offenders against the civic laws, execute judgments and to give an annual account of the city government to the director general and council.

The city government of New Amsterdam was inaugurated on February 2, 1653, when the officials were appointed by Stuyvesant as follows: Cornelis Van Tienhoven, schout; Arent Van Hattem, Martin Kregier, burgomasters; Paul L. Vander Grist, Maximilian Van Gheel, Allard Anthony, William Beeckman, Peter Wolfertsen Van Couwenhoven, schepens. Jacob Kip was appointed city clerk. The city tavern at Coenties Slip was taken for the civic government's purposes and renamed the State House or City Hall. This was the large, stone building which had been built as New York City's first hotel by Governor Kieft nearly ten years previously. All the foregoing city officials were Dutch with the exception of Beeckman, a German.

In 1652, when present New York became a city, the population of the present metropolis of the Western world numbered about 750 people and present Manhattan Island was embraced within the city limits.

It is probable that the despotic Stuyvesant was much chagrined at the acquirement of civic liberties by the people of New Amsterdam. Another trouble soon confronted him. Vander Donck's

effective protests before the States General, concerning the misgovernment of New Netherland finally had an effect. Vander Donck, who was about to return to New Netherland, was commissioned by the States General to deliver an order to Stuyvesant directing him to return to Holland and render an account of his administration. However, war now threatened between England and the United Provinces and, as Stuyvesant was an experienced soldier, the States General revoked his recall.

As will be noted, Director General Stuyvesant did not allow the citizens of early New York City to elect their officials. He retained their appointment in his own hands and thus the control of the city government. Holland and England were now at war and one of the first meetings of the new city government was called in conjunction with that of the director's council, which considered measures of defense, including the repair of Fort Amsterdam. The whole male adult citizenry was ordered to mount guard every night. Stuyvesant wrote the governors of the neighboring English colonies in an effort to promote friendly relations with them. The United Colonies of New England sent commissioners to New Amsterdam to observe the strength of the Dutch and also in an effort to involve Stuyvesant in further territorial and other disputes. War, against the Dutch on the shores of the Hudson, was now agitated in Connecticut but, as Massachusetts refused to join, the proposed conflict did not begin. Affairs in New Netherland became so serious that Allard Anthony, one of the city schepens of New Amsterdam, was sent to represent the situation in the province to the Amsterdam chamber. The city had been partially enclosed with palisades and Stuyvesant wanted help from the city government to repair Fort Amsterdam. The proposition was submitted at a meeting of the most prominent burghers held at the City Hall on August 2, 1653. The assembly resolved not to contribute anything to the repair of the fort "until the director general give up the whole excise on wines and beers."

Adriaen Vander Donck, the patroon of Yonkers and founder of the present city, returned to New Netherland in 1653. He was kept under surveillance by Stuyvesant to such an extent that he petitioned the city government for protection. While in Holland, Vander Donck wrote a "Description of New Netherland."

which was granted a copyright by the States General. The first edition of "Beschryvinge van Nieuw Nederlandt," was printed in Amsterdam in 1655. In that year, Vander Donck died, leaving his estate at Colen Donck, or Yonkers, to his widow.

The trouble between Stuyvesant and Rensselaerwyck was renewed when the proprietors of that colony complained, to the Amsterdam chamber of the West India Company, against the Director General's proceedings on his recent visit to Beverwyck (Albany). The several protests and rejoinders finally amounted to nothing. The Amsterdam chamber, however, suggested to Stuyvesant that a trading post be established about twenty miles above Fort Orange.

In 1653, the Mohawks had been at war with the French for several years. In 1648, the Mohawks had invaded the Huron country which they desolated and killed four Jesuit priests during their warfare. In 1653, the Mohawks seized Father Joseph Poncet at Three Rivers and he was taken by way of the Richelieu River, Lake Champlain and the forest trails to the Mohawk castles. Here his life was saved by his adoption into a family of these Indians. Peace had been made between the Mohawks and De Lauzon, the governor of New France, who required the safe return of the "black gown" as one of the peace conditions. Poncet had been wounded by his captors, who brought him to Fort Orange to be clothed and have his wounds dressed. Dyckman, the company commissary, showed little interest in the Jesuit but other residents of Beverwyck showed kinder hearts. An "old Walloon" colonist invited Father Poncet to his house and a Scotch woman employed a surgeon to dress his wounds. After receiving this kindly treatment, the Jesuit priest administered the rites of religion to two Roman Catholic residents and then returned to the Mohawk country. From there, he traveled, evidently by water, on the Mohawk River, Oneida Lake, Oswego River and Lake Ontario and down the Saint Lawrence to Quebec. The treatment of Father Poncet at Beverwyck was the second instance in which Jesuit priests had been the recipients of kindness at that little frontier village. The other case was that of Father Jogues, who escaped from his Mohawk captors at Beverwyck in 1644.

On November 11, 1653, the principal men of New Amsterdam were called together by Stuyvesant who told them that he agreed to give up part of the excise fees collected on wines and beers. The meeting then resolved to uphold any measures the Director General might take for the defense of the city.

On November 26, 1653, one of the first meetings of delegates from various provincial communities met in the City Hall in New Amsterdam. Delegates were present from the provincial council, the city government, and the settlements of Gravesend, Flushing and Newtown. The assembly met because of numerous piracies and robberies committed in the Long Island settlements during the war. Calls, for the election of delegates to a "Landtdag" or congress to meet in New Amsterdam, were sent to the villages of New Netherland. It was too late to send this call to Beverwyck. The first provincial congress of New Netherland and later New York met in New Amsterdam on December 10, 1653. The following city, villages and communities were represented: New Amsterdam, Brueckelen, Flushing, Newtown, Heemstede, Amersfoort or (Flatlands), Midwout (Flatbush), Gravesend. Of the towns represented, four were Dutch and four were English. Of the nineteen delegates, ten were Dutch and nine were English. This congress, or first assembly of present New York State, adopted a "remonstrance" against Stuyvesant's despotic rule.

The burgomasters and schepens of New Amsterdam now appealed to the West India Company against Stuyvesant's despotism with a request that the burgomasters be allowed to elect their own schout, who, as before stated, was sheriff, mayor and city attorney in one.

In April, 1654, the Dutch fort at Hartford was sequestered by the General Court there, which act was virtually the end of Dutch "empire" on the Connecticut River. In the same month, a treaty of peace was signed between England and Holland, which ended the warlike preparations of New England for an expedition to conquer New Netherland.

The end of the war found the contest between despotism and democracy still on in the present "metropolitan district" of New York. The West India Company, like a true monopoly, upheld Stuyvesant and wrote him to pursue even more drastic measures.

The advocates of liberty were called "the ringleaders of the gang." The liberty that was considered good for the Dutch in Holland was evidently considered very bad—for the company—in New Netherland. The Amsterdam directors would not allow the sheriff of New Amsterdam to be chosen by the burghers but they consented that the office of the city schout or sheriff should be separated from that of the provincial fiscal. Jochem Pietersen Kuyter, who had been one of the victims of Stuyvesant's oppression, was appointed sheriff of New Amsterdam. Kuyter was murdered by the Indians shortly after his appointment and Van Tienhoven continued to hold the double office of provincial fiscal and city schout.

The Amsterdam directors wrote the city government of New Amsterdam, on May 18, 1654, that a city seal had been prepared for their use. On July 1, the ferries from Manhattan Island to Long Island and Pavonia (present Jersey City) were regulated by the city fathers. On August 13, 1654, Stuyvesant again took control of the excise money and levied a war tax consisting of twenty stuyvers on every morgen of arable land, the hundredth penny on every house and lot in New Amsterdam and Beverwyck, one guilder on each horned beast and ten per cent on all exported merchandise.

On April 16, 1654, Stuyvesant visited Fort Orange. Commissary Dyckman was ordered to levy an excise duty on all liquor retailed within 1,000 rods from the fort. The officials of Rensselaerwyck issued orders to the colonists not to pay the duties and the people of Rensselaerwyck and Beverwyck both refused to pay the provincial taxes.

In 1654, the Swedes captured the Dutch post, Fort Casimir, near present New Castle, Delaware.

On Christmas eve, 1654, Stuyvesant sailed for the West Indies to establish trade between that region and New Netherland. He was given a farewell dinner at the City Hall, where he delivered the new city coat-of-arms to Martin Kregier, the presiding burgomaster. On February 5, 1655, Dirck Van Schelluyne was appointed high constable or chief of police of New Amsterdam.

Early in 1655, Commissary Dyckman, of Fort Orange, became insane. Johannes De Decker was appointed vice director and commissary to succeed Dyckman.

Stuyvesant returned from the West Indies to New Amsterdam on July 11, 1655. Acting under orders from the West India Company, the Director General captured Fort Casimir from the Swedes on September 11, 1655. He conducted a fleet of seven vessels and 700 men, from New Amsterdam to the Delaware River, for that purpose. With the surrender of Fort Christina on September 25, 1655, the Swedish "empire" on the Delaware was ended and the Dutch resumed complete control of that river and its shores in the states of Delaware, Pennsylvania and New Jersey, all of which were included within the limits of the province of New Netherland.

In 1655, while Stuyvesant was absent with his small army on the South or Delaware River, the River Indians again rose against the Dutch. The trouble was caused by one of those frequent brutal acts of the white pioneers. Van Dyck, the deposed schout fiscal of the province, discovered a squaw stealing peaches in his garden. The brutal Dutchman promptly killed the Indian woman and her tribe vowed vengeance. A number of tribes of River Indians, with some from Long Island Sound, now united to attack the Dutch settlements. They included Mohicans, Esopus, Pachamis, Hackensacks, Tappans and warriors from Stamford and Onkeway. Their total number was estimated at 1,900. A great number of these red men in 64 canoes suddenly appeared before New Amsterdam on September 15, 1655. They landed before dawn and scattered themselves through the town while most of the people were still asleep. The Indians broke into several houses and a general alarm was given. The chief sachems were called before the city magistrates, members of the council and principal burghers within the fort. The Indians were ordered to leave the city by sunset and go to Nutten or Governor's Island. This the warriors agreed to do but they broke their word. They shot Van Dyck and struck down Vander Grist with an axe. The alarm was given and the soldiers and burgher guard marched out of the fort and attacked the red men who fled to their canoes.

From Manhattan Island, the Indians paddled to Pavonia and Hoboken where they killed or captured most of the settlers. Staten Island then had a population of 90 people on eleven fertile "bouweries" or farms. The Indians attacked these settlements

and laid the whole island waste. In three days over 100 Dutch people were killed, 150 were taken prisoners and another 300 were destitute because their property had been destroyed in the Indian raids. Over thirty fine farms were raided, their buildings burned and cattle driven off or killed. The total damage was estimated at 200,000 guilders ($84,000).

The settlers, adjacent to New Amsterdam, fled to the city and the few pioneers, who had located at Esopus abandoned their farms. The Indians even prowled over Manhattan Island and the citizens remained in or close to Fort Amsterdam.

Stuyvesant returned to New Amsterdam on October 12, 1655, and he immediately took steps to end the war. A number of the Dutch prisoners were soon ransomed from their Indian captors. Stuyvesant was constantly bent on playing the role of dictator but all that he could think about dictating in those parlous times was a proclamation curtailing the festivities, which the Dutch had enjoyed in the Fatherland. On December 31, 1655, he issued an ordinance forbidding the firing of guns, beating of drums, treating or planting of Maypoles on New Year's Day or May Day.

In September, 1655, Father LeMoyne again visited Beverwyck, on his way from Quebec to assume his duties as a missionary among the Mohawks, by whom he was kindly received on this occasion.

The authorities of Fort Orange renewed their alliance with the Mohawks in October, 1655. News of the Indian outbreak in the lower Hudson region had reached the present Albany district and a council was held at Fort Orange with the Mohawks. This was done to prevent these Indians from making common cause with the River Indians against the Dutch.

A hundred warriors left their castles on the Mohawk River and went over the Skanektade trail to present Albany. They announced that they were about to attack the Hurons and asked the Dutch to remain neutral which the latter agreed to do. The Mohawks complained that they were not treated as hospitably in Beverwyck as the Dutch were when they visited their "castles." The Dutch spokesman explained that the Hollanders went to the Mohawk country in small numbers and, that if the Indians would observe the same rule when they came to Fort Orange, they would be well entertained. Presents of powder and lead were

then given the red men and the council broke up after a satisfactory session.

At the beginning of 1656, Stuyvesant ordered all the isolated farmers to form villages for better protection against the Indians. At the same time, the burgomasters and schepens of New Amsterdam asked to be allowed to name their successors. This was a privilege then possessed by nearly all the villages of New Netherland. Stuyvesant granted the request with his usual reservations which left the appointive power largely in his hand.

Up to 1654, a policy of religious toleration prevailed in New Netherland similar to that which was in existence in Holland. In 1656, there were four Reformed Dutch clergymen in New Netherland. Megapolensis and Drisius preached at New Amsterdam, while Drisius also preached at Staten Island. Schaats was the clergyman at Beverwyck and Polhemus preached to the congregations at Brueckelen, Amersfoort and Midwout on Long Island. At Esopus, the few Dutch settlers had no regular clergyman but they met and held Sunday services when one of them read a commentary. There were no schoolmasters then located in New Netherland and on the banks of the Hudson except at New Amsterdam and Beverwyck, then, of course, the largest towns in the province.

As lay preachers had been active on Long Island, Megapolensis and Drisius appealed to Stuyvesant complaining of this fact. The Director General was a conventional churchman and he is sued a proclamation forbidding preaching except by regularly ordained clergymen. This proclamation was also published at Fort Orange. The law was enforced and several people were fined and imprisoned.

In 1656, a survey of the City of New Amsterdam was made by Captain De Koenick by order of the city government. The town then had 120 houses and 1,000 people. In the same year, Van Rensselaer, the patroon, went from Beverwyck (Albany) to New Amsterdam to protest against the collection of the excise fee. Stuyvesant fined him for his protest.

On June 2, 1656, the cornerstone of a new church was laid at Beverwyck. The new church stood in the middle of present State Street, Albany, at what was then known as Yonker's and Handelaar's streets. Rutger Jacobsen, one of the oldest magis-

trates of Rensselaerwyck, laid the cornerstone with appropriate ceremonies in the presence of a crowd of officials and residents. The court at Fort Orange appropriated 1,500 guilders and the patroons of Rensselaerwyck subscribed 1,000 guilders for the expense of the church. The people of Beverwyck donated 25 beaver skins, worth about 200 guilders, which were given to buy an oaken pulpit in Holland. The Amsterdam chamber gave 75 guilders for this purpose and, in 1657, presented a bell to the church.

An attempt of the Lutherans to found a church at New Amsterdam now caused controversy with the Director General and the clergymen of the Reformed Dutch Church. Some Quakers had arrived in the city and two of them who preached on the streets were arrested and jailed. Other troubles with Quakers followed, but Quakerism continued to spread. In 1658, residents, other than those of Dutch descent or birth, were so numerous that proclamations were ordered to be translated from Dutch into French and English. Fire protection was now taken into consideration and 250 leather fire buckets were bought.

On March 4, 1658, Stuyvesant issued a proclamation creating the Village of New Haerlem, near the "lands of Jochem Pietersen Kuyter, deceased." A good road was built between New Amsterdam and the new village, at the northern end of Manhattan Island. However, this earliest Harlem did not become a village until 1660.

In 1658, Stuyvesant bought from the Indians a great tract of land in present Hudson and Bergen counties—the Hudson River counties of New Jersey.

CHAPTER 34.

1658-1660, IN THE HUDSON VALLEY—INDIAN WAR AT ESOPUS.

1658, MAY 30, STUYVESANT HOLDS INDIAN COUNCIL AT ESOPUS (KINGSTON)—NEW LOCATION OF ESOPUS VILLAGE—GARRISONED BY 24 DUTCH SOLDIERS—JEREMIAS VAN RENSSELAER, NEW DIRECTOR OF RENSSELAERWYCK (1658-1674)—OCTOBER 15, 1658, STUYVESANT AT ESOPUS (KINGSTON)—MASSACHUSETTS "GRANTS" LAND OPPOSITE FORT ORANGE (ALBANY)—1659, NEW NETHERLAND RECEIVES ENLARGED TRADING RIGHTS—LATIN SCHOOL ESTABLISHED AT NEW AMSTERDAM—DOMINE BLOM PREACHES AT ESOPUS—ESOPUS SETTLERS MURDER INDIANS—THIRTEEN WHITES CAPTURED AND TEN BURNED AT STAKE BY INDIANS—STUYVESANT AND FORCE REACH ESOPUS—INDIANS FLEE—VAN CURLER DIRECTS DUTCH-MOHAWK COUNCIL AT OSSERUENON—DUTCH CAPTURE ESOPUS INDIAN STRONGHOLDS—1660, PEACE COUNCIL AT ESOPUS—INDIANS CEDE PRESENT KINGSTON AREA—ESOPUS MADE A VILLAGE—STUYVESANT HOLDS COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS AT FORT ORANGE—CHURCH CONGREGATION OF 200 AT BEVERWYCK.

The settlers, who had been driven away from Esopus during the Indian war of 1655, returned to their farms soon after the close of hostilities. They continued to live on isolated farms, where they bought peltries from the Indians, paying for them with brandy. This course of affairs caused drunkenness among the Indians and consequent outrages. The red men killed one settler and burned the house and farm buildings of another. The colonists at Esopus numbered between 60 and 70 people in 1658 when the attitude of the Indians became so threatening that they appealed to Stuyvesant to send 40 or 50 soldiers to guard the place. On May 28, 1658, Stuyvesant sailed up the river with 50 soldiers. On May 30, he landed at Esopus, or present Kingston. The Director General advised the settlers to palisade their village and called the neighboring Indians into council.

The red men met with the "grand sachem from Manhattan" on May 30, 1658, when about 50 Indian men with a few women and children came to Esopus and seated themselves under a large tree. The Director General went to the conference accompanied by three others, one of whom was an interpreter. A chief of the Esopus tribe opened the council with a long speech in which he told of the losses his tribe had suffered in the war started by Kieft. Stuyvesant replied that all affairs connected with that conflict had been settled by the subsequent peace. He then spoke as follows:

"Has any injury been done you since that peace was made or since I came into the country? Your sachems have asked us over and over again to make a settlement among you. We have not had a foot of your land without making you full compensation. Why then have you committed this murder, burned our houses, killed our cattle and why do you continue to threaten our people?"

One of the chiefs then arose and replied to Stuyvesant as follows:

"You Swannekens have sold our children drink. The sachems cannot then control the young Indians nor restrain them from fighting. This murder has not been committed by any of our tribe but by a Minnisinck who is now skulking among the Haverstraws."

The Director General spoke again in conclusion:

"If this be not stopped, I shall have to retaliate on old and young, on women and children. I expect that you will repair all damages, seize the murderer, if he comes among you, and do no further mischief. The Dutch are now going to live together in one spot. It is desirable that you should sell us the whole of the Esopus land, as you have often proposed, and remove further in the interior."

The council then ended and the chiefs present assured Stuyvesant that they would give proper consideration to his statements.

The Dutch settlers immediately began to stockade their village which they located on a site that they left to Stuyvesant's selection. He picked a location where the water of the Kill offered some protection on three sides. The flat land at this point was staked out and a palisade extending 210 yards in all was started.

The village was laid out on May 31, 1658, and, on June 4, the pioneers were busy at work on the stockade when a band of Indians was seen coming toward the place. The soldiers were ordered into ranks but the red men proved to be on a friendly mission. The Indians announced that they had come to make a present of the Esopus land to the grand sachem of the Hollanders "to grease his feet as he had taken so long and painful a journey to visit them." In his dealings with these Esopus Indians, Stuyvesant showed a knowledge of the Indians and the appreciation of a military man of the necessity of a show of force. The presence of 50 well armed and disciplined Dutch soldiers, combined with Stuyvesant's despotic manner and firm ultimatum, did more to induce the Indians to give away their land than all the oratory and messages of friendship that could have been concocted for the occasion.

The work of building the new village and of surrounding it with a palisade now went forward rapidly. In three weeks the stockade and surrounding ditches were completed, the former houses were removed to the new site, a barracks and guardhouse were built and a bridge constructed over the adjacent Kill. Stuyvesant left 24 soldiers to garrison the new post and, on June 24, 1658, he sailed from Esopus down the Hudson to New Amsterdam.

Other difficulties of the middle Hudson area were soon arranged by Stuyvesant. The colonists of Rensselaerwyck now offered to pay a yearly contribution of 300 schepels of wheat in place of the tenths demanded of them as taxes by the director general. Jeremias Van Rensselaer now succeeded his brother, John Baptist Van Rensselaer, as director of Rensselaerwyck. Jeremias successfully managed the affairs of the colony from 1658 until 1674. His administration was most successful. During it, he acquired a strong influence among the Mohawks and other neighboring tribes and also the respect of the French officials of Canada.

On October 15, 1658, Stuyvesant again visited Esopus. He looked after the safety of the settlement and tried to get further concessions from the Esopus Indians, which they would not grant. The chiefs were anxious to have the Dutch soldiers removed and the director immediately suspected them of planning an attack

on the place as soon as the freezing of the river should isolate the village. He therefore increased the Esopus garrison to 50 soldiers and put Ensign Dirck Smit in command with orders to observe every precaution, to also allow no Indians inside the palisade and to detail guards to go with the farmers to their work in the fields. The director left Esopus on October 19 and sailed back to his capital at the mouth of the Hudson.

Massachusetts, in 1659, brought forward her claim of ownership of a strip of territory extending westward from the Atlantic to the Pacific oceans, in virtue of her patent from Charles I. The southernmost line of this absurd claim crossed the Hudson River near present Saugerties. The colony of Massachusetts made a grant to several of its leading merchants of land on the Hudson River opposite Fort Orange or present Albany, on the basis of its wholesale claims to the vast territory mentioned. A party of New Englanders set out from Hartford and sailed up the Hudson River on an exploring expedition. They selected a town site at the mouth of Wappingers Kill and then sailed north to Fort Orange, where they were hospitably entertained by Vice Director La Montagne. The New Englanders asked La Montagne for permission to use the Hudson if they made a settlement, which he refused. To prevent an English settlement on the Wappinger Kill, the Vice Director wrote the Amsterdam chamber asking them to send colonists to that place.

On February 13, 1659, the Amsterdam chamber granted the province of New Netherland the right to trade with Spain, France, Italy, islands in the West Indies and other foreign ports. This concession was granted at the earnest solicitation of the citizens of New Amsterdam. The province had been previously granted the right to trade for slaves on the African coast.

New Amsterdam now rose to new importance in educational matters when, in 1659, a Latin school was established in the provincial capital by the Amsterdam directors. Doctor Alexander Carolus Curtius of Lithuania, was the schoolmaster who was engaged at a salary of 500 guilders together with some perquisites. He arrived in New Amsterdam and commenced his school work on July 4, 1659. Curtius also practiced as a physician. He was given an added salary of 200 guilders by the city government making his total stipend, 700 guilders ($294).

Hermanus Blom, a candidate for the ministry in the Reformed Dutch Church, came to New Amsterdam in 1659. The people of Esopus (Kingston) had no settled minister. Blom visited the village and preached there. The settlers organized a church and requested Blom's services as their pastor. The divinity student accepted the call and returned to Holland to pass his examinations before the Classis of Amsterdam and to receive ordination. The Dutch settlers of Esopus built their first church in 1661 on the same location where the present Reformed Church stands.

The Esopus neighborhood, in 1659, again suffered from the ravages and horrors of an Indian war. The bloody conflict was brought on by the brutal conduct of a party of the Dutch settlers. As previously stated, Thomas Chambers, who was one of the first settlers of present Troy, removed to Esopus, or present Kingston, in 1652, where he was one of the original settlers. In September, 1659, Chambers employed some Indians to husk his corn and he gave them some brandy when they asked for it at the end of the day's work. The red men became drunk and one of them fired his gun about midnight. The sergeant of the guard at the fort investigated the cause of the alarm. Although Ensign Smit protested, an armed party of settlers left the stockade headed by a man named Stol. They went to the scene of the Indians carousing party and fired a volley among the red men, killing several. The next day, Ensign Smit told the settlers that he would return to New Amsterdam with his garrison inasmuch as they had flouted his authority and committed a bloody deed which the commandant knew would be soon revenged by the Indians. The men of the settlement went to the waterside and hired all the boats so that Smit could not carry out his intentions. On September 21, Ensign Smit sent a messenger to Stuyvesant and detailed a guard to accompany him to the river. On the return of the escort, they walked into an Indian ambuscade and thirteen of them were captured. The Indians now started their war of revenge in earnest, when 500 warriors besieged Esopus and no one ventured from the stockade for three weeks. The vigilance of the garrison prevented the Indians from setting fire to the palisades. In revenge, the red men burned ten of their prisoners at the stake.

Smit's courier reached New Amsterdam on September 23. An epidemic fever was raging in the capital but Stuyvesant raised a force of 40 volunteers, 100 men drafted from the city militia, 25 English and a considerable number of friendly Indians of Long Island. This little army sailed from New Amsterdam on Sunday, October 10, 1659. When it reached Esopus, Stuyvesant found that the Indians had given up the siege and disbanded. As heavy fall rains had set in, it was found impossible to pursue the red men to their inland villages and the expedition sailed back to the provincial capital.

Following the council with the Dutch at Caughnawaga, or Osseruenon, Mohawk chieftains went to Esopus where they were joined by chiefs of the Mohican tribe. These visiting Indians succeeded in making a temporary peace between the Esopus Indians and the Esopus settlers. They also succeeded in securing the release of two of the white captives.

Fortunately, just prior to the warfare at Esopus, the Dutch at Fort Orange had renewed their friendship with the Mohawks. A Mohawk delegation went from their villages to Fort Orange with professions of friendship and the demand that no more liquor be sold by the Dutch to the people of their tribe. The commissary presented the chiefs with 50 guilders, assured them of the friendship of the Dutch and promised to lay their requests before Stuyvesant, who was then expected to visit Fort Orange.

An epidemic of illness was then prevalent in New Amsterdam and the Director General became sick. His trip up the Hudson was consequently postponed.

The Fort Orange and Rensselaerwyck authorities therefore sent an embassy to the Mohawk country. One of the delegates was Arent Van Curler who had visited the Mohawk country in 1642 in an effort to secure the release of Father Isaac Jogues, the Jesuit priest. Van Curler seems to have had a large part in the council which was held at the lower Mohawk "Castle" of Osseruenon, also known as Caughnawaga. This was the village of the Turtle clan and the name Caughnawaga is broadly interpreted as meaning "Turtle village." It was applied to the castle of 1659, which was located at present Auriesville, on the south side of the Mohawk River about 23 miles west of present Schenectady. On this Indian village site now stands the Roman Catholic

Shrine of Our Lady of Martyrs, there erected to commemorate the martyrdom of Father Jogues and others of the Jesuit faith who were slain by the Mohawks while held captive by those Indians. The castle of Osseruenon or Caughnawaga, was located at, or near Auriesville, from 1640 until 1666, when De Tracy's French-Indian expedition destroyed all the south shore Mohawk River settlements, after which that tribe built their stockaded towns on the north shore of the river, where a new Caughnawaga arose on the site of the present village of Fonda. Later, when French Jesuit priests converted a number of Mohawks of the village they went to Canada where they founded a new Caughnawaga on the Saint Lawrence River near Montreal.

The council fire was lighted at Osseruenon on September 24, 1659. The chiefs of the three chief castles of Osseruenon, Andagoron and Tionnontogen attended and the affair was one of the most important of the councils held between the Dutch of Fort Orange and the Mohawks. Arent Van Curler addressed the council. He explained Stuyvesant's absence, professed the desire of the Dutch to keep the chain of friendship bright, said that the selling of liquor to the Indians was illegal and offered to seize the liquor kegs of the Indians. Van Curler then presented the Mohawks with fifteen axes as they were about to rebuild Caughnawaga on a hill about half a mile west of its (then) present situation. The Mohawks wanted the Dutch to bring horses and help them draw logs for their new stockade but Van Curler said that the Dutch were "all sick" and the hills were too steep for the horses, and he then gave them the Dutch broadaxes.

Van Curler was a man of great ability and much respected by the Mohawks and other Indians. His oration was well received and the council ended satisfactorily. As the negotations were closing, news of the outbreak at Esopus reached the conference. The Mohawks reiterated their loyalty to the Dutch and promised to send a peace envoy to Esopus.

On September 25, 1659, the Dutch delegates set out on the 40 mile journey from Caughnawaga to Beverwyck (Albany), which they reached after a hard day's journey. Traveling up and down the Mohawk River at one of the most beautiful times of the year, Van Curler again noted the advantageous location of present Schenectady and the broad, fertile Mohawk River flats at

that place. His observations then probably had much to do with his founding of the present City of Schenectady in 1661. He also may have visited the farmhouse which had been built at present Scotia, opposite Schenectady, by Alexander Lindsay Glen in 1658. Van Curler probably began plans for his later settlement after his return to Beverwyck. Although, Schenectady is in the valley of the Mohawk River, chief tributary to the Hudson, the outstanding features of its annals are noted in this work, as Schenectady is so closely adjacent to Albany and its history is interwoven with that of the Capital City.

Stuyvesant now experienced troubles with Maryland, whose authorities wished to oust the Dutch colony on the Delaware River and who declared that the eastern boundaries of the province extended clear to the line of the Connecticut settlements, thereby embracing New Netherland and its great Valley of the Hudson River.

In 1660, a little liberty was granted the people of early New York City, when the municipality was given the right to have a sheriff of its own. Pieter Tonneman, a former resident of Brueckelen, was appointed schout in place of De Sille. Jacques Cortelyou made a survey of New Amsterdam in 1660 when it was found that the city had 350 houses. New Haerlem was given a village charter in 1660.

On March 6, 1660, Stuyvesant concluded a new treaty with the Long Island and River Indians. Learning that the Esopus Indians now desired peace, the Director General again set sail for present Kingston. He arrived there on March 18, 1660. Ensign Smit had taken 40 men and marched into the country where he had captured the Indians' stronghold of Wiltmeet, captured twelve prisoners and taken a great supply of corn, pease and bearskins. Stuyvesant sent the prisoners to New Amsterdam and ordered Smit to drive the remaining Indians across the Catskill. He attacked the Indians and drove them back into the country. The Esopus and neighboring Indians now wanted peace but they also wanted the captive members of their tribe restored. Stuyvesant refused this demand until all the white captives were given up. He made a bad error of judgment when he issued an order sending several of the Indians to Curacao in the West Indies, there to work "with the negroes in the com-

pany's service." The Esopus Indians never forgot this injury and the settlers at present Kingston soon suffered the red men's revenge for this injustice on the part of the Director General.

On May 30, 1660, Ensign Smit made another advance against the Esopus tribe. His force captured the Indian encampment at "Kit Davit's Kill," where they took Preummaker, an old chief who had been left behind when the Indians fled before the Dutch. "As it was a considerable distance to carry him," one of the Dutch soldiers murdered Preummaker with his own tomahawk.

The Esopus Indians made overtures for peace and Stuyvesant again visited present Kingston on July 11, 1660. Here, after considerable delay a great council was held on July 14 and 15. Van Curler was present with a number of Mohawks and there were chieftains present from the Mohicans, Wappingers, Minquas, Hackensacks and Staten Island Indians. Four Esopus sachems represented that tribe.

At the council of July 15, 1660, a Minqua chief asked Stuyvesant for peace on behalf of the Esopus tribe. The director assented provided the Mohawks, Minquas and other tribes would guarantee its observance. A Mohawk and a Minqua chief then addressed the Esopus envoys advising them to live with the Dutch settlers as brothers. A hatchet was then trampled in the earth and Stuyvesant followed by announcing the peace conditions. Warfare was to end and all past injuries were to be forgotten; to compensate the settlers for damages sustained the local Indians were to cede all the Esopus lands to the Dutch; the Dutch were to pay the Indians 800 schepels of corn as a ransom for the captive Christians; future damages were to be reciprocally paid for; murderers were to be mutually surrendered and punished; the savages were not to approach the Dutch plantations with arms but they might trade freely if unarmed; no liquor was to be drunk near the houses of the Dutch; all friendly tribes were to be included in the treaty; the Indian mediators were to become bound for the faithful observance of the treaty and were to assist the Dutch in case of another outbreak of the Esopus Indians. The Esopus and other red men present expressed themselves as satisfied with the terms and the treaty was formally ratified.

Up to 1660, Esopus had been a dependency of Fort Orange. The Esopus settlers now desired a village government. Roeland

Swartwout, one of the original Dutch settlers visited Holland in 1660, and induced the Amsterdam chamber to make the little village an independent jurisdiction. Swartwout was named as the first schout or sheriff. However, Stuyvesant objected to these direct dealings with the Amsterdam directors and refused to organize the Esopus court.

After concluding the treaty with the Indians at Esopus, Stuyvesant went to Fort Orange to consider the abuses which had sprung up there regarding the fur trade. The traffic in peltries was the principal occupation of the people of Beverwyck (present Albany) and almost all of the citizens of that potential city were traders. The population of the place was constantly increasing as there had been no Indian wars in Rensselaerwyck since 1626. With the growth in numbers, competition in the fur trade became keener and some of the townspeople became "bosch loopers" or wood-runners. They literally scoured the woods in search of the peltries of the Indians and frequently stopped and bartered for furs with the red men who were on their way to Fort Orange and Beverwyck. This traffic was often carried on at a considerable distance from the colony and many persons became bosch loopers. Many irregular practices followed and both the Indians and the honest traders complained to the authorities of Fort Orange and Rensselaerwyck. Ordinances were accordingly passed to prohibit this "wood running" and the employment of bosch loopers by fur traders of Beverwyck. Many of the people, who had been engaged in this practise, defied the law and continued their "wood running." The Mohawks complained of the conduct of the bosch loopers to Vice Director La Montagne at Fort Orange. These Iroquois threatened to break their treaty with the Dutch if the authorities did not put a stop to the evils mentioned. On July 14, 1660, Commissary La Montagne headed a party of soldiers which went over the main forest trails into the Indian country where a number of bosch loopers were arrested, several of whom were magistrates of Beverwyck.

Stuyvesant reached Fort Orange on July 21, 1660. He immediately issued a proclamation forbidding wood running by the fur traders. The Director General also set forth his instructions respecting the colonial jurisdiction of the West India Company. The collection of tithes or taxes was to be enforced and the schout

or sheriff of Rensselaerwyck was compelled to take the oath of allegiance to the company.

On July 25, 1660, Stuyvesant held a grand council with a number of Seneca chieftains. They came down to renew the peace covenant which they had made at New Amsterdam several years before. This peace conference at Fort Orange was attended by the magistrates of Fort Orange and the colonial magistrates of Rensselaerwyck as well as by the principal residents of Beverwyck and the surrounding settled region of Rensselaerwyck. The Senecas asked for free trade, suppression of the bosch loopers and supplies of ammunition. They also asked that a piece of cloth be made the price of a beaver. Stuyvesant presented the Seneca delegates with gunpowder and tobacco but told them that he could not grant their demands as to the price of beaver skins. He asked the Senecas to make peace with the Minquas and the council ended satisfactorily.

On February 16, 1660, Domine Blom was ordained to preach but he did not begin his pastorate at Esopus (Kingston) until September. His congregation at first consisted of only sixteen members but it grew steadily. Domine Henricus Selyns came to New Netherland with Blom. He was installed as clergyman at Brueckelen, where he had a congregation of 27 people. The population of the village then numbered 134 people in 31 families. Domine Schaats, at Beverwyck, had a congregation of 200 members which shows the increase in population at that time.

On November 10, 1660, Stuyvesant again visited Esopus, or present Kingston. He inspected the redoubt then finishing at that place and superintended the establishment of Domine Blom in a residence befitting his office.

From Esopus, the director general sailed to Fort Orange where he held a council with Mohawk delegates in an effort to persuade that tribe not to make war on the Kennebecks. Stuyvesant did this good office at the request of the governor of Massachusetts.

CHAPTER 35.

1660-1664, IN THE HUDSON VALLEY—LAST YEARS OF NEW NETHERLAND AND DUTCH DOMINION.

1660. INTERCOLONIAL TREATY NEGOTIATED BY STUYVESANT BETWEEN NEW NETHERLAND AND VIRGINIA—MAY 16, 1661. ESOPUS CHARTERED AS "WILTWYCK"—JUNE 18, 1661. ARENT VAN CURLER APPLIES TO STUYVESANT FOR PERMISSION TO SETTLE SCHENECTADY—JULY 27, 1661. MOHAWKS CONVEY SCHENECTADY LANDS, ON MOHAWK RIVER, TO VAN CURLER—SETTLEMENT AND BUILDING OF SCHENECTADY—SEPTEMBER 15, 1661. BERGEN MADE A VILLAGE—1661. DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH BUILT AT ESOPUS—1663. SEVERE EARTHQUAKE IN HUDSON AND ST. LAWRENCE VALLEYS AND NEW NETHERLAND—SMALLPOX OUTBREAK AT BEVERWYCK; 1,000 IROQUOIS DIE OF EPIDEMIC—JUNE 7, 1663. INDIANS ATTACK ESOPUS; 21 KILLED, 45 CAPTURED—SETTLERS FLEE TO FORT ORANGE (ALBANY) AND GREENBOSCH (RENSSELAER)—DUTCH SOLDIERS FROM NEW AMSTERDAM DEFEAT INDIANS AND BURN THEIR TOWNS—STUYVESANT VISITS BOSTON AND PROPOSES FREE INTERCOLONIAL TRADE BETWEEN NEW NETHERLAND AND UNITED COLONIES OF NEW ENGLAND—APRIL 10, 1664. PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY CONVENES AT NEW AMSTERDAM—MAY 15, 1664. STUYVESANT MAKES PEACE TREATY WITH ESOPUS INDIANS—WILLIAM BEECKMAN MADE COMMISSARY OF ESOPUS REGION, BETWEEN CATSKILL AND HIGHLANDS—1664. MOHAWK-MOHICAN WAR—MAJOR STAATS' HOUSE, AT STOCKPORT LANDING, BURNED; REBUILT.

The province of Virginia had always maintained friendly relations with New Netherland. Stuyvesant was now successful in negotiating an intercolonial treaty between the English and the Dutch provinces. The Virginia assembly at once passed a law to give effect to the treaty in Virginia and the New Netherland government established a favorable tariff of duties on im-

ports and exports from and to Virginia. Sir Henry Moody was sent on an embassy to New Amsterdam to exchange the ratifications of the treaty. The "ambassador of the governor and assembly of Virginia" was received at the Dutch provincial capital with full diplomatic honors and his mission was most successful. The Amsterdam directors wrote Stuyvesant in approval of his negotiations with Virginia and said: "A free and unshackeled commerce with that nation must be conducive to the prosperity of your city and its inhabitants." Each colony was evidently regarded as a separate nation.

This intercolonial treaty of 1660, between Virginia and New Netherland, is of great importance in our national history as it is one of the first examples of colonial coöperation. It is remarkable in that it was made by two provinces which had differing national allegiances. New Netherland was Dutch while Virginia was English but they joined on the common ground of American coöperation for mutual colonial betterment. Even the national American idea is seen as an unconscious promoting factor of this very important diplomatic transaction. Stuyvesant probably hoped for eventual support and possible alliance with Virginia as against the land-grabbing neighboring colonies of New England and the Virginia authorities probably regarded New Netherland as an excellent buffer state between them and the Yankees. Stuyvesant tried to get Governor Berkeley of Virginia to acknowledge the Dutch right to New Netherland but in this he was unsuccessful. The Director General's intercolonial policy was probably dictated by his knowledge of the weakness of the Dutch province but, nevertheless, he had consistently endeavored to form good relations between New Netherland and the United Colonies of New England. The desire to gobble up the Dutch province was the only sentiment that Stuyvesant aroused among the Yankees by his tenders of coöperative and united action. It is often a far cry from cause to effect but the early friendship of the present State of New York with Virginia continued for years after this early Colonial period. It is not impossible that some of the pro-southern spirit which prevailed so strongly in New York City, during the Civil War, may have had its beginnings in the friendly relations which had existed

for over two centuries between the two great commonwealths of the United States of America.

While Stuyvesant was broad in his views of intercolonial policy, he was most narrow in his attitude toward other religious sects than his own. He accordingly started anew the persecution of the Quakers of Long Island. Two of them were fined and two of them were banished from the province.

Because Stuyvesant refused to organize the court at Esopus, he was severely censured by the West India Company, which now ordered him to execute its commands. A formal charter was now granted "Wiltwyck" as the Village of Esopus was now renamed. This name means "Wild Place." However, this designation did not take hold and the place continued to be known as Esopus or "Sopus" for years after this renaming and also that by the English when they designated the town as Kingston. The charter of Esopus, or Wiltwyck, was granted on May 16, 1661. It appointed Evert Pels, Cornelis Barentsen Sleght, and Elbert Heymans Roose as schepens who, with a schout or sheriff to be named by Stuyvesant, were to form the court of justice for the village. The schepens were ordered to "pay due attention to the conversation, conduct and abilities of honest and decent persons," who were resident in the village, and to give information to the provincial authorities "about the time of the next election as to who might be sufficiently qualified to be then elected by the director general and council." On June 27, 1661, Stuyvesant appointed Roelof Swartwout as the first schout of Esopus. The organization of the first municipal court in the present county of Ulster then followed.

Van Curler now put into action the plans which he had formed to settle Schenectady. On June 18, 1661, he applied to Stuyvesant for permission to buy the Great Flat at present Schenectady. This permission was granted provided that the title of the lands should be vested in the West India Company. On July 27, several Mohawk chiefs appeared at Fort Orange before Vice Director La Montagne and conveyed the Schenectady lands to Van Curler and his thirteen associates. The settlement and the building of the town probably commenced at once. In 1664, Stuyvesant confirmed the Schenectady purchase by a patent

issued to Van Curler and his associates in that year, when the place was plotted and surveyed.

The new town of Schenectady was laid out in a rectangle, 660 feet long on each side. It was stockaded with pine posts and had earth embankments with blockhouses at the gates and angles and a passageway inside for the patrol of troops. Each family was allotted a farm on the flats with a pasture and garden and a home lot within the stockade. The town was generally known from the first as Schenectady although it was called Corlaer by the Mohawks and the French in honor of Arent Van Curler, its founder. The stockade embraced the area now bounded by Front, Ferry and State streets and Washington Avenue.

Following the settlement of Schenectady that place became the frontier outpost of New Netherland, a position which had been occupied by present Albany, under its various early names, for nearly 50 years prior to the founding of the present Electric City.

On September 15, 1661, the thriving town of Bergen, in present New Jersey, was given a village administration. The increasing immigration enlarged the population of New Netherland and Staten Island shared in the boom. Grants of land were made on the island to Huguenots and French Waldenses on August 22, 1660. The influx of settlers promoted industries and new ones were created. Brick works, pottery works, breweries, etc., were in successful operation. An unsuccessful attempt was made to manufacture salt on Coney Island.

Early in 1663, a severe earthquake shook New Netherland, New England, Acadia and Canada. It was one of the most severe which has occurred in the area indicated since its settlement by the whites. Freshets, which did severe damage, followed the quake in the vicinity of Fort Orange. Smallpox broke out in Beverwyck where twelve people died within a week. One thousand Indians of the Five Nations died of the disease, which was particularly severe among the Mohawks.

Esopus or Wiltwyck had thrived since the close of the Indian war. New settlers had come in considerable numbers. A new village was laid out on the "Great Plot" to accommodate the increasing population. A church had been built in 1661 and the congregation had increased from the original 16 to 60 members

in 1663. A sergeant's guard of soldiers was maintained at the ronduit or redoubt, which had been built at the month of the kill about two miles from the original settlement.

There were rumors in the town of the disaffection of the neighboring Indians and Stuyvesant, learning of the situation prepared to again visit Esopus. On June 7, 1663, an unusual number of Indians entered the open gates of the town and went from house to house selling corn and beans and on other pretended errands. Most of the men were at work in the fields when the alarm was given them that the Indians were killing, burning and plundering. The farmers rushed back to their homes where some of them were killed by shots fired by Indians within the doors. Sheriff Swartwout, Captain Chambers and Domine Blom rallied the men who drove the savages from the burning village. Sixty-nine unwounded men were rallied for the defense of the town. The burned palisades were replaced, fires were put out and a strict watch was maintained. A count of the people showed that 21 had been killed, nine wounded and 45 captives, mostly women and children, had been carried away by the Indians. Twelve houses were burned in Wiltwyck and the new village was almost completely destroyed.

Intelligence of the massacre at Esopus reached Stuyvesant on June 10. He sent De Decker from New Amsterdam to Fort Orange to raise volunteers and enlist the Mohawks and Senecas on the side of the Dutch. When news of the Esopus attack reached Fort Orange many of the farmers of Rensselaerwyck fled to the newly erected palisade of Fort Cralo in Greenbush on the eastern shore of the Hudson, and inside of the plank fence which enclosed Beverwyck. There were three cannon mounted on top of the church. These with the nine cannon of Fort Orange were made ready for an attack.

A force of 42 soldiers was sent by Stuyvesant from Fort Amsterdam to the relief of Esopus and a force of volunteers was raised chiefly in New Amsterdam. The command of these volunteers was given to Burgomaster Martin Kregier. The expedition sailed up the Hudson, from New Amsterdam to Ronduit, and landed there on July 4, 1663. Wagon loads of supplies were taken from the two yachts of the expedition to the town. Defensive and offensive operations were organized and were sent

out. De Decker came down from Fort Orange with five Mohawks who tried to arrange a peace. The Esopus Indians insisted that "Corlaer and Rensselaer" should come to their town to make peace. By those titles the red men designated the Director General and the patroon of Rensselaerwyck. The Esopus town was on Shawanagunk Kill about 30 miles southwest of Wiltwyck and the Dutch now set out to attack it. A force of 210 men with two cannon and two supply wagons set out on July 26. It was guided by Rachel La Montagne, wife of Surgeon Gysbert Van Imbroeck, who had been taken prisoner on June 7 but who had escaped from her savage captors. The strongly palisaded Indian town was found to be deserted and the invaders burned it and destroyed the neighboring corn crops. After an all day march, the expedition returned to Wiltwyck.

Efforts were now made, through mediation of Wappinger Indians, to secure the release of the captive whites but they were unsuccessful. In the meantime, the Esopus Indians had built a new castle about 36 miles southwest of Wiltwyck. On September 3, Burgomaster Kregier set out with 55 soldiers to attack the new Indian stronghold. The Dutch soldiers carried the place in a bold surprise attack in which they killed Papequanaehen, the chief, and 14 warriors besides several women and children. The attackers lost three killed and six wounded. They also recovered 23 white captives. A great amount of property was destroyed. The victorious invaders then set out on the return march with thirteen prisoners. This expedition nearly crushed the power of the hostile Indians but a close watch was kept at Wiltwyck and guards were sent out to protect the Dutch farmers who were then harvesting their crops. An expedition was sent out to reconnoitre the Sager's Kill, now known as Esopus Creek. It found no hostile Indians but reported that it was "a beautiful maize land, suitable for a number of bouweries."

A third expedition of 154 soldiers and Long Island Indians was sent against the Esopus Indians' castle on October 1. They found many dead Indians at the place but no living red men were discovered. The fort and wigwams and the corn crops were burned and the invaders returned to Wiltwyck or Esopus on October 5, 1663.

Part of the force now returned to New Amsterdam. Wiltwyck, which then contained 34 occupied lots, was palisaded anew. The hostile Indians now restored some of the captives and promised the release of the others.

On September 6, 1663, Director General Stuyvesant visited Boston to confer with the commissioners of the United Colonies of New England. Besides asking for the enforcement of the Hartford treaty, Stuyvesant proposed free intercolonial trade in the products of the colonies and a "neighborly confederacy and union against so great multitude of barbarous Indians as the Christian people of both nations are dispersed among." The commissioners expressed their willingness with regard to the intercolonial traffic and stated that they would submit the proposition, for a defensive union against the Indians, to their colonial governments.

Again Stuyvesant had moved for colonial union. Although a despot in his attitude toward government by the people, he realized the necessity for union of the colonies, particularly for defense against the Indians. Although Stuyvesant's attempts to unite the colonies failed they were renewed a number of times but without practical results until the assembling of the first Colonial Congress just prior to the Revolution.

One of Stuyvesant's last important official acts was to endeavor to get the Connecticut government to abide by the Hartford treaty. Dutch agents were sent to Hartford for that purpose but they met with no success.

George Baxter and John Scott had been prominent in the affairs of New Netherland for a time. In 1663, they returned to England where Scott petitioned the king to make him governor of Long Island. Scott with Baxter and Maverick of Boston were invited by the Council for Foreign Plantations to prepare a statement of the English title to New Netherland and of the "Dutch intrusion" thereon. Scott returned to America bearing with him instructions from the council and royal letters recommending him to the New England governments. He induced the Connecticut government to appoint him a commissioner with powers of magistrate over Long Island. Scott then visited the Long Island towns and announced that King Charles had granted Long Island to the Duke of York. A number of towns then

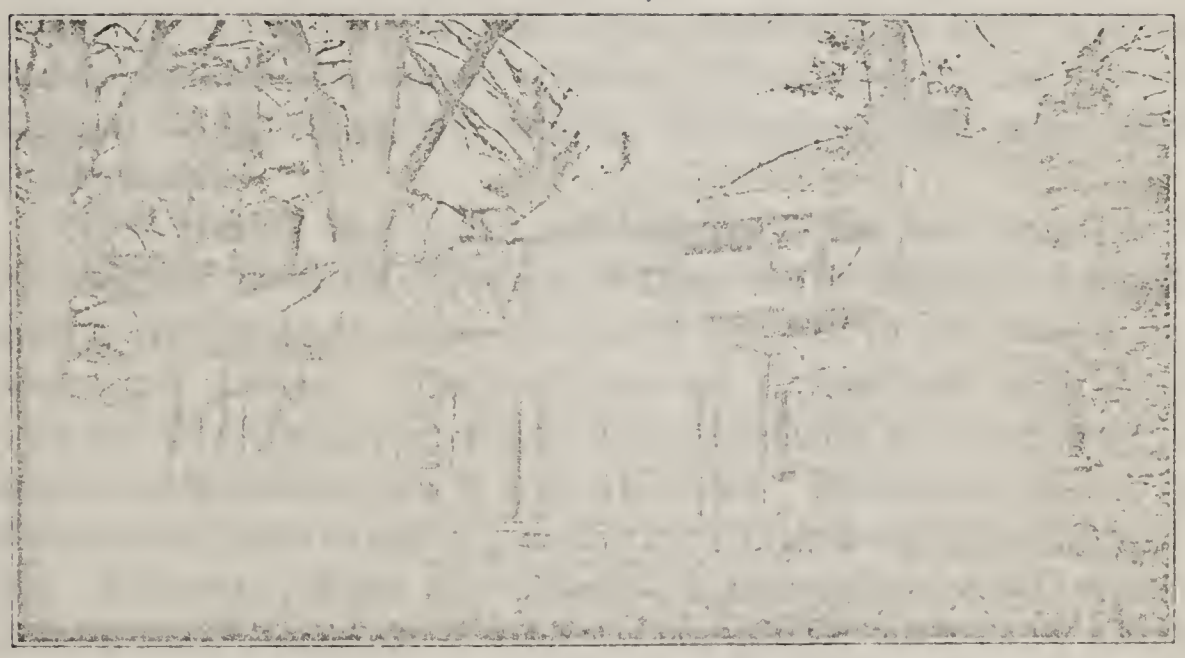
formed a combination which was to be independent of Connecticut and New Netherland. Scott was empowered to act as president of the combination until the Duke of York should announce his government and plans. Scott raised 170 men and marched through the Long Island towns asserting his authority. Stuyvesant sent commissioners to confer with Scott, who soon thereafter returned to England when things settled down somewhat on Long Island.

The danger which threatened New Netherland was now generally recognized by Stuyvesant and members of the provincial and city governments, whom the Director General called into conference. The burgomasters and schepens of New Amsterdam recommended that the provincial capital which "is adorned with so many noble buildings, at the expense of the good and faithful inhabitants, principally Netherlanders, that it excels any other place in North America" should be properly fortified and its military forces increased in order to "instill fear into any envious neighbors." This last sentence neatly hit off the situation concerning the New England colonies which showed jealousy and covetousness regarding the rich lands and strategic situation of New Netherland. The city government was asked by Stuyvesant to raise a force of 200 militiamen and maintain 160 regular soldiers.

Members of the city government of New Amsterdam, on March 18, 1664, requested Stuyvesant to call another provincial assembly which he did on the following day. Elections of two delegates from each Dutch town were held and, on April 10, 1664, the second representative assembly of present New York State met at the City Hall in New Amsterdam, now New York City. Delegates were present from New Amsterdam, Rensselaerwyck, Fort Orange, Brueckelen, Midwout, Amersfoort, New Utrecht, Boswyck, New Haerlem, Wiltwyck (present Kingston), Bergen, Staten Island. Jeremias Van Rensselaer of Rensselaerwyck, was made chairman of the assembly.

This second provincial assembly or "landtdag" called upon the provincial authorities to protect the inhabitants against the "malignant English" and the Indians. However, the assembly decided that no Dutch force could be raised in New Netherland which would be sufficient to fight the English rebels with the aid they could get from Connecticut.

327-362



THE STAATS HOUSE AT THE STOCKPORT STATION, ONE OF THE OLDEST DUTCH FARMHOUSES IN THE HUDSON VALLEY

On May 15, 1664, chieftains of the Esopus tribe came to New Amsterdam and made a peace treaty with Stuyvesant, which ceded the Esopus country to the Dutch. Roelof Swartwout was reinstated as schout of Wiltwyck (Esopus). To secure a regional representative of the West India Company in the middle Hudson River section, William Beeckman was appointed commissary at Esopus. His jurisdiction covered an extensive section of the Hudson River country running from Katskill, where the authority of Fort Orange terminated, southward to the Danskammer, north of the Highlands, which was the northern limit of the jurisdiction of Fort Amsterdam. By this arrangement, the government of New Netherland was divided into three districts consisting of the lower Hudson River section with Long Island and Staten Island, the middle Hudson River region and the upper Hudson area embraced within Rensselaerwyck and adjacent settlements.

More Indian hostilities marked 1664, the last year of Dutch sovereignty over the Hudson Valley. The Mohawks continued their hostility to the New England Indians of the Abenaqui and Soquatuck tribes. The Fort Orange authorities held a council with the Mohawks regarding these relations and Jan Davits and Jacob Loockermans were sent over the "Winterbergs," or Green Mountains, to arrange a peace which they concluded at Narrington. However, when the Mohawk ambassadors went, with presents to the Abenaquis to confirm the peace, they were murdered by members of that tribe who, it is said, were instigated to commit the crime by the English settlers. War again broke out and the Mohicans attacked the Mohawks, killed cattle at Greenbush and burned the house of Major Abraham Staats at Stockport Landing. The Mohican raiders ravished the whole country on the east side of the Hudson River in its upper settled section before they retired. The stone house that Major Staats built, following the burning of his first residence on the shores of the Hudson, is illustrated in this work.

Connecticut now claimed Long Island and imprisoned Scott, the "president" of the Long Island "combination." Stuyvesant protested without avail and the Director General must have realized that the end of his rule and the downfall of New Netherland was near at hand.

CHAPTER 36.

1664. ENGLISH CONQUER NEW NETHERLAND.

ENGLAND PLANS CONQUEST—EXPEDITION SENT TO HUDSON RIVER UNDER COLONEL RICHARD NICOLLS—ANCHORS IN NARROWS, AUGUST 29, 1664—SURRENDER OF NEW AMSTERDAM DEMANDED —PEOPLE FOR CAPITULATION—TERMS ARRANGED AT STUYVESANT'S BOUWERY, SEPTEMBER 6; RATIFIED, SEPTEMBER 8, 1664, WHEN BRITISH SOLDIERS TAKE POSSESSION OF FORT AMSTERDAM AND NEW AMSTERDAM—FORT ORANGE (ALBANY) SURRENDERS ON SEPTEMBER 20, 1664—ENGLISH HOLD TREATY COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS AND SENECAS AT FORT ORANGE—BRITISH OCCUPY ESOPUS (KINGSTON)—STUYVESANT DEFENDS THE SURRENDER BEFORE DIRECTORS OF THE WEST INDIA COMPANY IN HOLLAND—RETURNS TO NEW YORK AND RETIRES TO HIS BOUWERY.

English jealousy of the increasing commerce of Holland and the enlarging importance of that little country on land and sea was the primary cause of the conquest of New Netherland in 1664. These were the same causes which had provoked the bitter animosity of the New England colonies and people toward the Dutch who were located on the Hudson River and its tributary waters. The directors of the English East India Company complained of the rivalry of the Dutch. James, Duke of York and brother of King Charles of England, was president of the African Company which was in keen competition with the Dutch West India Company and the English company bitterly denounced the Dutch company. This rivalry probably had much to do with the English attempt to break down their Dutch rivals by depriving them of New Netherland. James had been libelled in Holland which made him bitter against the Dutch. He became the ardent advocate of his African Company with the King and with Parliament. A state of English animosity against the Dutch was worked up which soon took the form of action. A secret

expedition was sent from England against the African Dutch possessions.

Another source of English jealousy of the Dutch and their province of New Netherland was the fact that traders to Virginia, Maryland and Long Island were in the habit of carrying great quantities of tobacco to the Dutch colonists, the duties on which, it was estimated, would amount to over £10,000 annually. The Plantation Board of England now began to put the British Acts of Navigation and Trade into execution. Governor Berkeley's brother wanted New Jersey and James wished the downfall of the Dutch West India Company. The theft of the Dutch province seemed to the English court the logical revenge for Dutch commercial and maritime success. Accordingly, King Charles gave a patent to James, Duke of York and Albany, for a large territory, embracing the country westward from the Connecticut to Delaware bay and river, and including Long Island and its adjacent islands. This grant took in western Connecticut and the present states of New York and New Jersey.

The Valley of the Hudson had first been ruled by various Indian tribes. For fifty years the Dutch had been in possession and now the English were to become its overlords.

James, Duke of York, was also commander or High Admiral of the English fleet, and he immediately prepared to secure the property of the Dutch which his royal brother had kindly presented to him. A fleet of four vessels was put into service, with a total of 92 guns. A detachment of 450 soldiers was put aboard. Colonel Richard Nicolls was made commander of the expedition and he was also made deputy governor of the New York which was soon to come into being. Three royal commissioners, who were to visit the New England colonies, also embarked. A month after the expedition sailed from Portsmouth, a slice was taken from New Netherland, when the King granted present New Jersey to Lord Berkeley and Sir George Carteret.

Captain Thomas Willett received news from Boston that an English expedition had set sail for the conquest of New Netherland. Willett sent the news to Stuyvesant. Vigorous measures were taken for the defense of New Netherland when the Director General received a misleading letter from the Dutch West India Company making the ridiculous statement that the English ex-

pedition had sailed for the sole purpose of establishing Episcopacy in the English colonies. Remarkable as it may seem, this "news" was received without question and military preparations stopped. Stuyvesant went up the Hudson River to visit Fort Orange.

The captains of the vessels of the English fleet had orders to assemble at Gardiner's Island but the ships became separated in a fog and the chief ship, the *Guinea*, put into Boston, where news of the objective of the expedition became known and it was soon relayed to New Amsterdam. The council sent a hurry call to Stuyvesant who soon returned down the Hudson to his capital and feverish efforts were made for adequate defensive preparations. Only twenty cannon could be assembled. Work was rushed on the fortifications and a permanent guard was organized.

The English fleet anchored in the Narrows and, on August 29, 1664, the Dutch blockhouse on the Staten Island shore was captured. Stuyvesant sent four commissioners to Colonel Nicolls inquiring as to his intentions. On Saturday, August 30, 1664, Nicolls sent a demand for the surrender of New Amsterdam to Stuyvesant who immediately called a meeting of the members of the council and the city government. On Monday, the burgomasters explained the terms of surrender offered by Nicolls to a meeting of the people. Popular opinion seemed to be against any determined resistance. Stuyvesant remained a petty despot up to the very last because he refused to let the people see the correspondence between himself and Nicolls until he was forced to do so.

Nicolls sent Winthrop with a letter for Stuyvesant and a demand for the surrender of the town which the Director General refused. The burgomasters wished to make the letter public but the Director General refused and tore it to pieces. The fragments were pieced together and the contents of the letter were made public. Among other things, Nicolls said that, in case of surrender to the English, "any people from the Netherlands may freely come and plant there, or thereabouts; and such vessels of their own country may freely come thither, and any of them may as freely return home in vessels of their own country." Stuyvesant returned a long argument in support of the Dutch title but he offered to treat with Nicolls.

The English commander now decided to bombard and storm Fort Amsterdam. Long Island was already in the hands of New England and Long Island volunteers who were encamped just below Brueckelen. Here two of the ships landed their English troops. The two other vessels sailed over the upper bay and anchored between Fort Amsterdam and Nutten or Governor's Island.

Stuyvesant stood at an angle of the fort watching the fleet approach. At his side stood an artilleryman with a lighted fuse in his hand, ready to fire at his superior's command. Domine Megapolensis now appeared and led Stuyvesant from the rampart, begging him not to start hostilities. The Director General, at the head of 100 Dutch soldiers, then went from the fort into the city to resist the landing of the English. He sent four commissioners to Nicolls to arrange "an accommodation."

Colonel Nicolls replied effectively as follows:

"Tomorrow, I will speak with you at Manhattan. Friends will be welcome, if they come in a friendly manner. I shall come with ships and soldiers. Raise the white flag of peace at the fort and something may be considered."

The reply of Nicolls soon became known to the people of the city and they went in large numbers to Stuyvesant and begged him to capitulate. The Director General simply replied: "I would much rather be carried out dead."

On September 5, 1664, Domine Megapolensis called a meeting at the Stadt-Huys or City Hall to which the clergymen, city officials and the officers of the burgher guard were invited. A remonstrance to the director was drawn up and signed by 85 of the principal residents of New Amsterdam. Included in the number was the Director General's son, Balthazar Stuyvesant. The city could muster 400 fighting men, 250 of whom were members of the burgher guard and 150 of whom were regular soldiers. However, the city's defenses were very weak and Fort Amsterdam itself was so out-of-date that it could be easily reduced. There were only 600 pounds of powder with which to defend the city.

In the face of a general public demand for surrender, Stuyvesant finally consented to yield. He sent commissioners to treat with Nicolls concerning the terms of surrender. They were

Counselor John De Decker, Captain Nicholas Varlett, Doctor Samuel Megapolensis, Burgomaster Cornelis Steenwyck, Burgomaster Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt, Schepen Jacques Cousseau. The English commissioners were: Sir Robert Carr, Colonel George Cartwright of the expedition, John Winthrop and Samuel Willys of Connecticut, and Thomas Clark and John Pynchon of Massachusetts.

On Saturday, September 6, at 8 o'clock in the morning, all these commissioners met at Stuyvesant's "bouwery" or farm, near present Cooper Union, and arranged the terms of surrender. These articles gave the Dutch security in their property, forms of inheritance, freedom of worship and liberty of conscience. The present city officials were to be continued in office and the populace was empowered to choose deputies with "free voices in all public affairs." Owners of property in Fort Orange were to be allowed to "slight the fortifications there" and enjoy their houses "as people do where there is no fort." For six months, there was to be free intercourse with Holland.

The articles were approved by Nicolls and ratified by Stuyvesant on Monday, September 8, 1664. At 8 o'clock on that day, Stuyvesant marched at the head of the garrison out of Fort Amsterdam and led his soldiers down Beaver Lane to a ship where they embarked for Holland. At the same time, Nicolls entered the city with 170 English soldiers. The English flag was hoisted on the fort and its name was immediately changed to Fort James in honor of the Duke of York. The burgomasters then proclaimed Nicolls to be deputy governor of the province, which he directed be now known as New York, which name was also given to the city.

Counselor De Decker had previously sailed up the Hudson River to present Albany to induce the Dutch there to oppose the English but he could not arouse the people. Governor Nicolls sent four commissioners to Fort Orange to arrange for the surrender of that post which took place on September 20, 1664. The name was changed to Fort Albany as Albany was the second title of the Duke of York. The name also became applied to the town. It is hereafter so designated in this work.

Jeremias Van Rensselaer was confirmed in his authority as patroon of Rensselaerwyck on conditions that he secure a new

patent from the Duke of York and that the people of his manor should take the oath of allegiance.

Colonel Cartwright, one of the English commissioners, now arranged a peace treaty with the Mohawks and Seneca chieftains of the Five Nations at Fort Orange, which was held on September 24. The alliance then made, between the Mohawks and the English remained unbroken to and throughout the Revolutionary War.

Colonel Cartwright landed at Esopus on his return voyage from Fort Albany. Here Cartwright made great efforts to conciliate the people, as he had done at Albany. The former Dutch officers were retained at present Kingston and a garrison of soldiers under Captain Brodhead was installed in the fort.

By the occupation of the forts at New Amsterdam, Fort Orange and Esopus or Wiltwyck, the English now had military control of the three chief posts on the Hudson River. After some little resistance, the English occupied the Dutch forts on the Delaware River and then former New Netherland was entirely in their hands.

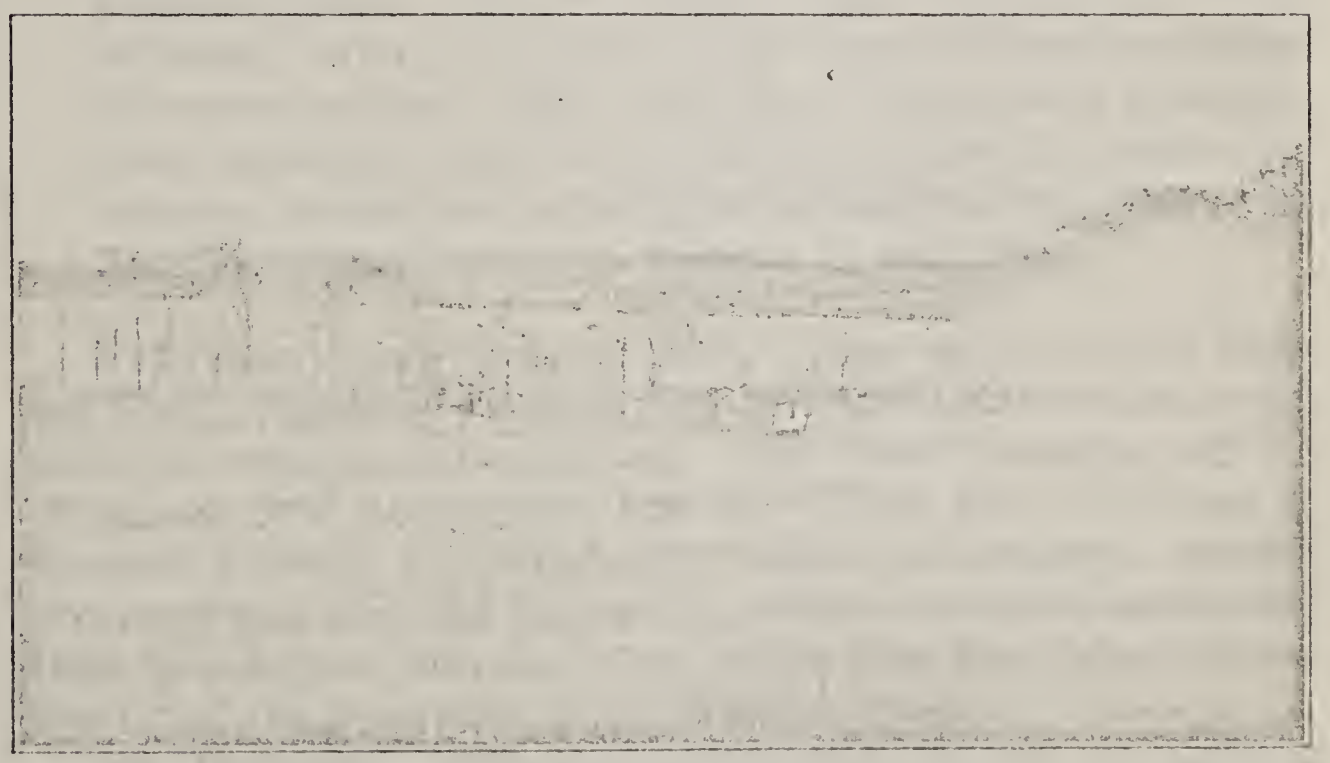
Stuyvesant was severly criticised by the directors of the West India Company, which, however, had done little or nothing to provide proper means of defense for New Netherland. The former director general went to Amsterdam and ably defended his acts. As his family and property interests were in New York, he returned to the city and resided at his "bouwery," where he lived until his death in 1672. His country estate was one of the most important of its kind in New Netherland at the time of the surrender. It cost Stuyvesant 6,400 guilders or $2,688, which was a large sum of money for those days. The lands of the farm ran to the East River and were kept highly cultivated. The house which was of the Dutch type of architecture, was surrounded by flower gardens and orchards of peach, pear and apple trees. Stuyvesant was buried in the family vault in his private chapel which stood on the site of present St. Mark's Church in New York City. The tablet of the vault is built into the east wall of the church where it may be seen today. The Bowery in New York takes its name from the fact that the road led from the city to the Stuyvesant's "Bouwery," and its farmhouse, which

was located in the present vicinity of the junction of the Bowery with present Third and Fourth avenues.

And so, in 1664, Dutch rule came to an end in the Hudson Valley and in the other regions of New Netherland.

The Dutch had ruled the Hudson River country for over 50 years in its most important period—that of settlement and development.

The Dutch downfall had its advantages because the colonies on the Atlantic seaboard, from present Nova Scotia to Florida, were all under English rule. This unity of government made for the national feeling which eventually brought about American independence.



ROCKLAND LAKE

This attractive little lake lies on the western slopes of the northern spurs of the Palisade Range. It is the only lake lying directly on the Storm King Highway, Route 9W

CHAPTER 37.

1664-1668. NEW NETHERLAND BECOMES NEW YORK.

NAME OF NEW AMSTERDAM CHANGED TO NEW YORK, FORT AMSTERDAM TO FORT JAMES, FORT ORANGE TO FORT ALBANY—DUTCH LOCAL OFFICERS RETAINED—1665, THOMAS WILLETT FIRST MAYOR OF NEW YORK CITY UNDER ENGLISH RULE—1665, MOHAWK-MOHICAN WAR—COUNCIL WITH ESOPUS INDIANS AT FORT JAMES, FROM WHOM GOVERNOR NICOLLS PURCHASES LARGE SECTION OF ULSTER COUNTY—JANUARY, 1666, FRENCH RAIDERS CARED FOR AT SCHENECTADY—SEPTEMBER, 1666, DE TRACY, WITH 1,500 FRENCH AND CANADIAN INDIANS, BURNS MOHAWK CASTLES—1667, VAN CURLER, FOUNDER OF SCHENECTADY, DROWNED—TROUBLE BETWEEN CITIZENS OF ESOPUS AND ALBANY AND BRITISH SOLDIERS OF GARRISONS—COLONEL LOVELACE SUPERSEDES COLONEL NICOLLS AS GOVERNOR.

Following the surrender of 1664, Colonel and Governor Richard Nicolls organized his New York provincial government which consisted entirely of Englishmen. The Dutch municipal officers of former New Amsterdam, now New York City, continued to transact business and administer justice as formerly. Nicolls proved to be a wise and diplomatic governor and soon established friendly relations with the Dutch people who then formed three-fourths of the population of the Hudson Valley.

On December 1, 1664, the boundary line between Connecticut and New York was definitely established. It was to run north, from the outlet of Mamaroneck Creek into the Sound, and "about twenty miles from any part of Hudson's River." Long Island was entirely retained as part of the province of New York.

On April 6, 1665, Captain John Manning, commander at Fort Albany, was appointed schout at Albany. The municipal affairs at Albany continued to be managed by commissioners elected by the people and confirmed by the governor. At both Albany and Esopus, things proceeded easily under the new ad-

ministration, with the exception of some slight differences between the townspeople and the English soldiers of the garrisons at the two places.

In May, 1665, Governor Nicolls put the municipal government of New York City on an English footing by appointing a mayor. He was Captain Thomas Willett. He was an Englishman, but was highly esteemed by the Dutch as well as the English residents. Willett was one of the outstanding figures in the New York of the Seventeenth Century. He was the great-grandfather of Colonel Marinus Willett, a famous American soldier who was particularly active in the Hudson and Mohawk valleys during the Revolutionary War.

Governor Nicolls proclaimed that the City of New York embraced all of Manhattan Island including the Village of New Harlem. He appointed or reappointed seven city officials of whom four were Dutch and three were English. The new city government, under English rule, consisted of the following: Mayor, Thomas Willett; aldermen, Thomas Delavall, Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt, Johannes Van Brugh, Cornelius Van Ruyven, John Lawrence; sheriff, Allard Anthony. The English language was substituted for the Dutch in judicial proceedings.

In 1665, the Mohawks and Mohicans renewed their seemingly perpetual warfare and Mayor Willett was sent to Albany to investigate the murder of two Dutchmen near there by Indians. One of the murderers was caught and hung and the other brought in chains to Fort James in New York. Captain John Baker was made commander of Fort Albany, which had grown to be a considerable post with nine cannon and a garrison of 60 soldiers. Captain Baker was also made deputy collector of the port of Albany and was ordered to send the entries of goods by each sloop to Van Ruyven, the collector at the port of New York.

Governor Nicolls visited Esopus and Albany in September, 1665. At Esopus there had been trouble between the soldiers and townspeople. The governor instructed the commander at that post, Captain Daniel Brodhead, to preserve strict discipline. On October 7, 1665, Nicolls held a council with the Esopus Indians at Fort James when he purchased a large tract of land, in present Ulster County, from them for the Duke of York. This purchase was made known to prospective settlers.

In January, 1666, Courcelles led an expedition of 500 French and Canadian soldiers against the Mohawks. The men became lost in the woods and camped within four miles of Schenectady. A party of Frenchmen were ambuscaded by Mohawks and a number were killed and wounded. Three of the "principal inhabitants" of Albany went to inquire why the French thus entered "the dominion of his majesty of Great Britain." Courcelles replied that it was the first information which they of Canada had received regarding the change of sovereignty. The half starved French and Canadians were supplied with wine and provisions by Van Curler and the other burghers of Schenectady and seven of the wounded soldiers were taken to Albany for treatment. The people of Schenectady were given a terrible return for their kindness in the massacre of 1690. Courcelles decided to return to Canada and the terrible winter march was covered again by his men.

War was now on between England on the one hand and France and Holland on the other and the trade of New York City suffered greatly.

In September, 1666, De Tracy, the viceroy of Canada, personally led a large force against the Mohawks. It consisted of 600 French soldiers, 600 Canadian militia and 100 Hurons and Algonquins. This army assembled at Fort Sainte Anne on Lake Champlain and sailed southward over its waters and then marched over the trail along the upper Hudson and thence westward to the Mohawk River. The Mohawks fled at the approach of the army under De Tracy, which was the largest known in present New York State or the Hudson Valley up to that time. The invaders burned all the Mohawk castles then consisting of Gandawague or Caughnawaga, Andagoron and Tionnontogen.

In 1667, negotiations were going on, between Governor Nicolls of New York and Viceroy De Tracy of Canada. Arent Van Curler started on May 28, 1667, on a journey to Quebec with a letter from Nicolls to De Tracy. Van Curler was accompanied by a young Frenchman named La Fontaine whom he had rescued from the Mohawks. The party went down Lake Champlain in canoes paddled by Indians. A storm came up in which Van Curler's canoe was upset and he was drowned. The Indians, who respected him greatly, called the lake "Corlaer's

Lake" for many years thereafter. Van Curler's death was a great loss not only to the Albany area but to the province of New York.

Troubles between the British soldiers, who garrisoned Esopus, and its townspeople now became serious. The officers and soldiers were now all Englishmen and they frequently offended the citizens. There were disturbances both at the Village of Wiltwyck and at the redoubt, ("Ronduit," now Rondout) near the junction of Rondout Creek and the Hudson River. Much of the trouble was due to the despotic conduct of Captain Brodhead, the commandant of the post. He jailed one of the burghers who kept Christmas in the Dutch rather than the English fashion. He arrested Cornelis Barentsen Slegt, the village brewer and sergeant of its militia. As a consequence, Slegt's wife and children ran crying through the little town and the settlers rushed to arms. Captain Brodhead with a few soldiers went to the 60 militiamen who stood in ranks and ordered them to disperse. However the assembled people would not retire until late that night. The local magistrates requested that the commandant release his prisoner and have him tried before them but Brodhead refused. The trouble became most serious when William Fisher, an English soldier, killed Hendrick Cornelissen, the town ropemaker.

This hostility between the people of Esopus and its British garrison was the beginning of similar troubles in the province of New York and it is one of the first instances of the kind in the history of the Thirteen Original States. The Esopus situation, at the beginning of 1667, is historically of great importance as it is one of the first evidences of the American nationalistic spirit which had been growing into being since the first settlement of the Atlantic Seaboard. It was to flame up in Bacon's rebellion in Virginia in 1675 and it was to give constant evidences of growing and strengthening until its culmination in the American War for Independence. The people in all the colonies were soon to begin asking themselves "Why should we not govern ourselves rather than be ruled by a king overseas?" In no part of the Thirteen Colonies was the spirit of independence more in evidence than in the Valley of the Hudson and this was largely true because the conquered population, which furnished the wealth of

the province, was of a different nationality and language than their official rulers and the soldiery.

Governor Nicolls was a fine executive and a man of keenness and diplomacy. He did not dislike the Dutch people and he seems to have understood them. Nicolls sent a commission of three judges to Esopus to try the cases involved and to dispense justice. They were Counselors Delavall and Needham and Justice Van Ruyven. The case of Fisher came up first as a murder was involved. The commissioners started their hearings at Esopus on April 25, 1667, and it is certain that the proceedings caused the most intense public interest although only a few people were allowed in the court room. Captain Brodhead was suspended as commander and Sergeant Beresford was given charge of the post. The burghers said they had armed and assembled because the British soldiers had threatened to burn the town and because Sergeant Slegt, of the burgher guard, had been jailed. Four movers of the "rebellion"—Arent Albertsen, Cornelis Barentsen, Albert Heymans and Antonio d'Elba—were judged guilty of starting a "rebellious and mutinous riot" and they were sent down to New York for sentence by the governor. Nicolls considered a death sentence for the offenders but did not give it because of the advice of his council and the protests of the people. Heymans was ordered permanently banished from the province. The others were banished for shorter terms from Esopus, Albany and New York. These sentences were later commuted and Heymans later returned to Esopus where he became a prominent official. Fisher was acquitted of the murder. Captain Brodhead died a few months after his suspension from the command of the fort. He was a direct ancestor of John Romeyn Brodhead, the famous historian and author of the "History of the State of New York."

Troubles between the English soldiers and the townspeople of Albany also occurred in 1667. Several soldiers of the garrison of Fort Albany were convicted of stealing wampum from citizens. Governor Nicolls ordered prompt restitution.

The naval battles between the Dutch and English fleets in 1666 and the disastrous raid on English shipping in Virginia waters made by the Dutch commander Krynssen put all the colonies in a state of trepidation. New York's defenses were

strengthened and its Long Island militia was ordered put in readiness by Nicolls. The great part played by the burgher guards of the Dutch and the later militia in the history of New Netherland and New York should be noted by the reader. These were American forces acting for the defense of American homes, almost from the first settlement of the Dutch province.

In 1667, the Mohawks and Oneidas made peace with the French at Quebec and Jesuit missionaries established themselves among these two tribes. The chief missions were those of Saint Mary at Tionnontogen, probably located about one mile northeast of Fort Plain, and that of St. Peter at Caughnawaga, now Fonda. These were stockaded Mohawk villages located close to the Mohawk River. A small mission was established among the Oneidas.

In 1667, Stuyvesant secured permission from King Charles for three Dutch ships to trade freely with New York for seven years. The former director general had been in Holland where he defended his surrender of New Amsterdam to the English. After securing the aforesaid trading benefit for the province of New York, Stuyvesant returned to his "bouwery" on Manhattan Island, where he spent the remainder of his life.

In 1668, Nicolls thoroughly organized the regular military forces of the province. New York City was garrisoned with 93 officers and men; Esopus with a force of 22; Albany, 24; Newcastle, Delaware, 20.

Governor Nicolls had often expressed a desire to be relieved from his duties as acting governor of New York and, in 1667, Colonel Francis Lovelace was appointed governor of the province. He reached New York City in the spring of 1668 but did not relieve Nicolls until August. The first provincial governor of the English, like the first provincial director general of the Dutch, was the best. Nicolls had ruled wisely and well. He was to be succeeded by a few competent men and many incompetents, whose course tended to make the cause of liberty and independence increasingly popular with the masses of people of the province of New York.

CHAPTER 38.

1668-1673. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND PROVINCE OF NEW YORK.

1668, EX-GOVERNOR NICOLLS AND GOVERNOR LOVELACE VISIT ALBANY TO REGULATE INDIAN TRADE—AT ESOPUS, GOVERNOR NICOLLS DISMISSES BRITISH SOLDIERS AND PUTS BURGHER GUARD (MILITIA) ON DUTY—SEPTEMBER 25, 1669, NAME OF VILLAGE OF ESOPUS CHANGED TO KINGSTON—MOHAWKS DEFEAT MOHICANS ON MOHAWK RIVER—1671, GOVERNOR LOVELACE PRESIDES OVER PEACE COUNCIL OF MOHAWKS AND MOHICANS AT ALBANY—1672, DEATH OF STUYVESANT—ENGLISH AND FRENCH KINGS PLAN WAR ON DUTCH—COURT ESTABLISHED AT SCHENECTADY—1673, POSTAL ROUTE OPENED BETWEEN NEW YORK AND BOSTON.

One of Governor Nicolls' last official acts was a visit to Albany in company with his successor, Colonel Francis Lovelace. The magistrates of New York City had protested against the monopoly of the Indian trade which had grown up at the present Capital City. The two governors issued instructions regarding the traffic with the Indians at Albany which Captain Baker was instructed to enforce. Another final official act by Nicolls was the granting of a patent to Samuel Edsall for Bronck's Land, opposite Haerlem and on the north shore of the Harlem River, which is now comprised within the Borough of the Bronx.

One of Governor Lovelace's first official acts was a visit to Esopus in September, 1668, when he ordered the garrison there to be disbanded and ordered military duties to be performed by the burgher guard. This act was probably done to prevent further trouble between the citizens and the regular soldiers of the garrison. Lovelace also arranged to found two new villages on Esopus Creek. Shortly after this trip, the Governor tried to establish a printing press in New York on which he desired to have a catechism printed in the language of the Long Island In-

dians. He was unable to obtain a press or a printer. On November 12, 1668, he wrote the Albany officials to enforce the laws against selling liquor to the Indians.

New York was in a prosperous condition in 1668 and Lovelace did his best to make the metropolis progress. Ship building was revived and intercolonial commerce became considerable. Many newcomers arrived to settle in the city and province. A writer of the time said of the city: "There is good correspondence between the English and Dutch and, to keep it closer, sixteen (ten Dutch and six English) have had a constant meeting at each other's houses in turns, twice every week in winter and now, in summer, once. They meet at six at night and part about eight or nine."

Daniel Denton of Jamaica, described the city as "built most of brick and stone and covered with red and black tile, and, the land being high, it gives, at a distance, a pleasing aspect to the spectators." In 1669, the city had 400 houses.

On September 11, 1669, a commission was issued to Counselor Ralph Whitfield, Captain John Manning, Captain Thomas Chambers, William Beeckman, Christopher Beresford and Henry Pawling to regulate affairs at the two new villages of Marbletown and Hurley, in present Ulster County. On September 17, 1669, the commissioners organized the two village governments at Esopus. Hurley was named after the ancestral home of Governor Lovelace on the Thames and Marbletown was so called from the blue limestone which is found there. Beresford was appointed chief magistrate of Hurley and Marbletown. Separate lots in the two new villages were given to the soldiers of the disbanded garrison of Esopus.

On September 25, 1669, the commissioners changed the name of Esopus to Kingston. This was done out of compliment to Governor Lovelace whose mother's family had an estate at Kingston l'Isle in Berkshire, England.

The Mohicans now renewed their warfare on their hereditary enemies, the Mohawks, by a surprise attack on the castle of the Turtle clan at Caughnawaga, present Fonda. The assault was made at daybreak on August 18, 1669. The Mohawks bravely defended the stockade against the attacking force, which numbered 300 warriors. The Mohawks of the other three cas-

tles rallied and started for the scene of battle. The Mohicans retreated down the Mohawk River to Kinquariones, east of present Amsterdam, where the Mohawks routed their enemies.

On April 13, 1670, Governor Lovelace bought the whole of Staten Island for the Duke of York from its Indian owners, who called it Aquehonga, Manacknong.

Ensign Sylvester Salisbury was placed in command of Fort Albany, to succeed Captain Baker who was dismissed from the service. Lovelace announced to the Albany magistrates that the Dutch church and ministry at that place should be supported by the people and that no one should be exempt from contributing, regardless of his religious beliefs. Lovelace suspended the Lutheran minister, Fabricius, from preaching at Albany but he allowed him to preach in New York City.

On August 2, 1671, Lovelace made peace at Albany between the Mohawks and Mohicans. While there, the governor also provided for the better government of the town and its district. Governor Lovelace also made this journey to inquire into the facts as to a voyage that the French Canadian Governor Courcelles had made from Quebec to Lake Ontario. Courcelles' flatboat was the first European vessel which had ever shot the St. Lawrence rapids. Some of the more timid people in the Hudson Valley were badly frightened by Courcelles' voyage and expected the French to be at their doors at any time. As there was now peace between France and England, Lovelace wrote to Delavall at Albany that Courcelles would not dare to "commence a warr on his own head."

Orders issued by Lovelace in 1670 had made it illegal for vessels other than those of the Hudson River towns to trade on that stream. As this had not been observed, Governor Lovelace, in 1671, issued orders for its strict enforcement.

John Archer of Westchester, bought a part of Vander Donck's manor. Governor Lovelace, on November 13, 1671, made Archer's purchase an enfranchised township under the name of the Manor of Fordham.

Peter Stuyvesant, the last Dutch governor of New York, died at his "bouwery" in February, 1672, at the age of 80 years. The Bowery in New York City takes its name from the country-seat of Stuyvesant, which was the Dutch name applied to a farm.

In May, 1670, a secret treaty was signed between the French and English kings, Louis XIV and Charles the Second, to make war on the Dutch republic and divide the country between them. England was to do the sea fighting and France was to conduct the land operations. In March, 1672, the two kings declared war against the Dutch. The scheme of the two monarchs did not work out well. The Dutch bested the French on land and the English on the sea. This war resulted in the Dutch retaking their former province of New Netherland which they held for a year.

The news of the war reached New York on July 6, 1672. Lovelace immediately ordered the fortifications at New York and Albany put in a state of defense. The commerce of the provincial capital suffered severely because Dutch warships swept the English merchantmen from the sea.

Governor Lovelace visited Albany on July 13, 1672, when he regulated the affairs of Schenectady, where a separate court was soon established. The Dutch of that place bought the lands along the Mohawk from its Indians to Kinquariones, nine miles west of the town. About 1670, D. J. Van Antwerp built a stone farmhouse at present Rotterdam Junction, which is now known as the Mabie house and which is also the oldest house or building in the valley of the Mohawk River, which is the chief tributary of the Hudson.

In 1672, Esopus or Kingston and its two adjacent villages of Marbletown and Hurley formed the centers of a prosperous agricultural district. Twenty-five thousand schepels of corn were raised there in that year. On October 16, 1672, the land owned by Captain Chambers, near Kingston, was erected into a manor and named Fox Hall. In the same year, a storehouse was built adjacent to the redoubt near Kingston. Although the place had been renamed Kingston, as previously stated, it was generally called Esopus or "Sopus" until after the Revolution.

On December 10, 1672, Governor Lovelace established a monthly post route between New York, Hartford and Boston. The colonial secretary's office in New York was the first post office, as letters were left there. This first postal service between the chief cities of the northern colonies was ordered to start operations on January 1, 1673. However, the post rider was

kept back until the Albany news reached New York and he started on his first trip on January 22, 1673.

In March, 1673, a report reached New York City that a Dutch fleet was coming from the West Indies up the Atlantic Coast. Lovelace slighted the news. Nevertheless he called soldiers from Albany and Kingston to New York. A muster of the regular and volunteer forces showed a total of only 330 soldiers. After a time, the regulars from Albany were sent back up the Hudson River and a garrison of only 80 soldiers was left at Fort James in New York City.

On July 20, 1673, Governor Lovelace set out on a visit to Governor Winthrop of Connecticut. He left Captain Manning in command of Fort James.

While the militia of Holland was opening the dikes to hold back the French armies, a fighting Dutch squadron left the West Indies and started northward. The fleet entered Chesapeake Bay on July 21, 1673, where it captured eight and burned five tobacco ships which were ready to be convoyed to England. As the Dutch ships were sailing out of the James River, a New York sloop was captured. On board were Captain James Carteret and his young bride and Samuel Hopkins of Elizabethtown, all bound for Virginia. Cornelis Evertsen and Jacob Binckes, the Dutch admirals, questioned Samuel Davis, the captain of the sloop. He stated that New York City was defended by 150 cannon and five thousand men. Hopkins, when questioned, told the truth that the city garrison numbered only 80 men and the cannon, 36. The Dutch fleet now numbered 23 vessels and 1,600 men. The Dutch admirals ordered sail set for New York.

CHAPTER 39.

1673-1674. DUTCH REOCCUPY NEW YORK.

1673, AUGUST 6, DUTCH FLEET ARRIVES OFF SANDY HOOK—AUGUST 9, DUTCH SHIPS BOMBARD FORT JAMES AND 1,000 DUTCH SOLDIERS ADVANCE TO ATTACK—CAPTAIN MANNING, BRITISH COMMANDER, SURRENDERS FORT AND CITY—1673, AUGUST 15, ALBANY RETAKEN BY DUTCH—CAPTAIN ANTHONY COLVE MADE GOVERNOR GENERAL, REPRESENTING DUTCH REPUBLIC—NAME OF NEW YORK PROVINCE CHANGED TO NEW NETHERLAND, NEW YORK CITY TO NEW ORANGE, FORT JAMES TO FORT WILLEM HENDRICK, ALBANY TO WILLEMSTADT, FORT ALBANY TO FORT NASSAU, KINGSTON TO SWANENBURG—1674, NOVEMBER 10, ENGLISH REOCCUPY NEW YORK CITY AND PROVINCE.

On August 6, 1673, the Dutch fleet arrived off Sandy Hook. The next morning the ships anchored at Staten Island. News of their arrival quickly reached Captain Manning at Fort James and he immediately sent a courier to call back Governor Lovelace from Connecticut. The drums were beaten for volunteers and a call was sent to Long Island for them. Although the English element was larger on the island than elsewhere in the province, none came from that section. The Dutch citizens openly rejoiced at the approach of their countrymen in arms and the fleet was soon crowded with visiting Dutchmen from New Utrecht and Flatbush. From these visitors, the Dutch admirals learned of the weakness of New York. The Dutch sailors and men at arms feasted on cattle taken from Governor Lovelace's farm on Staten Island and prepared to take the city, which was practically as defenseless as it had been under Stuyvesant nine years previously.

Captain Manning went through a program very similar to that followed by Director General Stuyvesant when the English captured the province in 1664. He sent three commissioners to

Evertsen and Binckes with a demand as to why the Dutch fleet had come "in such a hostile manner to disturb His Majesty's subjects in this place?" The Dutch commodores replied that they had come to capture the city "which was their own and their own they would have." Evertsen and Binckes sent a trumpeter from the flagship *Swanenburg* to Fort James with a demand for its surrender. The commissioners returned to Manning and told him that the Dutch were too strong for the English to make a successful defense against them.

The Dutch fleet now floated up with the tide to within musket shot of the fort. Manning asked the Dutch commodores for delay but they replied that they would give him only a half hour. As he did not reply to the demand for surrender in that time, the Dutch ships fired a broadside at the fort which killed and wounded several soldiers. The guns of the fort replied and riddled the Dutch flagship. Six hundred Dutch soldiers were now landed on the shore of the Hudson west of present Trinity Church. They were joined by 400 armed men of the Dutch burgher guard. The English flag was struck and Captain Manning now sent three men out of the fort to make terms. They met the Dutch storming party advancing down present Broadway. Captain Anthony Colve commanded the Dutch force and he readily accepted Captain Manning's terms of surrender. The Dutch marched into Fort James and the English marched out, with colors flying and drums beating, and grounded their arms.

At the close of that eventful day, August 9, 1673, New York was again in the hands of the Dutch.

Commodores Evertsen and Binckes represented the Dutch Republic and they were, for the time, in control in the reconquered province. The conquest extinguished the proprietary government of the Duke of York in New York and his grantees in New Jersey. The West India Company had no part and no rights under the conquest. For the first time the Dutch of New York were under the direct rule of the Dutch Republic, unlike the days when it was controlled by the inefficient or despotic officials of a monopoly with delegated governmental powers.

The Dutch fleet was the largest that had ever been seen in New York Bay. As joint commanders of the squadrons, Evertsen and Binckes alternately wore the admiral's flag for a week.

They formed a council of war which consisted, besides themselves, of Captains Colve, Boes, and Van Zyll, which met in the City Hall and the fort. They selected Colve, captain in the Dutch infantry, as Governor General of the restored New Netherland. They changed the name of New York to "New Orange" and that of Fort James to "Fort Willem Hendrick," in honor of the Prince of the then Dutch Stadtholder and later King of England. A new city government, consisting entirely of Dutch burghers, was now chosen.

Several vessels, with 200 Dutch soldiers aboard, were sent up the Hudson River to capture or take over the posts at Esopus or Kingston and Albany. Those weakly garrisoned forts surrendered quietly. The English soldiers were taken down the river as prisoners of war. Albany was retaken by the Dutch on August 15, 1673.

Governor Lovelace was returning to New York when he met Manning's courier at New Haven. He went to Long Island to try to raise the militia and recapture the province. However he gave up the project and finally went, in one of the Dutch commanders' barges, to visit "New Orange" (New York). He was hospitably received and entertained there by the Dutch commanders but, on his third day in the city, he was arrested for debt.

All the Dutch towns of the province promptly swore allegiance to the Dutch administration and the English towns came in after a brief show of resistance by some. Dutch authority was reestablished over New Jersey the name of which was changed to "Achter Col."

The name of Kingston was changed to "Swanenburg," after Evertsen's flagship. Albany was renamed "Willemstadt," after the Prince of Orange, and Fort Albany's name was changed to "Fort Nassau."

The restored province of New Netherland was in far better condition than it ever had been under the ineffective and frequently inefficient rule of the West India Company. New York contained three chief towns and about thirty villages. These chief towns were New York, Albany and Kingston, or "New Orange," "Willemstadt" and "Swanenburg," according to their new Dutch titles, which, however, had only a year's usage. The

Dutch population alone of the province was estimated at over 6,000 and this was gathered mainly along the shores of the Hudson between "New Orange" and "Willemstadt."

On September 8, 1673, the Dutch commanders sent a letter to the States General acquainting them with the recapture of New Netherland. Two vessels of the Dutch fleet were left to protect the city and the rest of the ships soon set sail. Captain Anthony Colve now took his place as one of the provincial governors of the present State of New York.

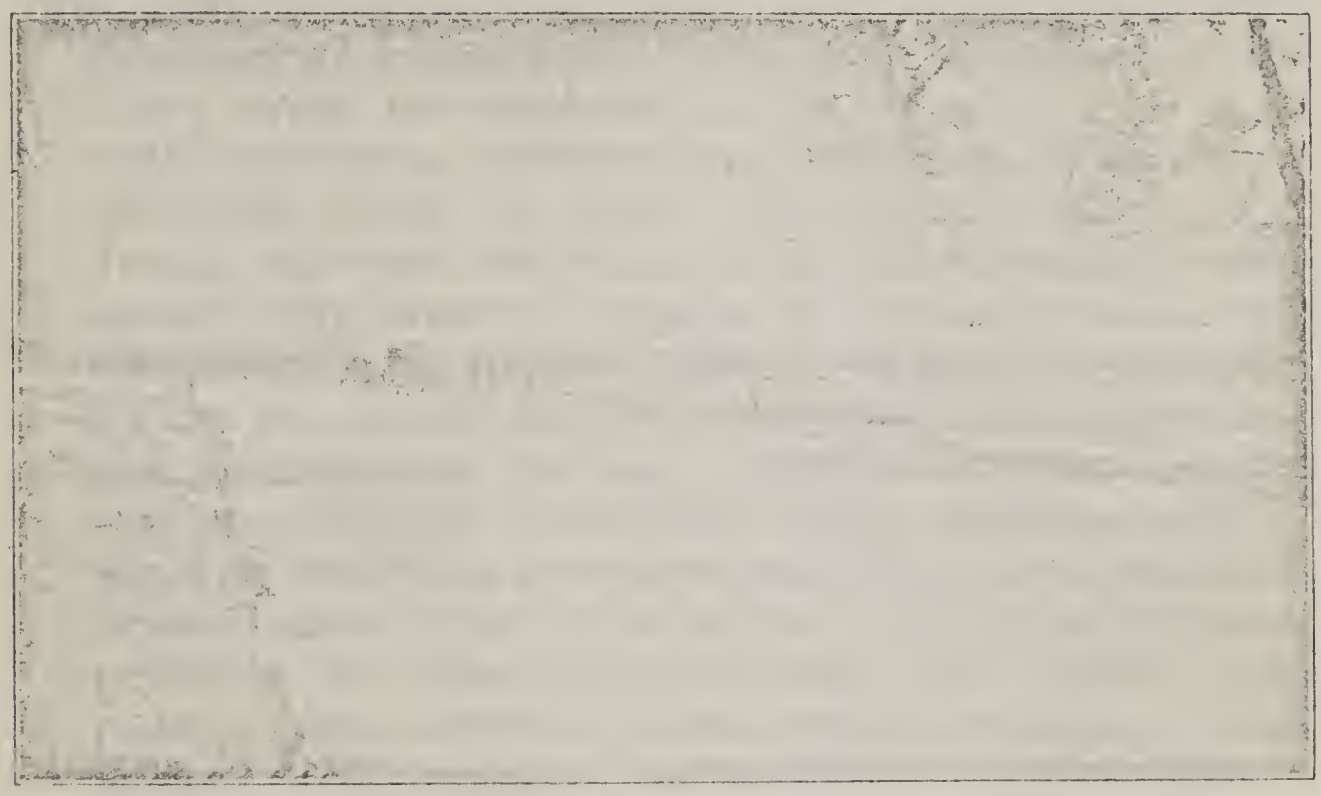
Governor Colve appointed Lieutenant Andries Draeyer commander of Fort Nassau and schout of Willemstadt (Albany) and the colony of Rensselaerwyck. Colve granted the Lutherans of Willemstadt the free exercise of their religious worship.

On October 6, 1673, the Esopus officers were confirmed by the governor. They were Cornelis Wynkoop, Roeloff Kierstede, Wessel Tenbroeck and Jan Burhans of Swanenburg (Kingston) and Louis DuBois, Roeloff Hendricksen, Jan Joosten and Jan Broersen of Hurley and Marbletown, and Captain Albert Heymans. William La Montagne was made secretary and Isaac Grevenraet, schout of the three towns which, with their neighborhoods, formed the nucleus of present Ulster County.

As attack by a New England force was apprehended, Governor Colve strongly fortified New Orange (New York). He mounted 190 guns in the city's fortifications. On February 19, 1674, a peace treaty was signed at Westminster between the English and the Dutch. One of the stipulations was that all territory conquered during the war should be returned. By this provision New Netherland was returned to English rule. When news of the peace and its conditions reached New Orange, its Dutch burghers were enraged and threatened to fight against the change.

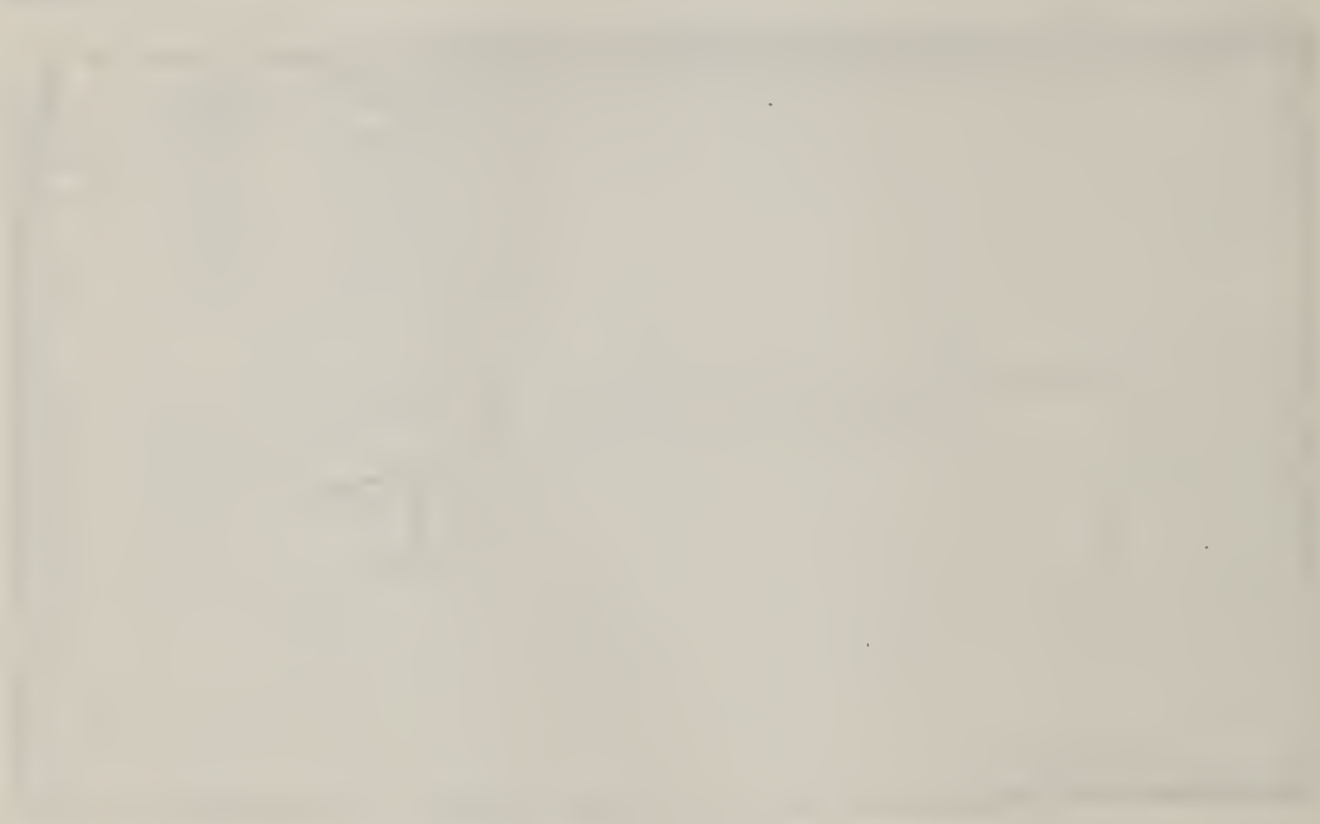
Mohawk chiefs from their castles of Caughnawaga and Canagora visited Colve on May 19, 1674. The Indian ambassadors said that, if the French attacked New Netherland, they would "side with the Dutch and live and die with them." This is an evidence of the strong bonds which united the Mohawks and the Dutch. It was a friendship which was inherited by the English rulers at Albany and one which had a great influence on the history of the United States.

King Charles commissioned Major Edmund Andros as the first governor of New York under its restoration to English government. The States General, on July 7, 1674, ordered Governor Colve to evacuate the province. On November 1, Andros reached Staten Island and, on November 10, 1674, he assumed the government of the province of New York. English provincial officers were generally appointed or reinstated in office.



ALBANY POST ROAD IN IRVINGTON

The lower stretches of this famous highway are lined with handsome old trees in many places. The stone lodge of the estate of Mrs. Finley Shepherd is seen at the right of the picture. Many famous estates line this section of the Albany Post Road



CHAPTER 40.

1674-1682. ENGLISH REOCCUPATION OF HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW YORK PROVINCE.

1674, ADMINISTRATION OF GOVERNOR ANDROS—OPPOSED TO LAND GRABBING BY CONNECTICUT—1675, ANDROS VISITS THE MOHAWK RIVER AND MOHAWK INDIAN CASTLES—AUGUST 30, 1675, RECEIVED AT TIONNONTOGEN, THE MOHAWK CAPITAL—ORGANIZES BOARD OF INDIAN AFFAIRS AT ALBANY—1676, ANDROS HAS NEW FORT BUILT AT ALBANY—GOVERNOR VISITS ALBANY AND GOES UP HUDSON TO SCHAGHTICOKE—1677, GOVERNOR ANDROS HOLDS COUNCIL AT ALBANY BETWEEN MOHAWKS AND MASSACHUSETTS AND CONNECTICUT COMMISSIONERS—GREENHALGH EXPLORES IROQUOIS COUNTRY—ANDROS DECLARES ENGLISH SOVEREIGNTY OVER IROQUOIS—SETTLEMENT OF NEW PALTZ BY FRENCH HUGUENOTS AND GERMANS—SENATE HOUSE BUILT AT KINGSTON—ANDROS IN ENGLAND, DESCRIBES NEW YORK PROVINCE—1680, FIRST LABOR UNION FAILED—1680, GOVERNOR ANDROS TAKES OVER RULE OF NEW JERSEY—1682, FREDERICK PHILIPSE BUILDS MANOR HOUSES AT PRESENT YONKERS AND NORTH TARRYTOWN—WILLIAM PENN STOPS IN NEW YORK.

Governor Andros showed himself to be an aggressive man of initiative in his first governmental acts. He opposed the land-grabbing activities of Connecticut and roused the Long Island towns by reviewing the militia and disarming the Indians. He issued an order that every freeman should have 60 acres of land and every child 50 acres "per head" and every working servant should have 50 acres at the expiration of their term of service.

Andros now decided to visit the country of his Mohawk allies and so he sailed up the Hudson River to Albany. He was the first of the rulers of present New York State to go beyond that town into the Indian country. He wished to renew the alliance between the Mohawks and the English provincial government

and to stop the activities of the French Jesuit priests. After disembarking at Albany, Governor Andros rode to Schenectady where he regulated affairs and then went up the Mohawk River to visit the castles of the Caniengas or Mohawks. On August 30, 1675, he was received at Tionnontogen, the capital of the Mohawk nation, then located a mile or more northeast of present Fort Plain. Here he accepted the name of "Corlaer," who, the chieftains told him, was "a man that was of good disposition and esteemed dear among us." Following his return to Albany, the Five Nations of Iroquois sent chieftains who renewed the former alliance with the English provincial government.

While at Albany, Andros did an important official act when he organized a board of Indian affairs, composed of Albany officials with Robert Livingston, town clerk of Albany, as its secretary. Domine Nicolaus Van Rensselaer was made co-pastor with Domine Schaats of the Albany Dutch Church, an act of Colve's which created considerable trouble. About this time, a yearly fair was established at Brooklyn, near the ferry.

In 1676, Governor Andros had a new fort built at Albany. It was stockaded with four bastions and mounted twelve guns and it defended and commanded the whole town. The governor made a trip to Albany in June and went up the Hudson River as far as Schaghticoke. There he "planted a tree of welfare" and invited all the River and Northern Indians to come and live.

On April 25, 1677, Governor Andros and commissioners from Massachusetts and Connecticut met Mohawk chieftains at Albany and the latter covenanted peace with the friendly Indians of those colonies.

In 1677, Greenhalgh went westward from Albany and explored the Iroquois and left historically important memoranda regarding the Five Nations and their "castles." In 1677, Governor Andros declared English sovereignty over the Iroquois of New York.

The expedition, which set out from Kingston in 1663, to attack the fort of the Esopus Indians entered the valley of the Wallkill and the soldiers thus became acquainted with its agricultural richness. Louis Dubois, who led the expedition, together with other French Huguenots and some Germans purchased a large section of land in the Wallkill Valley and Governor Andros

gave them a patent for it on September 29, 1677. The land granted by this patent extended along the Shawangunk Mountains from Mohunk to Toweratauch and, along the Hudson River, from Rapoos to Jeffronios Hook. Several of the patentees located at once on this grant, which was called New Paltz, in memory of their former home in the Palatinate on the Rhine. An ancient Indian mound on the Wallkill was the site of the first settlement of New Paltz, which was later occupied by the New Paltz Academy. At that place, Dubois and his fellow settlers built a redoubt as a protection against attack by the Indians. The settlement of New Paltz was most important and formed another evidence of the growth and prosperity of present Ulster County.

In 1677, the present "Senate House" was built at Kingston.

In November, 1677, Governor Andros visited England. While there he gave a description of the province of New York, which then consisted of twenty-four towns, villages and parishes. The value of all the estates amounted to £150,000. From ten to fifteen vessels of 100 tons each traded between England and New England and New York. The province had five small ships and a ketch, four of which had been built there. Exports consisted chiefly of provisions, fur, tar and lumber. The imports of manufactured English goods amounted to £50,000 annually. New York and Southampton were the chief foreign ports while Albany was the center of the Indian trade.

The provincial militia consisted of about 2,000 men. Fort James at New York was a square stone fortification with four bastions and mounting 46 guns. Fort Albany was a small stockade with four bastions and twelve cannon. Both forts were garrisoned by English regular soldiers.

In May, 1678, the Duke of York commissioned Governor Andros as Vice-Admiral of the province of New York and, on May 27, Andros sailed for his provincial capital. On his return he ordered that none but citizens of the province of New York should trade at Albany.

In 1679, the Oneidas, Onondagas and Cayugas admitted the sovereignty of the English King over their Indian empire. Smallpox caused many deaths among the Iroquois in this year.

The first classis of the Reformed Dutch Church to meet in America convened in New York on October 9, 1679, and ordained

Petrus Tesschenmaker as a minister of the Gospel. He was later assigned to preach at Schenectady. In 1680, arrangements were made to build a new Dutch church in New York City.

The first attempt to found a labor union in the Hudson Valley and the province of New York was that organized by the coopers of the metropolis when they signed an agreement to charge certain prices for their labor. The combination was broken up when they were brought before the mayor and council of New York City and each sentenced to pay a fine of 50 shillings.

On June 11, 1680, Governor Andros assumed control of the government of New Jersey.

Salisbury, commandant of Fort Albany, died in 1680 and was succeeded by Brockholls.

In 1679, the terms "Tory" and "Whig" came into use in England. The friends of King Charles and his brother, James, Duke of York, were called "Tories," while those who desired a Protestant English King were called "Whigs." The titles, with different meanings, came into use in New York and the other American Colonies, prior to and during the Revolution.

On March 4, 1680, William Penn was granted a royal patent covering the present State of Pennsylvania, part of which had been a part of New Netherland and which had been originally settled by the Dutch.

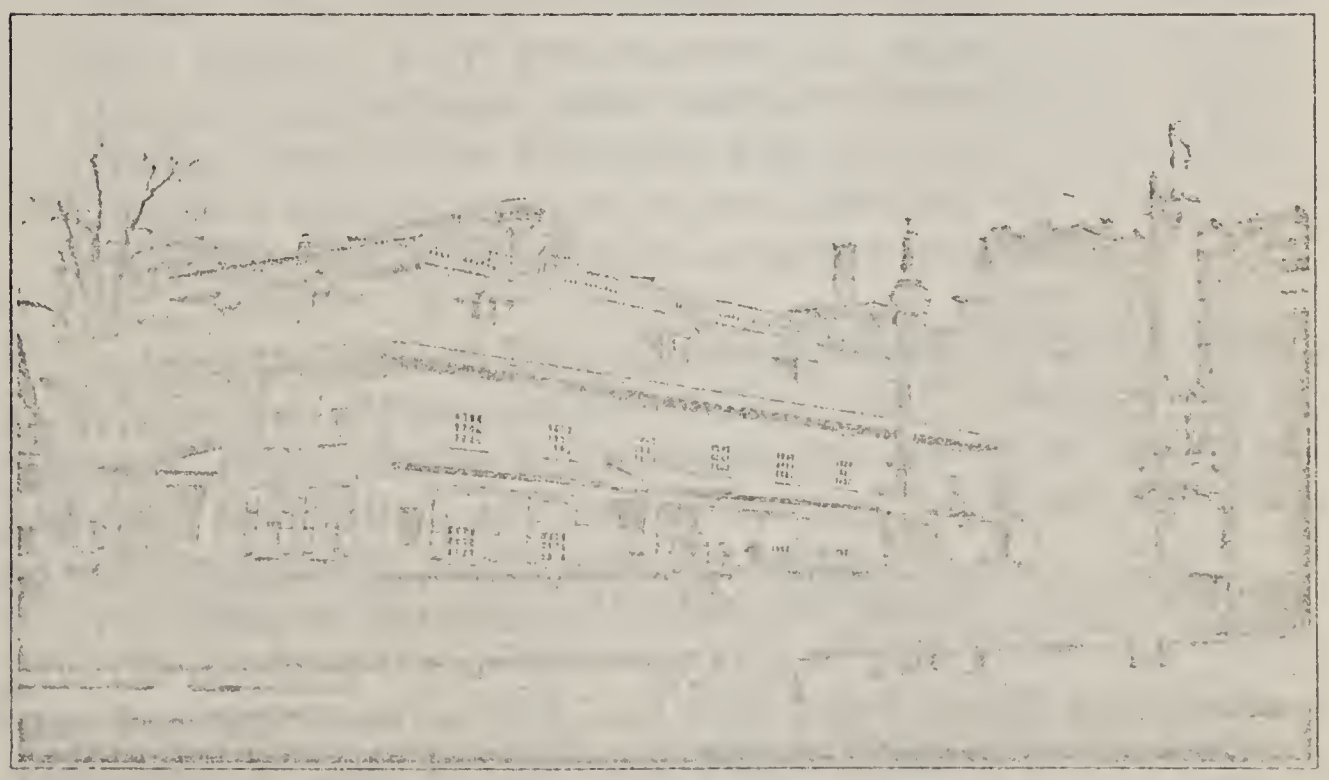
Counselor Frederick Philipse bought land of the Indians on Pocantico Creek, in present North Tarrytown. In 1680, he began to improve his property and erect buildings thereon. The Connecticut authorities thereupon wrote Brockholls, then acting governor of New York, saying that Connecticut owned this land. Philipse had also bought lands at Yonkers. In 1682, he erected two of the most historically important buildings along the Hudson River. One is the lower Philipse manor house at Yonkers and the other is the upper manor house at North Tarrytown. Both are of stone and they are fine Colonial homes and of large size for the period in which they were built. The Yonkers house was used as a civic building for some years. It is now an important historical museum.

Prior to 1682, Philipse erected mills on the Pocantico at the upper manor house. Farmers for miles around brought their wheat there to be ground. Dutch settlements were made in the

Tarrytown region, probably between 1640 and 1650 and, it is said that a church was built there at about the latter date, although there are no historical data to support this assumption. The Sleepy Hollow Dutch Reformed Church bears date of 1699.

William Penn visited his American empire in 1682 and stopped in New York City where he was hospitably received by Acting Governor Brockholls.

In 1683, East Jersey was divided into four counties, one of which was Bergen County which then included "all the settlements between Hudson's River and Hackensack River, beginning at Constable's Hook and so to extend to the uppermost bound of the Province Northward, between the said Rivers." This area now includes Hudson and Bergen, the two Hudson River counties of New Jersey.



LOWER PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, YONKERS

The older part of this stone house was built in 1682, while the later part was erected in 1740. It is now a historical museum

CHAPTER 41.

1683-1686, IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

1683, GOVERNOR DONGAN APPOINTS COUNCIL AND CALLS PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY—DONGAN VISITS ALBANY AND PREVENTS SALE OF SUSQUEHANNA VALLEY BY IROQUOIS TO WILLIAM PENN—OCTOBER 17, 1783, NEW YORK GENERAL ASSEMBLY MEETS AT NEW YORK CITY—TWELVE COUNTIES CREATED: NEW YORK, WESTCHESTER, DUTCHESS, ALBANY, ORANGE, ULSTER, RICHMOND, KINGS, QUEENS, SUFFOLK, CORNWALL, DUKE'S—NEW YORK CITY DIVIDED INTO SIX WARDS—1684, GOVERNOR DONGAN OF NEW YORK, AND LORD EFFINGHAM, GOVERNOR OF VIRGINIA, HOLD COUNCIL WITH FIVE NATIONS AT ALBANY—BOUNDARY LINE SETTLED BETWEEN NEW YORK AND CONNECTICUT—1865, DONGAN ESTABLISHES POST OFFICE IN NEW YORK CITY—1686, GOVERNOR DONGAN SIGNS NEW CITY CHARTER FOR NEW YORK —TAPPAN PATENT GRANTED TO 16 DUTCH FARMERS.

In 1682, the Duke of York appointed Colonel Thomas Dongan to be governor of the province of New York. Dongan was a Roman Catholic, like the Duke, and he was said to be "a man of integrity, moderation, and genteel manners." He was also said to be "enterprising, active, coveting money."

The Duke of York gave Dongan instructions which were to give the people of the province the type of government for which they had petitioned in 1681, and were based largely on information given the Duke by Governors Nicolls, Andros and others.

The enactment of these instructions by Dongan was one of the most important events in the history of New York and the Valley of the Hudson. It resulted in the formation of the six Hudson Valley counties of Albany, Ulster, Dutchess, Orange, Westchester and New York, from which other counties were subsequently taken. These six counties comprised all the lands in the Valley of the Hudson now comprised within the boundaries of the State of New York.

Dongan's instructions included the formation of a council of ten men, whom he was to appoint, and the election of "a General Assembly" of all the Freeholders by the persons who they shall choose to represent them. This Assembly was to consult with the Governor and Council as to "what laws are fit and necessary to be made and established for the good weal and government of the said Colony and its dependencies and of all the inhabitants thereof." The Duke's instructions to Dongan said: "And when the said Assembly so elected shall be met at the time and place directed, you shall let them know that, for the future, it is my resolution that the said General Assembly shall have free liberty to consult and debate among themselves all matters as shall be apprehended proper to be established for laws for the good government of the said Colony and New York and its dependencies, and that, if such laws shall be propounded as shall appear to me to be for the manifest good of the country in general, and not prejudicial to me, I will assent unto and confirm them." All laws were to be submitted to the governor who could assent to them or veto them and the Duke had similar powers. He also had the power to annul them when he saw fit.

James, Duke of York, has been the subject of historical criticism but he gave to New York its first truly representative government. His instructions to Dongan were both wise and just. Due to his action, the province of New York was to set up a popular form of government which was in contrast to the "chartered oligarchies of New England" and which was to be a strong force in the crystallization of American popular sentiment which at last demanded an independent national government.

Governor Dongan reached New York City on August 25, 1683. He made a hurried visit to Albany and then issued a call for an election for members of a General Assembly, which was to meet in New York City on October 17, 1783.

Dongan's visit to Albany was made to prevent the Iroquois from giving or selling the Susquehanna Valley region of New York Province to William Penn, one of the greatest land getters of his time. On October 3, 1683, Mohawk chieftains came to New York City and agreed to give the Susquehanna River country, within the province, to become part of New York. Dongan gave the Mohawks a tattered ship's flag, bearing the English

arms, to be hoisted in their country. On the return of the chieftains to their "castles" on the Mohawk River, Father Vaillant, the only French Jesuit missionary left among them, packed his effects and went to Canada. He was the last Jesuit priest to work among the Mohawks and the others among the other Iroquois tribes left or were driven out in 1683. It must be remembered that Dongan was a Catholic and that this action was largely a move to keep French intrigue out of the Province of New York.

October 17, 1683, is a red letter day in the history of the State of New York and the Valley of the Hudson in which the present capital is located—at Albany. On that day, the General Assembly convened in New York City and seventeen members took their seats. The Duke's letter to Assembly was read. That body sat for three weeks and enacted fourteen laws, each of which was assented to by the Governor and his Council. In a very general way, the new provincial political organization resembled the present legislative and executive functions of the government of the State of New York. The council bore a vague resemblance to the present senate and the General Assembly had a likeness to the present State Assembly. And this popular government had its beginnings on the banks of the Hudson, which the intrepid explorer had visited 74 years previously. Thirty years before, the Landtdag of New Netherland had met and demanded popular government of Stuyvesant. Matthias Nicolls was chosen as the speaker of this General Assembly of 1683.

The first and by far the most important of the enactments of the General Assembly was "The Charter of Liberties and Privileges, granted by his Royal Highnesse to the Inhabitants of New York and its dependencies." The statute was "For the better establishing the government of this Province of New Yorke, and that Justice and Right may be equally done to all persons within the same." The enactment read "That the Supreme Legislative authority, under his Majesty and Royal Highness James, Duke of Yorke, Albany, etc., Lord Proprietor of the said Province, shall forever bee and reside in a Governour, Councell and The People, mett in a General Assembly." Here are seen the basic principles of the government of present New York State. The law provided for a meeting of the assembly at least once in three years. It provided that "every freeholder within this Province, and

freeman in any Corporation, shall have his free choice and vote in any Corporation, shall have his free choice and vote in the electing of the Representatives, without any manner of constraint or imposition, and that in all elections, the majority of voices shall carry it."

Thus New York received its Magna Charta.

The Charter of Liberties and Privileges was read in front of the City Hall to the assembled populace on October 31, 1683. The act went into force immediately after this publication. It enunciated the great American principle of "Taxation by consent," which the people of New Netherland had struggled for during the rule of the West India Company.

The next act passed by the General Assembly was one dividing New York Province into counties, some of whose names seem to have been suggested by Governor Dongan. At that time, the Duke of York had possessions in Maine and he also owned islands off the coast of Massachusetts, which are, of course, no longer contained within the territory of New York. However, in 1683, the governor of the province of New York ruled over the possessions mentioned.

The act creating the twelve counties of the Province of New York was passed on November 1, 1683, professedly "to divide this Province and dependencies into shires and counties." The counties created were the following:

The City and County of New York, bearing the name of the Duke's first title. It included Manhattan, Manning's and Barn islands.

Westchester County, embracing the territory along the Hudson, on the east shore of that river, northward from Manhattan Island to the Highlands and eastward to the Connecticut line.

Dutchess County extended northward from Westchester County to the Albany County line and eastward to the Connecticut line. It was so named in honor of the Duchess of York. In 1683 the spelling was "Dutchess" which has been retained in spite of various attempts to change it to the modern spelling.

Albany County extended northward from Roeloff Jansen's Kill on the east side of the Hudson and, on the west side, northward from Saugerties to "the Saaraghtoga." It was named from the Duke of York's second or Scotch title.

Orange County extended from the northern boundary of the province of New Jersey northward on the west shore of the Hudson to Moodna Creek above the Highlands at New Windsor. It received its name in honor of the son-in-law of the Duke of York —William, Prince of Orange, later King of England.

Ulster County extended along the west side of the Hudson River, from the northern boundary of Orange County northward to the southern boundary of Albany County at Saugerties, and "twenty miles into the woods." It derived its name from the Irish earldom of the Duke of York.

Richmond County included Staten Island and a few lesser islands. It was probably so named in honor of the illegitimate son of King Charles and the Duchess of Portsmouth—the Duke of Richmond.

Kings and Queens counties occupied the westerly end of Long Island westerly from Oyster Bay and Hempstead. They were named in honor of the English king and queen.

Suffolk County embraced all Long Island east of the Queens County line, together with a number of islands. It took its name from the most easterly county of England.

Cornwall County embraced the Duke's land in Maine at Pemaquid. It was named for the County of Cornwall in England. This territory is now part of the State of Maine.

Duke's County included the islands of Martha's Vineyard, Nantucket, Elizabeth Island and No Man's Land. These islands are now part of Massachusetts. The county, of course, was named in honor of the Duke of York.

The General Assembly passed two other important acts, one forming courts of justice and the other for the naturalization of foreigners. The courts established were Town Courts, County Courts or Courts of Sessions, General Court of Oyer and Terminer, and a Court of Chancery, to be "the Supreme Court of this Province."

On November 7, 1683, the Assembly adjourned. The laws, which had been passed, were formally proclaimed in front of the City Hall and, on December 4, they were sent to the Duke of York for his approval and confirmation.

On November 9, 1683, the mayor and aldermen of the city of New York petitioned Governor Dongan that the "ancient cus-

toms, privileges and immunities," which had been confirmed by Governor Nicolls in 1665, should be confirmed by a charter from the Duke of York. In the main, the requests were granted. The city was divided into six wards, the aldermen and other officers were to be elected by the freemen in each ward, the city government was to be put into the hands of these elected officials and a mayor and recorder, to be annually appointed by the governor and council, which was also to appoint a sheriff, coroner and town clerk. The corporation asked to be allowed to appoint its own treasurer. Practically all of the provisions were agreed to and put in force by Governor Dongan; who also allowed the city its ferry, dock and market and, in addition, promised it a grant of land on Manhattan Island.

Present New York, city and state, started the new year of 1684 with governmental foundations which have endured until the present day. New York City officials, were appointed by Dongan on December 8, to hold office under the new civic arrangements. They were: Mayor, Cornelis Steenwyck; aldermen, south ward, Nicholas Bayard; dock ward, John Inians; east ward, William Pinhorne; north ward, Gulian Verplanck; west ward, John Robinson; out ward, William Cox; recorder, James Graham. On March 15, 1684, the common council organized and passed by-laws for the city's government. The provincial capital was now the first New York community with the basis of a modern city government.

As the manufacture of flour was one of the chief industries of the city, the common council asked for a provincial monopoly of the industry. To this Albany objected but without effect and New York City was given the exclusive privilege of packing or bolting of flour and of the exportation of bread.

New York City's shipping, in 1684, consisted of three barks, three brigantines, 27 sloops and 46 open boats. However, the commerce of the port was in a languishing condition.

Governor Dongan now summoned the Five Nations to meet him in council at Albany. In July, he sailed up the Hudson with Lord Effingham, governor of Virginia, and on July 30, the great and historically important council was opened. Governor Effingham charged the Iroquois with breaking their promises in that they had attacked settlers of Virginia and Maryland. He there-

upon made a new "chain of friendship" with the Iroquois. Governor Dongan received the signatures of the chieftains representing four of the Five Nations, to a written submission of their people and their lands to the King of England. The Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagas and Cayugas were represented by sachems. The delegates from the three last nations then buried hatchets but the Mohawks would not do so as they said that they had never broken the first chain. The meeting was held at the Town Hall of Albany and the hatchets were buried in its yard. The Seneca sachems arrived three days later and were included in the chain of friendship. Arms of the Duke of York were given to the chieftains who put them up in their chief castles on their return to the Iroquois country.

Although the City of New York was given a popular government, lesser towns did not fare so well. In 1684, when some of the citizens of Esopus (Kingston) asked to be allowed to choose their own town officers, they were bound over to keep the peace because they were considered to have committed "a riot," according to English law.

The second session of the General Assembly of the Province of New York was held in the capital from October 21 to October 29, 1684. Thirty-one laws were passed and approved by the governor. One of them was an act which put a duty of ten per cent on all goods imported into New York from any other colony where such goods were not produced. In spite of this act there was considerable smuggling from other colonies into New York.

Commissioners from New York and Connecticut settled the question of the boundary line between the two colonies in 1684. It was confirmed in England in 1689.

Governor Dongan established a post office in New York City on March 2, 1685. A charge of three pence was made for a letter which was to be carried not more than 100 miles.

On October 4, 1684, the Duke of York signed the "Charter of Franchises and Priviledges to New Yorke in America." On February 9, 1685, Charles the Second died and his brother James, Duke of York, became King of England. This made New York automatically become a province of the English crown. As James had not yet returned the New York charter, which he had signed,

he decided not to forward it. However, the charter remained in effect as he had not formally disapproved it.

The third General Assembly of the province met in New York City on October 20, 1685. New representatives of this body had been elected. In that year, the assessed valuation of the city of New York was £75,694.

A great Indian council was held by Governor Dongan at Albany in September of 1685.

On October 17, 1685, Louis XIV revoked the Edict of Nantes and subsequent persecutions drove over 200,000, of the 1,500,000 French Protestants, out of France.

These French Huguenots went to new homes in England, Holland, Prussia and America. Many of them settled in the province of New York, which had long been famous for its religious toleration.

On April 27, 1686, Governor Dongan signed a new charter for the City of New York.

In 1686, the Tappan patent was granted to sixteen Dutch farmers, several of them already resident there. The patent largely covered Vriesendael, the property of DeVries, which had been abandoned during the terrible Indian war of 1643. The Tappan patent of 1686 covered the present Village of Tappan and adjacent country. Present Piermont was its Hudson River port.

CHAPTER 42.

1686. ALBANY MADE A CITY.

1685. GOVERNOR DONGAN GRANTS NEW PATENT TO RENSSELAERWYCK PROPRIETORS—JULY 22, 1686. DONGAN GRANTS CITY CHARTER TO ALBANY—PETER SCHUYLER, FIRST MAYOR—ALBANY OF 1686—LIVINGSTON PATENT GRANTED.

Albany became a city in 1686. New York was the first city founded in the province—in 1613. Albany was the second city to be established by the Dutch—in 1614 with the building of Fort Nassau. Albany was also the second city in the province to receive a city charter.

On November 4, 1685, Governor Dongan granted a new patent for Rensselaerwyck to its proprietors, for which they paid him £200. After the patent was executed, it was objected to because it included the town of Albany. By reason of the exertions and influence of Van Cortlandt, Graham and Palmer, the Van Rensselaers gave up "their pretence to the town and sixteen miles into the country for Commons to the King." The wide band of territory running "sixteen miles into the country" extended northwestward to Schenectady and it became known as the "Freedom of Albany."

Governor Dongan and the magistrates of Albany then agreed upon a charter for the city, for which the latter promised the executive a payment of £300. By this charter, Dongan incorporated the "ancient town" of Albany, as a city with large franchises, including the supervision and management of the Indian trade.

The charter was executed on July 22, 1686, during a visit of the governor to Albany.

Governor Dongan appointed Peter Schuyler to be the first mayor of the city, and he also named the following city officials: Recorder, Isaac Swinton; city clerk, Robert Livingston; aldermen, Dirck Wessels, Jan Jansen Bleecker, David Schuyler, Jo-

hannes Wendell, Levinus Van Schaick, Adrian Gerritse; assistants, Joachim Staats, John Lansing, Isaac Verplanck, Lawrence Van Ale, Albert Ryckman, Melgert Winantse; chamberlain, Jan Becker; sheriff, Richard Petty; marshal, James Parker.

Of the foregoing Albany city officials, the mayor and sheriff were to be appointed annually by the governor; the recorder and town clerk were to hold office until the governor named their successors, and the aldermen and assistants were to be annually elected on the Feast of St. Michael—the 29th of September. This charter was brought up to Albany and there proclaimed, or published, on July 26, 1686, "with all the joy and acclamations imaginable." Following the proclamation of the charter, the city officials were duly sworn in and the "ancient town" of Albany began its civic career.

In addition to his appointment of the Albany city officials, Governor Dongan named Robert Livingston to be sub-collector and receiver of the royal revenues at Albany. As previously noted, Livingston had been appointed by Governor Andros to be secretary of the board of Indian Commissioners at Albany in 1675. Livingston secured added influence in the colony by marrying Alida Schuyler Van Rensselaer, widow of Domine Nicolaus Van Rensselaer and a sister of Peter Schuyler, Albany's first mayor and one of the most prominent men in the Albany district. Livingston was a "go getter" of his time. As he had unusual official advantages, he learned of valuable lands on the east shores of the Hudson below the limits of Rensselaerwyck. Following up this information, Livingston secured the Indian title to all the land on the east bank of the river from Roeloff Jansen's Kill, opposite Catskill, to a point opposite the Saugerties Kill, with all the lands eastward, toward the Massachusetts and Connecticut border, which were known as "Tachkanick" (Taconic). He secured a patent for this large territory from Governor Dongan on July 22, 1686. In this way, the clever Scotch clerk suddenly became one of the largest landowners in the province of New York.

The charter given the City of Albany was another step toward the enlargement of the people's political liberties although Dongan probably did not so regard it. With the steady increase of population, his duties and cares as governor increased and he

probably considered that the grant of the city charter to Albany would relieve him of much official business. The people of Albany, however, must have understood the great step which they had taken toward the accomplishment of the great American principle of home rule. City charters were few in those days and none other was granted during Colonial times. Hudson was the third New York town to be made a city and that was done under the state government after the Revolution. Consequently the granting of the Albany city charter must have been a subject of discussion throughout the neighboring colonies. That it was a matter of much interest at the time, to the officials of Canada, is seen by a letter written by Denonville, governor of New France. It was dated at Montreal in 1687 and said that Dongan, by his charter to the City of Albany, had "for money, divested himself of the finest right he possessed—that of nominating the magistrates and other officers, whereby he was enabled to execute the orders of the King of England. Thus he is no longer master of the merchants."

New York and Albany had been the first and second cities of the province of New York up until the time of the granting of the latter's city charter in 1686. Albany was to retain its proud position of being the second largest and most important city in the province and state of New York for over 150 years following the year 1686 when it received its municipal powers and partial autonomy. Although other cities of the state were destined to outstrip it in population, it continued to always maintain its importance because of its commercial standing, its strategic position with regard to the transportation lines of the state and because it became the state capital. Historically its importance as a city of the state is second only to that of New York, the metropolis of the Western World.

Brodhead writes, of the Albany of 1686, as follows:

"At this time, the City of Albany was not much more than a large stockaded village, of which the two chief streets crossed each other at right angles. The one, 'Handelaer's Straat,' or Market Street, [present Broadway] ran nearly north and south, skirting the river, proverbially apt to overflow its banks in time of great flood. The other, running east and west, a little way

up a steep hill, was called 'Yonkheer's Straat,' now known as State Street. About half way up the hill, stood the fort, just outside one of the city gates of which there were six. Albany had no large commerce like New York, but she was the center of the great internal traffic of the province with the native savages. Her importance was second only to that of the metropolis and her magistrates always maintained their official dignity."



STATE STREET, ALBANY

View of the greatest street of the Capitol City, looking east

CHAPTER 43.

1686-1691—LEISLER'S REBELLION.

1685-1686. WESTERN TRADING EXPEDITIONS, UNDER CAPTAIN ROSEBOOM, SET OUT FROM ALBANY—1686. KING JAMES REPEALS CHARTER OF LIBERTIES—1686. POPULATION OF NEW YORK PROVINCE, 18,000—1687. GOVERNOR DONGAN, WITH MILITARY FORCE, SPENDS WINTER IN ALBANY—1688. ANDROS HOLDS COUNCIL WITH FIVE NATIONS AT ALBANY—WILLIAM OF ORANGE BECOMES KING OF ENGLAND—1689. REVOLUTION AT BOSTON—ANDROS IMPRISONED—ANTI-CATHOLIC AGITATION—JUNE 3, 1689, CITY MILITIA, UNDER LEISLER, SEIZE FORT JAMES, NEW YORK CITY—BEGINNING OF LEISLER'S REBELLION—ANTI-LEISLERIANS FLEE TO ALBANY—"ARISTOCRATS" VERSUS "DEMOCRATS"—1689. COUNCIL WITH MOHAWKS AT ALBANY—PEOPLE OF ALBANY AND ULSTER COUNTIES OPPOSE LEISLER—"ALBANY CONVENTION"—IROQUOIS ARMY ATTACKS FRENCH SETTLEMENTS AROUND MONTREAL—FEBRUARY 8, 1690. MASSACRE AT SCHENECTADY AND TOWN DESTROYED BY FRENCH-INDIAN RAIDERS—ALBANY MILITIA AND MOHAWKS PURSUE ENEMY—ALBANY CONVENTION PLANS ATTACK ON CANADA—LEISLER SENDS EXPEDITION WHICH CAPTURES ALBANY AND KINGSTON—MAY 1, 1690. FIRST COLONIAL CONGRESS, CALLED BY LEISLER, MEETS AT NEW YORK—CANADIAN EXPEDITION FAILS—1690. FRENCH HUGUENOT COLONY AT NEW ROCHELLE—1691. LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR INGOLDSBY ARRIVES—LEISLER RESISTS—GOVERNOR SLOUGHTER ARRIVES—LEISLER AND AIDS ARRESTED—PETITIONS FOR PARDON—MAY 16, 1691. LEISLER AND MILBORNE HUNG—NEW YORK AN INDEPENDENT NATION FOR TWO YEARS.

In 1685, Governor Dongan had sent a party of traders out from Albany to trade with the western Indians. It had been headed by Captain Roseboom and was most successful. In 1686, Dongan again sent Roseboom on another expedition to trade with the Ottawas. His party was made up of adventurous young men

of Albany, among whom were the sons of Arent Schuyler and Jan Jansen Bleecker. The party went overland on the Schenectady trail to the little town by that name on the lower course of the Mohawk River. From Schenectady, the Dutch traders went up the Mohawk in a fleet of canoes, twenty of which were loaded with rum. The fleet portaged at present Rome into Wood Creek and sailed down that stream and over Oneida Lake into the Oneida and Oswego rivers. From there the traders and their Indian helpers paddled up the Seneca and Clyde rivers into the Seneca country where they spent the winter. Two Indians from each of the Five Nations of Iroquois accompanied the expedition, according to the desires of Governor Dongan. La Fontaine, a French refugee, also went with the trading party. The object of these trading expeditions was to acquaint the Indians with the advantages of trading with the Dutch at Albany rather than with the French at Montreal or Quebec.

Both the parties of Roseboom and one under McGregorie were captured by a French and Indian force "about twenty leagues below Michilimackinac," in May, 1687.

Many young men of Albany went with the traders who penetrated the forests well into the middle west and present central Canada. In fact many of these young adventurers lived so long in the forests with the Indians that they are said to have grown to look and act more like the Indians than like the Dutch or English.

In the spring of 1687, Dongan sent another party out from Albany under command of Major Patrick McGregorie, who was the muster master general of provincial militia. McGregorie was commissioned to command Roseboom's expedition as well as his own, following his arrival in the Seneca country. Major McGregorie then led the combined parties on the journey to and from the Ottawa country.

On June 3, 1686, Sir Edmund Andros was made governor of New England as well as of New York. Pemaquid in Maine was then annexed to his New England territory.

On May 29, 1686, Dongan received a set of "Instructions" from King James, one of which repealed the Charter of Liberties which he had previously granted to the people of New York. They also discontinued the General Assembly and put legislative

powers in the hands of the governor's council. Liberty of conscience and religious worship was granted to everybody within the province. No one was to be allowed to own a printing press or to print without a special license from the governor.

In 1686, the population of the province of New York was estimated at about 18,000 people. It had nearly doubled in the twelve years which had followed the English conquest from the Dutch. In 1687, Governor Dongan sent a description and map of the province to the Plantation Committee. He stated that the military forces of the province comprised 4,000 infantry, 300 cavalry and one company of dragoons. In this report he said: "In this Country there is a Woman yet alive from whose Loyns there are upwards of three hundred and sixty persons now living. The men that are here have generally lusty, strong bodies. At Albany, there is a Fort made of Pine Trees fifteen foot high with Batterys and conveniences made for men to walk about, where are nine guns, small arms for forty men, four Barils of Powder with great and small shott in proportion. The Timber and Boards being rotten were renewed this year." Dongan suggested that the fort be rebuilt of stone and said "And truly it is very necessary to have a Fort there, it being a frontier place both of the Indians and the French." In his report Dongan described the Iroquois as the "bulwark" of New York against Canada. Brodhead says: "Of all the British colonial governors of New York, Dongan was perhaps most truly a New Yorker."

In September, 1687, Governor Dongan went to Albany with a considerable military force. He spent the winter there in order to repel any invasion by the French from Canada. Major Brockholls acted as temporary governor during his absence.

On April 7, 1688, King James sent a new commission to Governor Andros which made him governor of a "New England," which included not only Massachusetts, New Hampshire and Maine, but Connecticut, Rhode Island, New York and East and West Jersey. This colonial union must have given some few thinking men an idea as to the advantages to be obtained under a governmental union of all the English colonies. The annexation of the province to New England was most unpopular with the people of New York. Her citizens cherished a "State pride," which was not exceeded by those of any other colony. Of this

popular state of mind, Brodhead, the historian, writes: "It is not surprising that, under these circumstances, the people of New York felt themselves to be in an 'unmerited state of degradation' which they contemplated with 'just dissatisfaction.' Their metropolitan city, knowing that it had become 'the envy of its adjacent neighbors who did not cease, by all their little artifices, to interrupt its trade,' especially lamented that unhappy annexation to New England."

Andros, the governor of the greater New England, arrived in New York on August 21, 1688, and that city became, for a time, the capital of the "Dominion of New England," as well as the capital of the province. On August 30, Governor Andros went to Albany where he held a council with the Five Nations in the Town Hall.

In 1688, the Hoosick patent was granted for lands in the Hoosick region of present Rensselaer County.

King James' efforts to establish the Roman Catholic religion in England proved his undoing. William of Orange, on the invitation of many English leaders, landed on the coast of Devonshire on November 5, 1688. King James fled to France and, for fourteen years thereafter, the people of New York were ruled by a Dutch monarch, who was both King of England and stadtholder of the Netherlands. About three-quarters of the people of the province were of Dutch birth or descent and they heartily welcomed the accession of this capable monarch, who succeeded his father-in-law on the throne of England.

On April 18, 1689, a revolution against the government of Andros broke out in Boston and he was imprisoned. Lieutenant-Governor Nicholson of New York, thereupon became the executive of the province. Massachusetts had seceded from the Dominion of New England and a Council of Safety now assumed control of the government there. Plymouth, Rhode Island and Connecticut soon followed the example of Massachusetts and resumed their former colonial autonomy. By its action, Massachusetts became the first strong exponent of "state rights," a doctrine which the majority of its people heartily opposed during the Civil War.

As France was reported to be at war with England and Holland, war measures for defense were adopted in the city and province of New York.

Lieutenant-Governor Nicholson now proposed that the revenue be applied to the city fortifications. And here we come to the first note of the "Leisler Rebellion." Jacob Leisler was a captain of the city militia. He was a wine merchant. At that time he had a cargo of wine on board a ship in New York harbor, on which he refused to pay the duty of £100, alleging that Collector Plowman "being a papist was not qualified to receive it." All Roman Catholics had been removed from office in England. Considerable public disquiet now prevailed in parts of the province. On May 24, 1689, Joost Stoll, an ensign in Leisler's company presented a petition asking that all Roman Catholics be disarmed. There were comparatively few of that religion then living in the province. To quiet the rising anti-papist feeling in New York City, Lieutenant-Governor Nicholson suspended Ensign Russell of Fort James, and Major Baxter of Fort Albany, from their commands.

In the events which followed, Jacob Leisler is the chief figure. He was a German who had first come to New York thirty years previously as a mercenary soldier of the Dutch West India Company. He had grown to be a prosperous wine merchant and was connected by marriage with the Van Cortlandt and Bayard families.

Nicholson had summoned Lieutenant Stoll to appear before him. The governor foolishly flew into a rage and ordered the lieutenant and his sergeant from his room and had threatened them with a pistol. Following this incident, a wild rumor went through the city that the governor intended to burn the town and massacre the Reformed Dutch congregation on the following Sunday, June 2, 1689. On that day, Leisler was in command of the militia guard at Fort James, where there were only 22 regular soldiers. On the following day, June 3, 1689, the city militia, under the leadership of Leisler, seized the fort. Nicholson left the city and sailed for England and Leisler seized executive authority.

On June 12, Leisler invited the counties and neighboring towns to send two delegates to New York, on June 26, to form a Committee of Safety. On June 22, Leisler proclaimed William and Mary as the sovereigns of England and its dependencies. As

Bayard had opposed Leisler he, with the other members of the governor's council, had to flee to Albany.

New York City, several Long Island towns, Staten Island and Essex in New Jersey, Orange and Westchester counties sent delegates to Leisler's convention which met on June 20. Albany and Ulster counties were not represented. A Committee of Safety of ten members was formed which appointed Leisler to be captain of Fort James. On August 16, 1689, Leisler was commissioned by the Committee of Safety to be Commander in Chief of the Province of New York. The wine merchant-captain then virtually assumed the office and duties of governor of the province. He was largely influenced by Jacob Milborne. Leisler now changed the name of Fort James to Fort William in honor of William of Orange.

The names "Democrat" and "Aristocrat" now come into the picture. The party headed by Bayard were called "Aristocrats," while the followers of Leisler were known as "Democrats." The desire for popular home rule probably had as much to do with Leisler's Rebellion as any of the causes to which it is generally attributed.

Leisler now wished to extend his authority over Albany. With that upper Hudson River city in his possession, he would effectually control the province. Albany had long been dominated by a few prominent people of Dutch birth or ancestry. Peter Schuyler, the mayor, and the other officials have been previously named. Almost all the population of Albany was Dutch and a large percentage of them were members of the Reformed Church. They had joyfully welcomed the accession of the Stadtholder of Holland to the throne of England.

On May 24, 1689, a council was held with the Mohawks at the Albany Courthouse, which was attended by Captain Bull, a commissioner sent to Albany by Connecticut. The Mohawks renewed the old covenant chain and they were followed by the Oneidas, Onondagas, Cayugas and Senecas during the next month.

Nicholas Bayard reached Albany on July 5. Both Albany and Ulster counties had refused to have anything to do with Leisler or his government. These two counties stood out against Leisler for the next nine months and conducted their own affairs

as though they were separate and independent colonies. Again the people of the Valley of the Hudson had a lesson in home rule and popular government.

A convention of the civil and military officers of Albany County was held at Albany on August 1, 1689. It was "Resolved that all public affairs for the preservation of their Majesties' interest in this city be managed by the Mayor, Aldermen, Justices of the Peace, Commission Officers of this city and county, until orders come from their most Sacred Majesties." This body was called "the Albany Convention" and it ruled the affairs of the city and county of Albany for the next seven months.

On July 26, 1689, an Iroquois army, consisting of 1,500 warriors, suddenly attacked the French settlements on the Island of Montreal and killed 1,000 French Canadians. This terrible Indian attack made the people of Schenectady and of the city and county of Albany fear the danger of French revenge. The people of Schenectady were so divided into factions caused by the Leisler Rebellion that they seemed unable to unite on any scheme of defense. The Leislerians were in the majority.

The Albany Convention made every effort to meet the emergency, in which aid was requested even from Leisler. Leisler refused to help and the Albanians then sent to Massachusetts and Connecticut for military aid. Connecticut promised to send 80 men but Massachusetts did nothing.

Leisler now resolved to bring Albany and Ulster counties under his rule and he sent Milborne with 51 soldiers to take possession of Fort Albany. Learning of this expedition, the citizens of Albany acted at once. Mayor Schuyler was made commander of the fort. The following day, November 9, 1689, the three sloops of the Leisler expedition were seen anchored below the city. Milborne landed and demanded possession of the fort which Schuyler denied him. Then Leisler's emissary went to the City Hall where he made "a long oration in high style and language." On the next day, which was Sunday, November 10, Milborne produced his commission before the Albany Convention who refused to recognize his authority. He then made another long oration to the people.

On November 11, Milborne again demanded that Schuyler surrender the fort which demand was again refused. Milborne

prepared to storm it. A war party of Mohawks had come to watch the course of events. They were all firm friends of "Brother Quider" as they called Schuyler. The Mohawks massed on present Capitol hill and prepared to fire on Milborne's men as soon as they should attack the fort. This move of the Mohawks prevented the beginning of a civil war.

Milborne put Joachim Staats, a lieutenant of the Albany militia, in command of his men, and went to Esopus (Kingston) where he made an attempt to secure the support of its people for the Leisler government. However, they had heard of Milborne's failure at Albany and they would have nothing to do with him. Having failed completely in his mission, Milborne returned to New York.

Leisler's despotic rule now began to drive many people from the province who took refuge in New Jersey and Pennsylvania.

On September 2, 1689, King William appointed Colonel Henry Sloughter to be governor of New York.

Leisler, on December 28, 1689, "commissioned" Captain Staats to take command of Fort Albany, which request was again refused by the Albany Convention. As reports of a French invasion of New York were now current, the Albany Convention sent out Mohawk scouts to Lake Champlain to watch the movements of the enemy.

Count Frontenac, the new viceroy of Canada, reached Quebec in September where he was hailed as "the Redeemer of Canada." The vigorous old governor organized three French-Canadian expeditions directed against the English colonies. One, to go from Montreal, was to invade New York; another, from Three Rivers, was to attack New England between Albany and Boston, while the third was to go out from Quebec to ravage Maine.

The largest of the French raiding parties was that which was to be sent against Albany. It numbered 210 men. Eighty of these were "Praying Indians" from Caughnawaga opposite Montreal. They were led by "Great Kryn," the former Mohawk chief. Sixteen of the party were Algonquins and the rest were Canadian bushrangers. Sainte Helene and Mantel, Canadian lieutenants, were in command. After a war council, held on the march, it was decided to attack Schenectady instead of Albany.

On February 5, 1690, several members of the Albany Convention went to Schenectady in an attempt to get the people to unite in the face of a common danger. Their efforts were unsuccessful.

The French-Indian war party reached Schenectady at about midnight of February 8, 1690. The villagers had left both gates of their stockade wide open. Its only guardians were snow men at each side which were the work of the village boys. The invaders entered the river gate of the town and with wild yells began to murder, burn and destroy. Sixty men, women and children were killed, many were wounded and 27 were made prisoners. Many of the people escaped from the town into the woods. Some made the terrible journey of fifteen miles over the snow covered trail to Albany and were frozen or nearly killed by the journey. Laden with booty and drunk with the liquor of their victims, the raiders started their long return march during the next morning. Only two houses were left standing in the burned town. Some of the surviving citizens returned the next day and started the long task of rebuilding the town. Two of the enemy had been killed and one severely wounded. About sixty old people, women and children had their lives spared after the first fury of the attack. The Schenectady massacre is one of the most terrible chapters in the history of New York.

The Albany County militia numbered 300 men at this time. The Mohawks assembled 140 warriors who were joined by 50 Albany County militia. Six Frenchmen were killed and thirteen captured by this pursuing party. The captives were brought back to the Mohawk castles and tortured and burned.

The Albany Convention now assumed colonial governmental powers. It sent Barentsen to New York to secure a sea force to aid in crushing Canada and it sent Livingston and Teunissen of Albany and Garton of Ulster to Connecticut and Massachusetts to secure military strength for a united attack on Canada.

Brodhead says, in his "History of the State of New York:"

"The idea of a confederation of British North American Plantations originated in New England in 1643. The policy of consolidating his colonies to make them 'terrible to the French' was the thought of James the Second in 1688. The patriotic purpose of a union of all the English dependencies in North

America, from Virginia to New England, against a common enemy, was inspired by the New York Iroquois and formally propounded by the Albany Convention in February, 1690. From Schuyler and his associates just praise should not be withheld."

When news of the Schenectady massacre reached Leisler in New York he ordered wholesale arrests of many former officials, officers and leading citizens who did not favor his administration. Several of his intended victims escaped to other provinces. In his abnormal egotism, Leisler blamed the Albany Convention for the Schenectady massacre. On March 4, 1690, Leisler sent a force of 160 men up the Hudson to take possession of Albany and Esopus (Kingston). This expedition was commanded by Milborne, De Bruyn and Provoost. Confronted by such a large armed force, Fort Albany or "Fort Orange," as then called, was surrendered. Milborne then went to Esopus where he took control. Leisler went forward with arrangements for an expedition against Canada. He also issued a call for an election of representatives to a popular assembly which met in New York City on April 24, 1690. This body passed an act repealing the flour bolting monopoly of New York City and providing equal trading and commercial privileges for all towns of the province.

Through Leisler's invitation and efforts, the first American colonial congress met at New York City on May 1, 1690, where delegates from New York, Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut and Maryland met to consider the expedition against Canada. Thus the idea of colonial unity had its birth on the shores of the Hudson River. It was proposed by the Albany Convention, put through by the energy of Leisler and the first American congress met at the mouth of this noble river with its glorious American tradition.

Although Leisler wanted Milborne to be appointed commander of the expedition against Canada, he was forced to accept Winthrop of Connecticut. The army got to the head of Lake Champlain, when smallpox, lack of provisions and smallness of the force, forced its return to Greenbush, opposite Albany. Captain John Schuyler, brother of Mayor Peter Schuyler of Albany, made a successful raid into Canada with 40 militiamen and 120 Mohawks. Phipps' naval expedition against Quebec was re-

pulsed and the whole movement of the six American colonies against Canada failed ingloriously.

On May 20, 1690, a colony of French Huguenots was founded at New Rochelle on land sold to them by Leisler. The first minister to be located there was David Bonrepos, who removed to Staten Island a few years later.

On October 10, 1690, Leisler appointed Wendell mayor of Albany to replace Schuyler.

On January 29, 1691, Lieutenant Governor Ingoldsby reached New York. Leisler ordered cannon and a volley of musketry fired from Fort James against Ingoldsby's soldiers who were on parade. Several were killed and wounded.

Governor Sloughter's ship, *Archangel*, anchored below the Narrows a few days later. Sloughter immediately went to New York and told Ingoldsby to demand surrender of the fort from Leisler, who again refused. On the following day, March 20, 1691, Leisler surrendered the fort to Sloughter, who had Leisler jailed at once.

Sloughter now renamed the fort "William Henry" after the King of England. He issued a call for a general election for the first New York general assembly to be held under the direct authority of the English Crown.

Leisler, Milborne and eight principal Leislerians were brought to trial on March 24, 1691, at a special term of Oyer and Terminer. They were all convicted of "holding by force the king's fort against the King's Governor," and were sentenced to death.

On April 9, 1691, the Assembly met in New York City, with representatives from the counties of New York, Albany, Ulster, Dutchess, Westchester, Richmond, Suffolk, Kings and Queens. Rensselaerwyck later sent Kilian Van Rensselaer. James Graham of New York, was elected speaker. The representatives were all opposed to Leisler and they condemned his government. The Assembly passed fourteen laws. One of its acts was the recommendation of a gift of £150 to Captain William Kidd, later the notorious pirate.

Petitions for the pardon of the condemned men, signed by many people were sent to Governor Sloughter while, on the other hand, many requested carrying out the sentence. Sloughter

asked the advice of his council which recommended the execution of the condemned men. The governor on May 14, 1691, signed the death warrant of Leisler and Milborne and reprieved the other eight men. The Assembly approved of the decision. Leisler and Milborne were hung on May 16, 1691. Their execution was a grave political error as it perpetuated the Leisler-Bayard "class" and political feud for many years thereafter. It also made martyr for liberty out of a rather mean, despotic character. One of its worst results has been that historians have "taken sides" in the matter, even two centuries after its happenings. For instance, Brodhead was strongly anti-Leisler while Lossing was bitterly pro-Leisler.

One of the results of Leisler's Rebellion was a long step toward American independence. Jacob Leisler had set up a virtually independent government for New York which had function for two years without foreign control or interference. It is only natural to suppose that thinking people of the time must have asked themselves why New York could not have a permanently independent government. And if New York could have one, why could not British North America govern itself. Again a lesson in American liberty had gone forth from the banks of the Hudson.

CHAPTER 44.

1690-1700 IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND PROVINCE OF NEW YORK.

1690. POUGHKEEPSIE SETTLED BY DUTCH—1691. GOVERNOR SLOUGHTER VISITS ALBANY AND SCHENECTADY—FINDS DISTRICT IN RUINS BECAUSE OF WAR WITH FRENCH—150 FARMS DESERTED AND DESTROYED—INGOLDSBY SUCCEEDS SLOUGHTER, ON LATTER'S DEATH—1692. GOVERNOR FLETCHER MAKES MAJOR PETER SCHUYLER OF ALBANY, A CHIEF ADVISER—FEBRUARY 6, 1693. FRENCH-INDIAN EXPEDITION DESTROYS THE FOUR MOHAWK CASTLES—FEBRUARY 13. MAJOR SCHUYLER, WITH 237 MILITIA AND 290 IROQUOIS, STARTS PURSUIT—FEBRUARY 17. EXPEDITION IN BATTLE WITH RAIDERS NEAR PRESENT SARATOGA SPRINGS—ENEMY FLEES, FOLLOWING CONFLICT—MOHAWK SURVIVORS FORM TOWN OF OGSADAGA AT TRIBES HILL—1693. WILLIAM BRADFORD SETS UP FIRST PRINTING PRESS IN NEW YORK—MANOR OF PHILIPSBURG CREATED—PIRACY—1698. GOVERNOR BELLOMONT ARRIVES—GREAT FUNERAL OF LEISLER AND MILBORNE—PEACE OF RYSWYCK—1700. GOVERNOR BELLOMONT HOLDS COUNCIL WITH FIVE NATIONS AT ALBANY.

In June, 1691, Governor Sloughter visited Schenectady and Albany and inspected their defenses. He died on June 16, 1691. Ingoldsby filled his place until the new governor, Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, arrived on August 30, 1692.

After Governor Sloughter visited Albany and Schenectady in 1691, he wrote: "I have found our plantations and Schenectady almost ruined. I have garrisoned Schenectady and Halfe Moon with some of the 100 fusileers raised by our Assembly." Later he wrote concerning this journey: "I found Albany full of disorder, the people about to desert it; about 150 farms deserted & destroyed by the French."

In 1692, Mayor Ingoldsby, then acting governor, also found the people of Albany and Schenectady in great fear of an attack

from Canada. Forays of small bands of Canadian Indians caused general alarm. He confirmed the chain of friendship with the Mohawks and sent 30 of the Albany garrison to Schenectady and 30 to Half Moon, and he asked for 50 for Niskayuna as they could not be spared from Albany. From this it can be seen that Fort Albany and its immediate outposts were considered to be the chief defensive point against invasion from Canada.

In August, 1692, an expedition of 350 Iroquois Indians was fitted out at Schenectady. The Iroquois warriors did much damage in Canada and kept the French constantly on the defensive.

Governor Fletcher did a wise thing in making Major Peter Schuyler of Albany, one of his chief advisers. Fletcher appointed him to be a member of his council where his influence was of the best. Schuyler, like Van Curler, had almost unbounded influence over the Five Nations. Fletcher's administration of seven years was marked by bitter partisanship engendered by the Leisler and Anti-Leisler factional fight. Fletcher sided with the Anti-Leisler party. Although the New York Assembly was almost unanimously opposed to the Leisler party, its members were strongly for popular rule.

Frontenac had failed in his efforts to win over the Five Nations. He resolved to strike a crushing blow at the Mohawks, who were his bitterest enemies. In 1693, the Canadian viceroy organized an expedition of 625 men, consisting of warriors from various tribes of Indians, 100 picked soldiers and a large band of Canadians. This force left Chambly near the close of January, 1693, and went southward over the ice of Lake Champlain and on the snow covered trails.

Parkman, the historian, writes as follows of this phase of the expedition:

"Their way was over the ice of Lake Champlain, for more than a century the great thoroughfare of war parties. They bivouacked in the forest in squads of twelve or more; dug away the snow in a circle, covered the bare earth with a bed of spruce boughs, made a fire in the middle and smoked their pipes around it. Here crouched the Christian savage, muffled in his blanket, his unwashed face still smirched with soot and vermilion, relics of the war paint he had worn a week before, when he danced the

war-dance in the square of the mission village; and here sat the Canadians, like Capuchin monks but irrepressible in loquacity, as the blaze of the campfire glowed on their hardy visages and fell in faint radiance on the rocks and pines behind them."

A hard winter's march of sixteen days brought the invaders from Three Rivers on the St. Lawrence to the Mohawk River near present Amsterdam. A young Dutchman, named Van Eps, was with them who had been captured at Schenectady in 1690. He escaped to that place, whence the news was hurried to Albany and New York. Governor Fletcher started, on February 11, from New York in sloops as the Hudson was free of ice. He made the trip to Albany with 300 volunteers in three days.

The Mohawks had four castles on the north shore of their river in 1693—Caughnawaga, at present Fonda; Canagora, near Big Nose Mountain; Canajorha, on the Knauderack Creek; Tionnontogen, at Wagners Hollow, about two miles northeast of present Fort Plain.

The invaders reached the first Mohawk castle of Caughnawaga in the afternoon of February 6, 1693. The invaders waited until nightfall and then captured the first three castles, burned one and herded their prisoners in the other. They then moved forward about ten miles and surrounded the Mohawk capital of Tionnontogen on the evening of February 7. The invaders hid in the surrounding woods and heard the Mohawks dancing their war dances. About midnight the noise ceased and the enemy advanced. No sentinels had been posted and a Canadian Indian scaled the palisade and opened the gate. The invaders rushed in. A brief fight followed in which 30 Mohawks and some Frenchmen were killed. Nearly 300 Mohawks were captured.

The invaders burned Tionnontogen and the other three Mohawk castles as they passed down the river with their long line of prisoners. At present Amsterdam, they left the river and took the Canadian trail north through present Saratoga to Lake George.

They had marched two days when they were hailed by Mohawk scouts at a distance who told them that the militia was on their track but that peace had been declared in Europe and that the English wished to parley. The Canadian Indians would then go no further and the French commanders were compelled to

halt. Trees were cut down and a fort was built in the Iroquois fashion by encircling the camp with a high and dense abatis of trunks and branches. Here the French remained two days before the Canadian Indians would consent to move, which they did on February 13.

During the attacks on their castles, many Mohawks escaped and went to Schenectady and begged for aid against the enemy.

Major Peter Schuyler was commander of the Albany County Regiment of militia and he mobilized these men and went to Schenectady on February 9. On February 13, he set out in pursuit of the enemy with 237 militia mostly of the Albany County regiment. On February 15, Schuyler's regiment was joined by 290 Iroquois men and boys, some with arms and some without.

On February 17, Schuyler marched his army against the enemy's fortified camp which was located about three miles from the present City of Saratoga Springs. The Iroquois allies were as unmanageable as the Indian allies of the French. The Iroquois then built a fort similar to that held by the invaders. The Canadian force attacked three times and the battle was bitterly fought in a driving snow storm. Both sides lost and gained ground by turns. Finally the conflict ceased and the warring forces retired to their respective camps. In the early hours of the next morning, the Canadians retreated.

Schuyler ordered a pursuit but his men were starving and he had to wait until provisions came up the next day. A reenforcement of 50 men came and the pursuit was resumed. The invaders threatened to kill all their prisoners if they were again attacked and the Iroquois then refused to fight as their wives, children and friends would have been killed as a consequence. Schuyler was then compelled to return with about 50 Mohawk prisoners who had been rescued during the pursuit.

The enemy suffered terrible privations on the journey back to Canada and several of them perished. Relief parties went out from Montreal to bring in the helpless soldiers and captives. Both sides lost heavily in the battle of Saratoga but the Canadian invaders had more killed and wounded than the American militia and their Mohawk and Oneida allies.

Governor Fletcher reached Schenectady on February 17 with 280 militia, but he returned, on February 22, with Schuyler to Albany.

In all the bloody but generally indecisive and futile conflicts of King William's War, there were no more effective blows struck, by Frontenac from New France, than those which destroyed Schenectady in 1690 and the Mohawk castle in 1693.

Following the burning of their towns and the capture of hundreds of their people, the Mohawks gathered in one town, Ogsadaga, at present Tribes Hill. Here they lived until 1700, when they removed to three castles (palisaded villages), which they built on the south side of the Mohawk river at present Fort Hunter, Fort Plain and Indian Castle.

Frontenac sent another expedition into the Onondaga country in 1696, which burned the Onondaga castle. The constant Indian warfare brought famine to Canada. The treaty of Ryswyck in 1697 brought peace.

Following the Canadian invasion of 1693, a garrison of 300 men was kept at Albany. In 1693 there were 3,000 militiamen in the province where there had been 5,000 before the start of King William's War in 1689. Because of the war many people had moved from the province and especially from Albany County which formed the frontier.

In 1693, the first printing press was set up in the province at New York City by William Bradford, a Quaker from Philadelphia. In 1725, Bradford began the publication of the first provincial newspaper in New York City.

In 1693, the manor of Philipsburg was created. Frederick Philipse had long been prominent in colonial affairs. His activities had resulted in the growth of two villages—Yonkers and Tarrytown—at both of which places he had manor houses and mills. Because of these mills, these villages grew to be market towns for a wide area of country. The Sleepy Hollow Reformed Dutch stone church bears the date of 1699 but it is considered to be much older by many people. It is one of the outstanding historical landmarks on the Albany Post Road, U. S. Route 9.

In 1695, Governor Fletcher was recalled. During his administration, legalized piracy had grown to be a very considerable "industry" of the province of New York and Fletcher's direct and indirect connection with this barbaric business was largely responsible for his recall. These pirates were politely called

privateers and they sailed out of New York harbor and plundered merchant vessels in sight of the fort.

Richard Coote, Earl of Bellomont, was appointed as Fletcher's successor and he was ordered to break up the system of piracy which then prevailed in New York City and with which some of the most prominent and wealthy men of the province are said to have been connected. Bellomont did not reach New York until 1698, with his kinsman, John Nanfan, his Lieutenant-Governor. Before Bellomont left London, a stock company was formed to break up the business of piracy. Bellomont, several noblemen and others composed the company, which included Robert Livingston, first lord of Livingston Manor. Livingston proposed the scheme of fitting out a galley fittingly called *Adventure* to cruise as a "privateer." Livingston also recommended Captain William Kidd to be the ship's commander. Kidd was commissioned by King William and sailed from England for New York in 1696. He did a great work in practically clearing American waters of pirates. Following his feats on the Atlantic Coast, Captain Kidd, with a crew of 155 fighting men, sailed for the Indian Ocean to battle with the numerous pirate ships which sailed its waters. Kidd soon turned pirate himself and swept the seas, respecting the flag of no nationality. In 1698, one of the greatest pirates of all history turned the prow of his ship homeward and finally landed on Gardiner's Island where he is said to have buried treasure of great value.

Kidd's piracies soon became known in England and a popular clamor soon arose. Suspicion was expressed even of King William as well as Lord Livingston and the others of the company which had employed Kidd. Something had to be done to quiet popular clamor and it was done to Kidd. Bellomont, who was in Boston when Kidd landed there, had the arch pirate arrested. It is said that Kidd tried to secure Bellomont's favor by telling him the location of his treasure. The Governor, however, sent Kidd to England, where he was hung as a pirate in 1701. People are known to have periodically dug for Kidd's buried treasure.

Governor Bellomont was pro-Leisler in his sympathies, although the Provincial Assembly of 1698 was strongly anti-Leislerian. In the fall of 1698, the families of Leisler and Milborne were allowed to dig up their remains and give them a

conventional burial. This funeral was attended by over 1,200 people, an enormous crowd for those days of small populations. The Assembly of 1699, was pro-Leisler in character, which shows the vitality of the forces set in motion by Leisler's Rebellion.

In 1698, Bellomont sent Colonel John Schuyler and Domine Dellius, both of Albany, to Canada to acquaint Frontenac with news of the peace of Ryswyck. Frontenac had planned to attack and crush the weakened Mohawk tribe at its single village of Ogsadaga. This invasion from Canada was to have been made in the winter of 1697-1698 but the snow, which lay everywhere seven feet deep, probably saved the Mohawks from extermination.

The ravages of King William's War can be seen in the population figures of Albany County in 1689 and in 1698. The total population in 1689 was 2,016 and, in 1698, it had fallen to 1,459. During the war nearly 100 people of the county had been killed, about 50 had been made prisoners and over 400 had left the county. The Mohawks had suffered even more severely. Where they had 270 braves at the beginning of the war in 1689, they were now reduced to 110 warriors. The French raid of 1693 dealt the Mohawks a blow from which they never recovered.

The last years of the seventeenth century witnessed the settlement of one of the most beautiful, progressive and prosperous of our Hudson Valley towns—Poughkeepsie. Dutch settlers located there about 1690, or soon thereafter. Poughkeepsie means "safe harbor" in the Indian tongue and it took its name from the quiet waters in the mouth of the Fall Kill, where the Indians sought refuge in their canoes when storms lashed the waters of the Hudson.

On August 20, 1700, Governor Bellomont held an important Indian council at Albany which was attended by 50 sachems of the Five Nations. Peace was made between New France and the Iroquois at Montreal on September 8, 1700.

CHAPTER 45.

1701-1713. QUEEN ANNE'S WAR IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

1702. LORD CORNBURY, NEW YORK'S WORST GOVERNOR, ARRIVES —FIRST FREE SCHOOL ESTABLISHED IN NEW YORK CITY—1703. EPIDEMIC OF YELLOW FEVER—POPULATION GROWTH—1704. QUEEN'S FORT BUILT AT SCHNECTADY—1708. PALATINE GERMANS SETTLE NEWBURGH—1709. CANADIAN INVASION PLANNED —FORT NICHOLSON BUILT AT PRESENT FORT EDWARD—CANADIAN EXPEDITION FAILS—MAJOR SCHUYLER TAKES FIVE MOHAWK CHIEFS TO ENGLAND—1710. PALATINE GERMAN SETTLEMENTS OF HUDSON—1711. CANADIAN EXPEDITION MARCHES FROM ALBANY TO LAKE CHAMPLAIN—RETURNS BECAUSE OF BRITISH NAVAL FAILURE—FORT HUNTER BUILT—1713. DUTCH FARMERS SETTLE TIVOLI AND BARRYTOWN.

Lord Bellomont died in New York City on March 5, 1701. Controversy now arose as to who should be governor pro tem., as Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan was then in the Barbadoes. Colonel William Smith, president of the council, claimed the power. Nanfan returned in May. A new Assembly was elected in July, which convened on August 19, and the province was then in control of the Leislerians or Democrats. The fight between the Leislerians, or Democrats, and the anti-Leislerians, or Aristocrats, continued for 20 years after Leisler's execution in 1691. Bitter as it was, it tended to promote the idea of popular rule and national independence.

King William died in 1702. His wife, Queen Mary, had died several years previously, and the monarch was now succeeded by Anne, her sister. Queen Anne appointed Sir Edward Hyde, her uncle, to be governor of New York. He was called Lord Cornbury by courtesy and he was "a libertine and a knave," to put it very mildly. He was a bigot, persecuted all sects outside of the Church of England and also misruled the province for seven

years. He was an anti-Leislerian in politics. Cornbury holds the record as New York's very worst governor.

In 1703, yellow fever ravaged New York City and Cornbury removed his court to Jamaica, Long Island.

Albany County, as well as the entire province of New York, rapidly recovered from the effects of King William's War. As previously noted, the county's population had fallen to 1,459 in 1697. In 1703, Albany County numbered 2,273 people and its growth thereafter was steady and continuous.

In 1704, the fortifications of Schenectady were rebuilt and a new stronghold, called Queen's Fort, was there erected. In 1709, a fort was built at the mouth of the Battenkill. In 1710, Fort Hunter was built at the junction of the Mohawk and Schoharie rivers. About 1701, the log house of Hendrick Frey had been fortified with a stockade and occupied by a company of soldiers. This fort was in present Palatine Bridge. These outposts were built around the central frontier stronghold of Albany, during Queen Anne's War, the second French-English conflict to affect the American colonies. Queen Anne's War lasted from 1701 until 1713.

In 1705, the New York Assembly won its first victory over absolutism or autocratic rule when it obtained, from Queen Anne, the permission to make specific appropriations of incidental grants of money and to appoint its own treasurer to take charge of extraordinary supplies. This was another great step forward taken by the people of New York toward independence and popular sovereignty.

In 1708, John, Lord Lovelace, succeeded the unspeakable Cornbury as governor of New York. He found both the people and the Assembly strongly Democratic in politics. Lovelace died in 1709 and Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldsby was the provincial executive for eleven months.

Newburgh was first settled by Germans from the Palatinate on the Rhine in 1709. This was the first settlement made in the course of the important immigration movement of the Palatines into New York and Pennsylvania in the early eighteenth century. Newburgh is one of the six most historically important cities of the Hudson River—New York, Yonkers, Newburgh,

Poughkeepsie, Kingston and Albany. It was the only one of the six which was not first settled by the Dutch.

Newburgh was one of the first seats of German immigration in North America. In 1708, Joshua De Kockerthal, a Lutheran clergyman, led a company of 52 immigrants from the Lower Palatinate on the Rhine to America. The expedition was sent out under the auspices of Queen Anne. Following their arrival in New York, nine families were settled on the Quassaick Creek, which empties into the Hudson at Newburgh. The settlement was known as "Palatine Parish by Quassaick."

The settlement of the Palatines at Newburgh and New York City in 1708 was the beginning of later large immigration by the same people, at first into the Hudson and Mohawk valleys and later into Pennsylvania.

The City of Newburgh probably takes its name from the fact that the ruler of the Lower Palatinate was of the House of Neuberg.

In 1709, the influence of the governors of New York and Pennsylvania had already induced many of the Five Nations to abandon their attitude of neutrality and ally themselves with the English cause in Queen Anne's War. English forts were planned on Lake George and Crown Point and posts were built at present Fort Edward and on Wood Creek, which formed the water connection between the head of Lake Champlain and the Hudson River. An invasion of Canada by land and sea was planned in this year, in which the people of New York engaged with enthusiasm. The Assembly appointed commissioners to secure the necessary war materials and issued bills of credit to cover the expenditures. These bills were New York's first paper money. Colonel Peter Schuyler of Albany, had secured the friendship of most of the New York Iroquois who were engaged to make canoes for this expedition. A number of batteaux and over 100 canoes were constructed by the 600 Iroquois who were employed in this work. It is stated that Albany officials supported 1,000 of the wives and children of these Indian workmen at that place during this period.

The expedition of 1709 failed dismally on account of the failure of England to support it with a naval force as promised. New England raised an army to take Quebec which waited at Boston all summer. Instead of sending a fleet to coöperate with the

two American expeditions England sent the promised fleet to Portugal. When the troops under Nicholson, who were waiting on Lake Champlain to move forward, heard this disheartening news, they reluctantly gave up their plan of Canadian conquest and returned to Albany, from which place the militia returned to their respective communities. England's policy of inaction and lack of coöperation caused much bitterness in the colonies.

As part of the activities of the 1709 expedition, a small fortified storehouse was erected at present Fort Edward. This was named Fort Nicholson in honor of the commander of the army. Fort Lyman (later Fort Edward) was built on the same site.

In 1711, an army of 14,000 men was raised by the provinces of New York, New Jersey and Connecticut. This force mobilized at Albany. It was the largest Colonial force ever raised in the Province up to that time and, for the population of that period, it was a considerable army. Colonel Francis Nicholson, who was New York's lieutenant-governor under Andros, was commander-in-chief of the expedition. He led his men from Albany in June, 1711, and marched to the head of Lake Champlain. There he halted to await news of the English fleet which, with British regulars and Massachusetts militia, was to attack Quebec. This naval expedition numbered 16 men-of-war and 40 transports. Seven English regiments and 900 Massachusetts militia totaled 7,000 men. It was the greatest military and naval expedition ever assembled in America, but it was doomed to utter failure. It sailed from Boston to the St. Lawrence in July, 1711. The incompetence of Admiral Walker and the ignorance of his pilots wrecked ten of the eleven ships before the fleet had sailed 20 miles up the St. Lawrence River. Over 1,000 men perished. The remainder of the fleet returned to Boston.

Nicholson heard of this disaster in his camp at the head of Lake Champlain. Without the support of the fleet, nothing could be accomplished and so he gave orders for the return march to Albany and thus the proposed invasion of Canada in 1711 was an inglorious failure, which occasioned bitter disappointment and criticism throughout the Colonies, particularly considering the fizzling of that of 1709.

The Five Nations had made a treaty with the French in 1701, in which they pledged neutrality between the French and

English in Queen Anne's War, which began in that year. Their attitude toward the English government had become somewhat lukewarm because of a provincial policy of aloofness, for which the English government was also largely responsible. The Provincial government now decided to renew the old, close alliance between the Five Nations and the English. Colonel Peter Schuyler of Albany, was one of the greatest men of the early English Colonial period. Like Van Curler before him and Johnson after him, he enjoyed the confidence of the Iroquois and other Indians to an unlimited extent. The Mohawks, in particular, held Schuyler in high esteem. They could not pronounce the name "Peter" and so they called him "Broeder Quider"—Brother Peter. Of Schuyler, the Iroquois said: "He never told a lie and he always thinks before he speaks."

When Nicholson's ill-fated expedition was in preparation, an invitation was extended by Schuyler to the Iroquois to select chiefs of the Five Nations to accompany him on a trip to London. Only the Mohawks accepted. They sent King Hendrick, Chief Brant and three others. Brant was the father of the famous Joseph Brant, Mohawk war chief of the Revolution. Schuyler and his Mohawks sailed for London in December, 1709. The trip was a great success from every point of view, with the exception of the death of one of the Mohawks on the voyage to England.

Queen Anne presented the Mohawk chieftains with resplendent court costumes and received the party several times at court. She offered knighthood to Schuyler but, with the spirit of true American democracy, he courteously declined the honor. King Hendrick had his portrait painted in his court costume and his likeness is one of the most interesting features of this historically important mission.

The visit of Schuyler and his Mohawk friends to London created a popular sensation, which, incidentally, must have roused an inquiring interest in the province of New York from which they came. Lossing says of their visit: "Multitudes followed the dusky monarchs wherever they went. Their portraits soon appeared in the print shops. The queen caused them to be covered with scarlet mantles edged with gold. They were feasted at banquets, witnessed military reviews, saw a part of the mighty British Navy; in a word, they were shown the glories of the

kingdom and were deeply impressed by the evidences of British power. They were conveyed to the palace of St. James to stand before the queen and they gave belts of wampum and signed their totems to documents as pledges of their friendship and fidelity."

Schuyler's mission was crowned with success. The English ministry was aroused from its apathy and listlessness concerning the safety of the American Colonies and the English public became somewhat interested in America. The Mohawk chiefs returned with Schuyler to New York in 1710 and sailed up the Hudson to Albany, whence they went over the Schenectady trail to their respective "castles" on the Mohawk River. They so impressed the Five Nations with their accounts of England that the great majority of the Iroquois again became pro-English in their sentiments. Queen Anne sent medals to all the Five Nations.

Colonial authorities erected Fort Hunter on the Mohawk River in 1711 and in 1712 a small stone church was built there which was known as Queen Anne's Chapel. It was a mission church for the Mohawks of the lower "castle" of Iconderoga. Queen Anne gave a silver communion service for this church. The stone parsonage, which was built in 1712, is the only remaining building of those Colonial structures at present Fort Hunter.

During the period embraced in this chapter, New York City developed rapidly. The first free grammar school was established in the city in 1702. In 1703, Trinity Churchyard was granted to the church by the city. In the same year, a cage, pillory and stocks for the punishment of criminals were erected in front of the City Hall. In 1707, Broadway was paved from Bowling Green to Trinity Church. In 1710, a Lutheran Church was erected at the corner of Broadway and Rector Street.

In 1709, a slave market was established at the foot of Wall Street where slaves were sold and hired. Slavery prevailed in New York State from the founding of New York in 1613 to 1827—a period of 214 years. Punishments for offenses committed by slaves were very severe and often cruel. In 1712, a rumor spread through the city that a band of negroes had formed a plot to burn the city and murder its people. Nineteen negroes were found guilty and hanged or burned alive. The jails and other places were filled with suspected slaves. The panic was

started by a negro outbreak. Some slaves, who had been badly treated by their masters, met at night in an orchard near Maiden Lane. They were armed with guns, swords, knives and other weapons. They set fire to an outhouse and, as men came running to put it out, the blacks killed nine and wounded six. They were attacked by the whites and the ringleaders captured. Another "Negro Plot" occurred thirty years later.

In 1713, Dutch farmers made the first settlements at Barrytown and Tivoli on the Hudson River in northern Dutchess County.

In 1713, the peace of Utrecht ended Queen Anne's War and the Valley of the Hudson and the Province of New York enjoyed peace, prosperity, growth and development for thirty years thereafter— until the outbreak of King George's War in 1743.



SAUNDERS TRADE SCHOOL, YONKERS

The Yonkers High School is at the left and the tower of the City Hall is seen over the High School

CHAPTER 46.

1710. PALATINE GERMAN SETTLEMENT IN MIDDLE HUDSON VALLEY.

1710. GOVERNOR HUNTER SUCCEEDS LOVELACE—ARRIVES AT NEW YORK CITY WITH 3,000 PALATINE GERMANS—SETTLED ON LIVINGSTON'S MANOR—ENGAGED IN MAKING "NAVAL STORES"—1711. 105 PALATINES JOIN NICHOLSON'S CANADIAN EXPEDITION—PALATINES DISSATISFIED—1712. MANY REMOVE TO SCHOHARIE VALLEY.

Robert Hunter succeeded Lord Lovelace as governor of New York. He arrived in 1710, with 3,000 German Lutherans and Calvinists, from the Lower Palatinate on the Rhine. French invasion of the Palatinate had spread ruin through that country and thousands of its inhabitants fled to Holland and England. Queen Anne and the English Parliament met the expense of the passage of the Palatines to New York. They were settled on Livingston's Manor on the east side of the Hudson and on the opposite western shore. In 1712, many of them removed from the Hudson River to the Schoharie Valley, while a few are said to have settled at Stone Arabia, Montgomery County, in the Mohawk Valley, in the same year. In 1722-25, many of these Palatines removed from the Schoharie Valley to the Mohawk Valley and the commonwealth of Pennsylvania, which later became the chief objective of these immigrating Germans. There they became the ancestors of what are today known as the "Pennsylvania Dutch."

The German immigration into the Province of New York in 1710 was the first important movement of people of that nationality into the present United States, although smaller groups had located at various points previous to that year.

During the two centuries, which followed the beginning of the Reformation in 1517, the people of the Lower Rhine Palatinate were mainly Protestants, changing from Lutherans to Cal-

vinists and from Calvinists to Lutherans to correspond with the religious faith of the prince, who was ruling at that time. In considering the horrors of the religious wars, which accompanied the progress of the Reformation, it must be remembered that religious and political issues were often entangled in a manner most confusing to the present-day reader, who is unacquainted with their complicated ramifications.

The ravages of King William's War (1689-1697) in the area now called Albany County have been previously noted. They were duplicated on a colossal scale in the Rhine country. The terrors and desolation of that war in the Lower Palatinate were duplicated in Queen Anne's War, which raged from 1701 to 1713. Marshal Villars led a French army into the Palatinate in 1707 which again burned and ravaged that fair land. Its ruined people then fled to Holland and England and many of them eventually came to New York and Pennsylvania. Many American families in the Hudson, Mohawk and Schoharie valleys of New York, as well as in Pennsylvania, trace descent from these Palatines who came to America with Governor Hunter and who landed at the port of New York on June 14, 1710. The Palatine German immigration of that year forms one of the most important chapters in the history of the Valley of the Hudson.

The passage from England had been long and severe and 470 of the Palatines died on the voyage. Rev. Joshua Kockerthal, who had led a small company of Palatines to present Newburgh in 1708, returned to England, after founding that Hudson River city, and he was instrumental in bringing out the great company of 1710, which he accompanied.

The good treatment given Kockerthal and his fellow settlers of Newburgh appealed strongly to many of the Palatines in England and they asked to be sent to New York. Kockerthal also asked them to be sent there.

Over 30,000 Germans had left their desolated country and sought refuge in England, and the charity of its people was taxed to the utmost to provide for them. While in London in 1710, Schuyler and his Mohawks saw the pitiful condition of the homeless and houseless Palatines and one of the Mohawk chiefs presented to Queen Anne a tract of land on the Schoharie River

for the use of this distressed multitude. The Schoharie Valley lies within the watershed of the Hudson River.

On November 30, 1709, Governor Hunter proposed to the Lords of Trade that 3,000 Palatines be sent with him to New York to be there employed in the production of naval stores. He later proposed that the Palatines "be servants to the Crown for a certain term, or, at least, 'till they have repaid the expense the Crown is at in settling them at work and subsisting them whilst they cannot subsist themselves.'" In line with this letter, the Board of Trade recommended to Queen Anne that the Palatines be settled in the region of "the Mohaques and Hudson's rivers," there to be employed in the hard labor of producing turpentine, tar, rosin, pitch and similar products, which were dignified by the name of "Naval Stores." The Board seems to have particularly desired that the Palatines should be settled on the Mohawk and Schoharie rivers. This report was approved by Queen Anne.

Governor Hunter sailed from England in January, 1710, with the 4,000 Palatines aboard ten ships. The voyage was rough and one of the ships was wrecked on the eastern coast of Long Island but all the crew and passengers were saved. When the other nine boats, bearing the Palatines arrived at New York, the city authorities were alarmed at the sickness prevailing among them and they were quarantined on Nutten or Governor's Island.

The Palatines remained five months at Governor's Island while provincial surveyors were mapping the lands on the Mohawk and Schoharie which had been selected for settlement. During this time, the Governor issued an order apprenticing many children of the German immigrants, which act was a source of justifiable grievance on the part of the ill and harassed newcomers. Among the children so "bound out" was John Peter Zenger, whose father had died at sea. He was apprenticed to William Bradford, the only printer in New York. Zenger, later on, appears as the champion of the freedom of the press in one of the many conflicts with Royal authority in the Province.

It is said that the surveyors, who were sent to survey the lands for prospective settlement, were so inefficient that their final report was prejudicial to the location of the immigrants on the Mohawk and the Schoharie and henceforth Hunter was

opposed to their location on those streams. He may have been influenced by Bayard and Livingston, under whose powerful influence Governor Hunter now came as well as under that of the aristocratic or Tory party. Hunter now turned to Robert Livingston, who had land holdings on the Hudson River second only to those comprised in the great manor of Rensselaerwyck.

About October 3, 1710, Governor Hunter bought 6,000 acres of land from Livingston. The greater part of the Palatines were then located on those lands on the east shore of the Hudson, while some of them were settled on the west side of the Hudson on an 800 acre tract on Sawyer's Creek. The East Camp of the Palatines is now known as Germantown while the west shore camp is still known as West Camp. The original villages numbered five, three on the east shore and two on the west. Rhinebeck also takes its name from this Palatine settlement, many of its people being descended from these German pioneers from the Rhine. About 500 Palatines remained in New York, when the Hudson River settlements were made. Most of those who continued to stay in the metropolis were widows and children.

There was a marked difference in the condition of the German settlers on the east and the west shores of the Hudson. Those on the east shore were forced to make "Naval Stores," while those at the West Camp were left to clear the land and establish homes and farms which their descendants occupy to this day. The East Camp of the Palatines numbered about 1,200 Palatines. These pioneers came in the fall of 1710 and their first work was to build shelters for the winter, during which they suffered greatly from the cold, largely because of an insufficient supply of clothing which was furnished by the government and because of the poor and scanty provisions which they received. The people were bitter and discontented from the first. They looked upon their detention at Livingston Manor as nothing short of slavery and they were ever anxious to go to the Schoharie lands, which, they said, "the Queen had given them." They wanted to settle on farms of their own and they certainly did not want to make "Naval Stores."

When, in 1711, calls were made for volunteers for the Montreal expedition, three companies of militia, totaling 105 men, were raised in the East Camp. The family names of the Pala-

tine volunteers include those of Hoffman, Dirchest, Bellinger, Wederwachs, Finck, Dillenback, Webber, Nellis, Dachsteder, Bauch, Ittick, Folts, Loux, Hartmandorff, Windecker, Zeller, Arendorff, Schneider, Feling, Petry, Schmit.

The Palatines became so dissatisfied with their condition at East Camp that Governor Hunter came with a company of British soldiers and took away their arms. Later on additional troops were brought to the Manor and the Palatines worked during the summer of 1711 under conditions which were little short of slavery. A second severe winter, that of 1711-1712, was passed at Livingston Manor, without sufficient food or clothing for the unfortunate people.

In 1712, Governor Hunter abandoned the great "Naval Stores" enterprise and the Palatines were left to shift for themselves but they were forbidden to leave the provinces of New York and New Jersey. The project had caused the financial ruin of Hunter, who had spent £20,000 in the venture besides £8,000 furnished by the Lords of Trade.

When the order came to cease work at East Camp, the Palatines, there located, sent seven men of their number to investigate the Schoharie River region. As a consequence of their favorable report, about 600 Palatines migrated to the Schoharie Valley in 1712. At the East and West Camps on the Hudson, probably 1,000 remained, whose descendants form a considerable part of the population of the Hudson Valley to this day.

The settlement of Palatine Germans in the Hudson Valley in 1710 was the largest and most important movement of that kind which had occurred in the English Colonies up to that time.

CHAPTER 47.

1713-1735. IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW YORK PROVINCE.

1713-1719, BATTLE BETWEEN GOVERNOR HUNTER AND THE LIBERAL ASSEMBLY—1720, GOVERNOR WILLIAM BURNET ARRIVES —1722, FORT OSWEGO BUILT—1725, NEW YORK GAZETTE, FIRST PROVINCIAL NEWSPAPER, PUBLISHED BY WILLIAM BRADFORD—1727, MYNDERTSE WINS FREEDOM OF TRADE SUIT—MOHAWK RIVER TRAFFIC—1728, GOVERNOR MONTGOMERY—1730, STAGE LINE, NEW YORK TO PHILADELPHIA—1731, FIRST NEW YORK CITY FIRE DEPARTMENT—FIRST NEW YORK CITY PUBLIC LIBRARY—LYDIUS SETTLES AT FORT EDWARD—1732, GOVERNOR WILLIAM COSBY—1734, ZENGER ACQUITTED OF LIBEL —VICTORY FOR FREEDOM OF THE PRESS—1735, HYDE PARK SECTION SETTLED BY DUTCH.

Governor Hunter's administration was marked by frequent violent conflicts between the executive and the legislature. The New York Assembly contended that it had a right to legislate, not because of any commission from the Crown, but by the right of the people of whom they were the representatives. The members of the Assembly also upheld the Democratic doctrine of taxation only by consent. Hunter was an aristocrat but he was a peace loving man and he hated these disputes. In 1719, because of poor health, he returned to England. He left the government in the very competent hands of Colonel Peter Schuyler of Albany, who was the senior member of the council.

Acting Governor Schuyler administered the affairs of the province in a most efficient manner until he was succeeded by William Burnet, Hunter's successor, who arrived in New York City in September, 1720. Governor Burnet was a scholar but he also was "gay and condescending" and most popular with the people. He liked society and was most popular with the ladies of the provincial capital. In fact he was the man for the time and the place. His relations with the Assembly were of the best.

In 1721, a small stockaded blockhouse was erected at present Fort Edward to prevent "the French trading with the Albany merchants, in order to sell again the English goods to their Indians."

In 1722, Fort Oswego was built at the mouth of the Oswego River on Lake Ontario. Governor Burnet ordered this frontier outpost constructed in order to place English authority between the Iroquois and the French and to promote the colonial trade with the Indians by the establishment of a post directly within the dominion of the Five Nations. The building of Fort Oswego excited the enmity of the merchants of the province particularly of those at Albany. Prior to the erection of the fort a trading house was built there.

The French were incensed and made threats but went no further. However, they built a strong storehouse and repaired their fortifications at Fort Niagara at the mouth of the Niagara River and Lake Ontario.

The building of Fort Oswego in 1722 is most important in its relation to the history of Hudson River and that of its valley. The Hudson forms an important unit in the natural waterway system connecting the Atlantic waters at New York Bay with the Great Lakes at Oswego. The river forms over 150 miles of this 340 mile route, which may eventually have development as a ship canal. At present, the Hudson deep waterway carries shipping from New York Bay to Albany, where connection is made through the New York State Barge Canal with Lake Ontario at Oswego and with Lake Erie at Buffalo. This waterway follows the only water route which cuts through the Appalachian range on the entire Atlantic Coast. It was used by the Indians, in their canoes and dugouts for centuries before the coming of the white man, who, at first traversed it with canoes and batteaux. Later the Erie Canal was built and, in 1918, the State Barge Canal system was opened. The story of the Hudson is closely interwoven with the history of waterway development in New York State.

In 1725, William Bradford published the *New York Gazette*, which was the first newspaper to appear in the province. Bradford, who was the government printer, was its editor and publisher.

In 1725 Governor Burnet granted the Burnetsfield patent for lands on the Upper Mohawk River to a number of Palatine German families who then removed to that section, which formed the frontier settlement of the province for a number of years.

In 1727, party spirit ran high and a new Assembly was elected which opposed Burnet, who was succeeded as Governor by John Montgomery in 1728.

In 1727, Johannes Myndertse, a fighting Dutchman of Schenectady, won a suit, of four years' duration, which he had brought against the Albany Common Council. He was arrested in 1723 for trading with the Indians at his house in Schenectady. Albany had succeeded for years in making trade with the Indians illegal at Schenectady. The winning of this suit by Myndertse made Indian trade free to all at Schenectady as well as throughout the province. With the opening of free trade on the Mohawk River in 1727, batteaux made their appearance on that stream, largely replacing canoes and dugouts. Boat building became an increasingly important industry at Schenectady. Goods were brought to Albany by sloop. There they were loaded onto carts or wagons and transported over the Schenectady trail to the Mohawk River, where they were reloaded onto batteaux and taken up that stream.

Batteaux were used to transport supplies and ordnance in times of war as well as peace. These boats had flat bottoms with sharp prows at each end. They were from 16 to 20 feet or more in length and carried several tons of cargo. These boats were paddled, rowed, poled, sailed or towed by from two to eight men—depending on the size of the boat. Cleated boards ran along the sides of the batteaux, on which men stood, with faces toward the stern, and set poles in the river bottom. They rested the tops of these poles against their chests and, walking along the cleats, thus pushed the boat along. In times of high water, the boats were merely steered down stream with the current. These boatmen were a rough, hardy lot, who figured prominently in the Colonial wars and the Revolution.

In 1730, a stage line was established between New York City and Philadelphia.

About 1731, John Henry Lydius of Albany, erected a trading post on the site of Fort Nicholson, which was later the site of

Fort Edward. At this place, Lydius conducted a considerable trade with the Indians both of the Province of New York and Canada. He was prominent in the affairs of the colony and he was a rival of Sir William Johnson for the post of Indian Commissioner for the province.

In 1731, the French built Fort St. Frederick at Crown Point. This was one of the most important fortifications in the debatable ground between New France and New York.

In 1731, New York City was divided into seven wards. A fire department of 24 men was organized and two fire engines were brought over from London. In the same year, the first public library was opened in New York City, which had been willed 1,622 volumes by Rev. Dr. Wellington of England.

In 1731, the present boundary line between New York and Connecticut was established.

Governor Montgomery died on July 1, 1731. Rip Van Dam, senior member of the Governor's Council, was acting governor until the arrival of Governor William Cosby on August 1, 1732. Cosby and Van Dam came into confiict almost at the outset. Cosby was avaricious, unscrupulous and arbitrary. He was a petty military tyrant who took a stand opposed to the strongly democratic spirit of the people of the province. Van Dam, as a representative of the people, had their support and confidence, particularly as he represented the Dutch element which formed about two-thirds of the population.

The cause of popular liberty received further impetus in the Valley of the Hudson in the year 1734, when John Peter Zenger, publisher of the *New York Weekly Journal* was acquitted of libeling the government. This victory for freedom of the press and popular liberty had a strong effect throughout the English Colonies in advancing the independent nationalistic idea. Zenger, as a young boy, landed with the great Palatine German immigration of 1710 and, as previously stated, was apprenticed to William Bradford, then the only printer in the colony. Bradford's newspaper, the *New York Gazette*, supported the government of the autocratic Cosby. Members of the Rip Van Dam faction induced Zenger to start a newspaper as the organ of the Democratic party and in opposition to Cosby. Van Dam backed Zenger's *New York Weekly Journal*, which was first published in

November, 1733. The *Journal* strongly attacked Governor Cosby's acts and his official friends as well as the Assembly which was subservient to Cosby. His opponents had Zenger arrested and imprisoned. The grand jury refused to indict him on the charge of libeling the government but he was held on a trivial charge.

Zenger was held in jail until August, 1734, when he was brought to trial in the City Hall of New York. An association called the Sons of Liberty had been formed in New York City. It was to be later one of the chief forces in the fight for American independence. The Sons of Liberty worked hard for Zenger. Andrew Hamilton of Philadelphia, then 80 years old but nevertheless the foremost lawyer in America, was engaged as counsel for the publisher. James Alexander and William Smith, leading lawyers of the province, also acted as counsel for Zenger. Hamilton made a great speech in support both of his client and the freedom of the press. The jury's verdict was "Not guilty." The trial had caused great excitement and Hamilton was borne from the court room on the shoulders of the people. A great public dinner was given Hamilton on the following day. He had refused any fee or reward for his services. The City of New York gave him the freedom of the city and a vote of thanks in a handsome gold box. New York City has been generally found on the side of popular rights and for the broad liberty of public opinion and action within the law. Zenger's acquital was another step toward American liberty taken on the shores of the Hudson.

The Hyde Park section was settled by Dutch farmers in 1735.

CHAPTER 48.

1736. COLONIAL LIFE IN THE HUDSON VALLEY, NEW YORK AND ALBANY.

LOSSING'S PICTURE OF THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK—DETERRENTS TO GROWTH—BAD GOVERNORS AND GREAT LAND GRANTS—PREDOMINANCE OF HOLLAND BLOOD AND DUTCH LANGUAGE—MIXED POPULATION—MANNERS AND DRESS—EQUALITY—EDUCATION AT LOW STATE—RELIGIOUS FREEDOM—MRS. BRANT'S PICTURE OF DUTCH LIFE IN ALBANY—THE MILD CONDITIONS OF SLAVERY.

Lossing writes interestingly of the province of New York in 1736. His words give an interesting picture of the life of that time, particularly in the City of New York. He says:

"The population of the province at the time we are considering did not exceed one hundred thousand. There were many discouragements to settlement. The dread of hostile incursions by the French and Indians on the north; the transportation hither from Great Britain of ship loads of felons, the oppressive nature of navigation laws, the avarice, bigotry and tyranny of some of the governors who had been sent to rule the province, and the lavish grants of much of the best land in the colony to their favorites and instruments, were special hindrances to a rapid increase in population. The holders of large estates rated their lands so high that poorer persons could neither buy nor lease farms. The price of labor was so enormously high, because of the sparse population, that the importation of negroes had become a prime industrial necessity and they were then very numerous in the province. The Dutch language was yet so generally used in some of the counties that sheriffs found it difficult to procure persons sufficiently acquainted with the English tongue to serve as jurors in the courts. The manners of the people were simple and various, according to locality and condition. The prevalence of the Dutch, the German, the English and the French (Huguenots) in certain places, modified manners.

"In the City of New York, where there was constant intercourse with Europe, particularly with Great Britain, the London fashions, much modified, however, were followed; yet these were sometimes disused in England by the time they were adopted here. Among the wealthier classes, considerable luxury in table, dress, and furniture was exhibited, yet the people were not so gay as in Boston, where the society was almost purely English and presented greater cultivation. In New York, wealth was more equally distributed. There was an aspect of comfort throughout society.

"New York City was more social in its character than any other place on the continent. It now had a mixed population, sturdy in individual character and cosmopolitan in feeling. Society presented an almost even surface of equality and independence. It consisted chiefly of merchants, shopkeepers and tradesmen. Their recreations were simple. The men enjoyed themselves at a weekly evening club and the women frequented musical concerts and dancing assemblies with their husbands and brothers. The women were generally comely in person, dressed with taste, were notable housekeepers, managed their households with neatness and thrift and made happy homes. They seldom or never engaged in gaming, as was the habit of fashionable women in England at that time.

"Both sexes were very neglectful of intellectual cultivation. They read very little. The schools were of a low order. 'The instructors want instruction,' wrote a contemporary. 'Through long and shameful neglect of all the arts and sciences, our common speech is extremely corrupt and the evidences of a bad taste, both as to thought and language, are visible in all our proceedings, private and public.' Virtue was predominant. The women were modest, sprightly, and good humored, and there was diffused throughout society an uncommon degree of domestic felicity, both in the city and province. The merchants and traders had a high reputation for honesty and fair dealing and the people everywhere, in town and country, were sober, industrious and hospitable, yet eagerly intent upon gain.

"The people were generally religious. The principal church organizations were the Dutch Reformed, the Lutheran, the English Episcopal and the Presbyterian. There was much latitudi-

narism, much freedom of thought among the people, that fostered a spirit of independence. They were not bound, hand and foot, by rigid religious and political creeds, as were the people of New England but were thoroughly imbued with the toleration inherited from the first Dutch settlers and theological disputes were seldom indulged in.

"New York society possessed the elements of a noble state. These elements entered into the political and social structure of the commonwealth after the Declaration of Independence with the grand results now manifested to the world."

Careful consideration of many historical sources of information would lead one to believe that Lossing painted too rosy a picture in some regards but his impressions may well serve for a general sketch of the province of New York, then principally comprised within the Hudson River Valley, and these characteristics seem to have endured practically from 1700 until the outbreak of the Revolution in 1775. In Lossing's picture of New York City in 1736, we can see many of its basic features, which have been carried through to the present time.

Lossing has also condensed Mrs. Grant's impressions of Colonial Albany, which appear in her "Memoirs of an American Lady." While New York was the metropolis of the province, Albany was a characteristic cross-section of the Dutch life of the province. Lossing writes as follows of Mrs. Grant's description of the important Dutch city on the Upper Hudson in Colonial Days:

"The houses were very neat within and without and were built chiefly of stone or brick. The streets were broad and lined with shade trees. Each house had its garden and, before each door, a tree was planted and shaded the 'stoops' or porches, which were furnished with spacious seats on which domestic groups were seated on summer evenings. Each family had a cow, fed in a common pasture at the end of the town. At evening, the herd returned altogether of their own accord, with their tinkling bells hung at their necks, along the wide and grassy street to their wonted sheltering trees to be milked at their masters' doors.

"On pleasant evenings, the stoops were filled with groups of old and young of both sexes, discussing grave questions or gayly chatting and singing together. The mischievous gossip was un-

known, for intercourse was so free and friendship so real that there was no place for such a creature; and politicians seldom disturbed these social gatherings. A peculiar social custom arranged the young people in congenial companies, composed of an equal number of both sexes, quite small children being admitted, and the association continued until maturity. The result was a perfect knowledge of each other, and happy and suitable marriages prevailed.

"The summer amusements of the young were simple, the principal one being what we call picnics, often held upon the pretty islands near Albany, or in 'the bush.' These were days of pure enjoyment, for everybody was unrestrained by conventionalities. In winter, the frozen bosom of the Hudson was alive with merry skaters of both sexes. Small evening parties were frequent and were generally the sequel of quilting parties. The young men sometimes enjoyed convivial parties at the tavern, but habitual drunkenness was extremely rare.

"African slavery was seen at Albany and vicinity in its mildest form. It was softened by gentleness and mutual attachments. It appeared patriarchal and a real blessing to the negroes. Master and slave stood in the relation of friends. Immoralities were rare. There was no hatred engendered by neglect, cruelty or injustice and such excitements, as the Negro Plots of 1712 and 1741 in New York City, were impossible. Industry and frugality ranked among the cardinal virtues of the people."

Again the picture seems too rosy, particularly as regards the "gossip" and the "politician," who are always with us. However, this misty suggestion of Albany in Colonial days strongly brings back the ancient city which was in marked contrast to the provincial capital, both of which stood on the banks of the noble Hudson.

CHAPTER 49.

1736-1754, IN THE HUDSON VALLEY AND NEW YORK PROVINCE—KING GEORGE'S WAR.

1736. GEORGE CLARKE, LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR—WHIG AND TORY STRUGGLE—1738. WILLIAM JOHNSON LOCATES AT PRESENT AMSTERDAM ON MOHAWK RIVER—1741. "NEGRO PLOT" IN NEW YORK CITY—18 NEGROES HANGED IN WAVE OF HYSTERIA—1741. POPULATION OF NEW YORK CITY, 12,000—1743. SIR GEORGE CLINTON, GOVERNOR—1744-1748. KING GEORGE'S WAR—1745. FRENCH-INDIAN RAID DESOLATES SETTLEMENTS OF PRESENT SARATOGA AND WASHINGTON COUNTIES — SARATOGA SETTLEMENT DESTROYED — 1748. DEFEAT OF SCHENECTADY MILITIA IN BEUKENDAAL BATTLE—1750. HASBROUCK HOUSE (WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS) BUILT AT NEWBURGH—1752. FIRST MERCHANTS' EXCHANGE BUILT AT NEW YORK — 1753. KINGS (LATER COLUMBIA) COLLEGE OPENED—1754. ALBANY POST ROAD BUILT THROUGH HIGHLANDS.

Governor Cosby died on March 10, 1736. George Clarke became Lieutenant Governor and his term of office continued until 1743, when Sir George Clinton became governor. The period, from Cosby's accession in 1732 until the beginning of the French and Indian War in 1755, was marked by violent partisanship and the struggle between the Democratic or Whig party and the aristocratic, royalist or Tory party.

Governor Clarke built a stone summer home at Fort Plain on the Mohawk River in 1738 which he occupied with his family until 1742.

In 1738, William Johnson located on the Mohawk River at present Amsterdam. He was destined to become one of the greatest figures of Colonial times. He went to the Mohawk Valley to superintend the estate of Sir Peter Warren, a retired admiral of the British Navy, who was then a resident of New York City.

Clarke's administration began with conflict between himself and Rip Van Dam, president of the Council, both of whom claimed to be governors and acted as such for a time, creating fierce public partisanship and excitement. Clarke's commission as Lieutenant-Governor was later confirmed by the Crown.

One of the features of this period was the severe winter of 1740-1741 which prevailed in the Valley of the Hudson. Snow lay six feet deep on the level and the river was frozen over at New York City.

In 1741 occurred the second "Negro Plot." At that time, the population of New York City was 12,000 of which 2,000 were slaves. They were generally not well treated and there was considerable bitter feeling among them against their white masters. Numerous robberies occurred in the city and slaves were suspected and several were arrested. On March 18, 1741, a fire started in the Governor's House within Fort George, when a gale was blowing. The house, barracks and everything combustible within the fort were burned. An epidemic of fires followed and many negroes and several white people were arrested. They were tried and, as a result, eleven negroes were burned, eighteen were hanged, fifty were transported and many were imprisoned.

The "Negro Plot" of 1741 is now looked upon as one of the discreditable chapters in the history of European people of present New York State—somewhat comparable to the massacre and atrocities perpetrated by the whites upon the Indians in Manhattan and Jersey City in 1643. While some of the fires of 1741 were probably set by negroes, it is improbable that there was any general plot to burn the city. The whole business was thoroughly discreditable to the white people of the colony and is but another instance of the extreme thinness of the veneer of so-called civilization. The "Negro Plot" of 1741 in New York City is comparable to the public hysteria and vicious morbidity of the "Salem Witchcraft" horrors of the previous century. Historians and people who detail the burning of captives and enemies by the Iroquois and other Indians should consider the similar burnings of often helpless and innocent people by the equally savage whites of the period. Neither the whites nor the Indians gain anything by the comparison of their atrocities, much of which have their

basis in the hideous morbidity which desires to see other human beings suffer.

One of the victims of the "Negro Plot" cruelty was William Ury, a schoolmaster and non-juring of the Church of England. He was charged with being a Jesuit priest in disguise and of inciting the negroes to burn the Governor's House. As Jesuit priests were then forbidden to remain in the province under penalty of death, Ury was hanged when convicted of being a minister of that faith. Respectable citizens testified in Ury's behalf and he protested his innocence but he was executed nevertheless.

Lieutenant-Governor Clarke later became Sir George Clarke after his return to England. He was succeeded by Sir George Clinton who arrived in New York on September 20, 1743, and ruled the province for ten years thereafter. Lossing says: "Clinton was wholly unfitted by his training and disposition for the chief magistracy of a people like those of New York—sturdy, independent and courageous; free thinkers in politics and irrepressible aspirants for self government."

In 1744, King George's War began and lasted for four years. This was the third conflict between France and England, which affected the American Colonies.

The fact that nearly every war, which embroiled England in its bloody horrors, also carried the British-American Colonies into the conflict, probably strongly tended to eventually make the American people feel the absolute necessity of national independence. European quarrels brought on King William's War and Queen Anne's War—and now, in 1744, British America was to again be involved in these foreign differences which brought disaster and death to the French, British and Dutch peoples on these shores.

To show the manner in which the people of Hudson Valley were made to suffer, because of European rows, it is pertinent to here mention the causes which brought war to our river regions.

A contest had arisen between Maria Theresa, Empress of Hungary, and the Elector of Bavaria for the Austrian throne. George II, King of England, took the part of the Empress, while Louis XV, King of France, sided with the Elector. Therefore, on March 31, 1744, Louis declared war upon England and French

and English colonists butchered each other in North America in the futile and bloody warfare which followed. Among the bloody results of this royal quarrel was the killing of twenty young militiamen of Schenectady in a little border battle and the killing of many Hudson Valley settlers during destructive enemy raids.

In 1745, the New England colonies combined in a naval expedition which captured Louisburg on Cape Breton island. This was the greatest French stronghold on the Atlantic Coast and its capture was the outstanding event of King George's War in America. Sir Peter Warren, who commanded the British fleet, was the uncle of Sir William Johnson. Warren's fleet defeated a French fleet and the French surrendered Louisburg on July 17, 1745. The military force was composed mainly of American militia and it was an object lesson to the Colonists of their potential united military strength. New England was filled with wrath when Louisburg was returned to France at the end of the war.

The province of New York experienced several terrible raids during this war. The most severe of these was the one of 1745 when a French-Indian War party entered present Saratoga and Washington counties and devastated that region, massacring and burning wherever they went. The settlers were largely of Scotch blood with a considerable Dutch element. The French-Indian War party consisted of 500 men. They were commanded by M. Marin, an experienced French officer. The invaders assembled at Crown Point on Lake Champlain. The projected raid was intended to advance well toward Albany and to destroy all the intervening settlements.

"Saratoga" of 1745 was a scattered village at the junction of Fish Creek and the Hudson River adjacent to present Schuylerville. It was peopled by about 30 families, many of whom were tenants of Philip Schuyler, a brother of the mayor of Albany and the owner of all lands at and in the immediate vicinity of the settlement. The invaders plundered and burned the village and murdered Mr. Schuyler. They left on their return march to Canada on the morning after the raid, taking with them over 100 captives and much plunder.

The French-Indian raiders destroyed the Lydius trading post at present Fort Edward, which superseded Fort Nicholson, which

had been built there in 1709. The enemy left a path of destruction in both present Saratoga and Washington counties.

Governor Shirley of Massachusetts, who had perfected the plans for the Louisburg expedition, now decided upon an invasion of Canada. Governor Clinton of New York, favored the project. The building of blockhouses on the northern frontiers was authorized and provisions were made for raising volunteers and providing supplies.

The Six Nations were invited to a council at Albany in 1746. The object of the conference was to secure their alliance and support in the conflict with the French of Canada. Colonel Johnson had made great efforts to rouse his neighbors, the Mohawks, to fight the enemy. At the time set for the council Johnson appeared on present Capitol Hill in Albany at the head of a large party of Iroquois chiefs in full war paint and regalia. Johnson had been adopted into the Mohawk tribe and made a chief under the name of "Warraghiyagey." He led his warriors, painted and attired like them. Among the red men were chiefs from the Delawares, Susquehannas, River Indians and the Mohicans as well as those from the Six Nations of Iroquois. The council was most satisfactory.

The expedition against Canada, which was projected in 1746 by Shirley, was abandoned because the British ministry did not send its promised aid.

Aside from this one outstanding American-British success, King George's War was a long-drawn period of apprehension of attack on the northern frontiers, varied by border warfare of the most savage kind, in which French and Indian war parties came down from Canada and massacred and burned in many frontier sections.

New York and the adjacent New England colonies now suffered terribly from the weak British governmental policy, which had allowed the French, unmolested, to build Fort St. Frederick at Crown Point in 1731.

The Provincial military policy was feeble throughout the war, the chief cause being the irrepressible conflict between the native American assemblies and the imported English governors. These quarrels were carried on even during the most dangerous periods and they endangered the lives and property of the men, women

and children of the frontiers, of which that of the Hudson Valley was the most exposed.

The friction between the royal governors and the popular assemblies was one of the many causes which brought on the War for Independence. The Six Nations were disgusted by the apparent weakness of a relatively great people—that of the British-American colonies—in conflict with the few thousands of French on the St. Lawrence. The friendship of the New York Iroquois with Sir William Johnson and his influence over them were the only factors which kept the Six Nations from joining the French.

In 1745, the Mohawks were excited by reports spread by a French agent that the English at Albany were preparing to destroy them. Governor Clinton sent Conrad Weiser to quiet these unfounded apprehensions, which he succeeded in doing. He held a council with the Mohawks at their lower castle at Fort Hunter.

In 1746, William Johnson was appointed colonel of the Albany County militia and colonel of the warriors of the Six Nations. He had been made a justice of the peace of Albany County in 1745. From this time onward, and for a period of nearly thirty years, Johnson was one of the most powerful figures, not only in the Province of New York but in the Thirteen British-American colonies. In 1746, Johnson was made a chief of the Mohawk tribe, under the name of War-ragh-i-ya-gey, signifying, it is believed "Superintendent of Affairs."

The years 1746, 1747 and 1748 were marked by frequent murders and barbarities perpetrated in Albany County, the Mohawk Valley and the Upper Hudson Valley. From April to August, in 1746, there are records of thirty Canadian-Indian scalping parties which fell upon the settlements around Albany and Schenectady. Settlers were struck down almost at the gates of these towns and many were killed, scalped or captured. As usual, the Mohawks did the most service in countering these savage blows of the enemy.

In 1747, Governor Clinton and Colonel Johnson held a council with the Mohawks at Albany. In 1748, he visited the Mohawk castles.

In 1748, forty Dutch militiamen went from Schenectady to drive away a large party of raiding Canadian Indians. They

were ambushed and about 20 militiamen were slain. The survivors barricaded themselves in a house and fought off the enemy. This encounter is known as the battle of Beukendaal (Beechdale).

The peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, in October, 1748, ended King George's War.

In 1750, several historically important houses were erected in the Hudson Valley. They include the older part of the stone Hasbrouck house in Newburgh, which was Washington's headquarters from 1781 to 1783. In this year, the Dyckman stone farmhouse was built on Manhattan Island. This typical Colonial Dutch farmhouse is now an important historical civic museum.

In 1749, Colonel William Johnson built a stone house, known as Fort Johnson, on the Mohawk River. It is now located at the western limits of the present City of Amsterdam. This is one of the most historically important buildings in the United States.

The later Colonial period was one of much building and public improvement in New York City. In 1750, Beeckman, John and Thames streets were paved. In 1752, the first Merchants' Exchange building was erected at the foot of Broad Street, New York City. It stood until 1827, when a new building was built in Wall Street.

In 1753, Kings College, now Columbia University, was opened in New York City, with an entering class of ten students. The college building was finished in 1760. The name was changed to Columbia College in 1787.

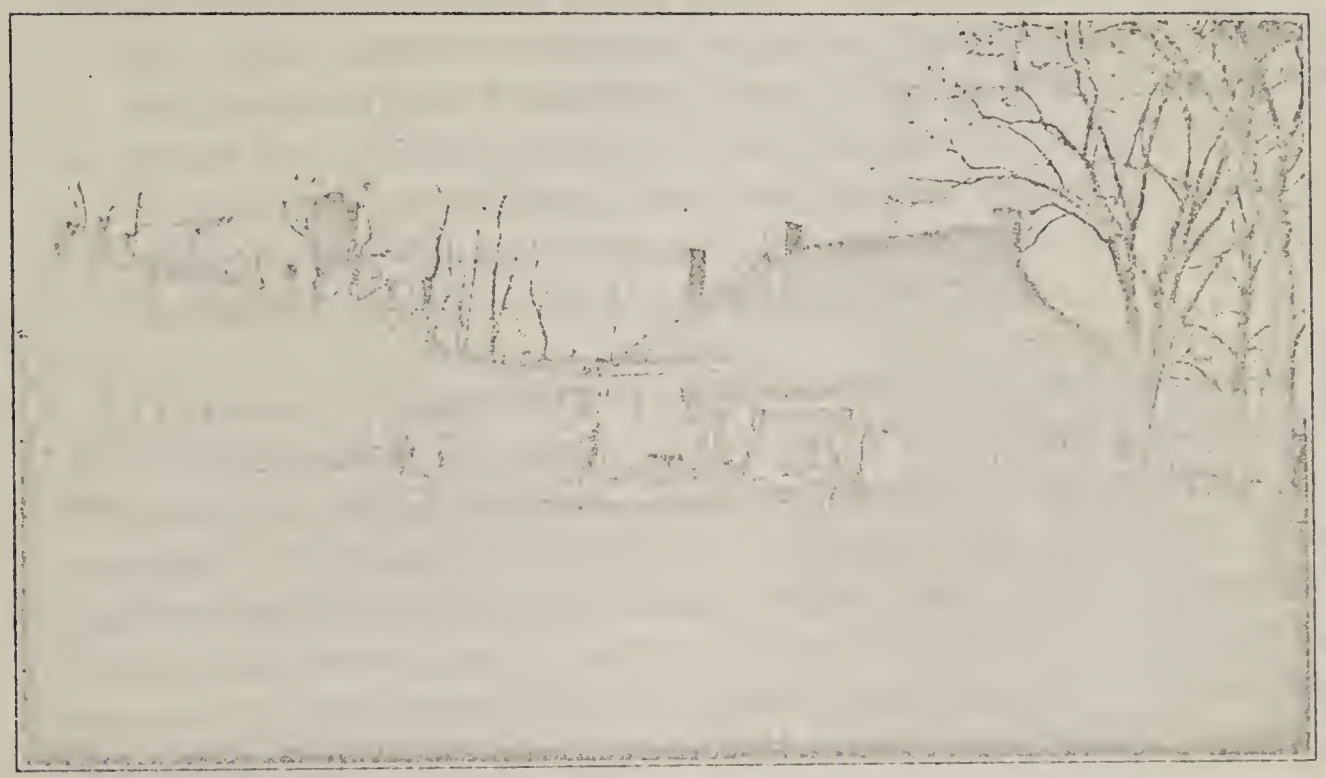
In 1754, a library was established in New York City, which later became the Society Library.

In 1754, the present Albany Post Road was completed by the building of a link through the Highlands of the Hudson, between Peekskill and Fishkill. The work was done by American and British soldiers under command of Lord Loudon.

In 1755, the Staten Island to New York City ferry was established.

Governor Clinton's administration was marked by a violent partisanship which was one of the factors leading up to the Revolution. Clinton resigned in 1753 and, on September 7, he was succeeded by Sir Danvers Osborne. Chief-Justice DeLancey was

made Lieutenant-Governor. Four days after his succession, Osborne hung himself and DeLancey became acting governor until the arrival of Sir Charles Hardy who became governor in September, 1755. DeLancey, however, continued to be the real ruler of the province until the end of Hardy's administration in 1760.



WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS, NEWBURGH

The State Historical Museum is seen on the left. The old stone building was the residence of Colonel Jonathan Hasbrouck at the outbreak of the Revolution. It was the headquarters of General Washington in 1782 and 1783

CHAPTER 50.

1754. THE ALBANY CONVENTION.

TWENTY-FIVE DELEGATES FROM SEVEN AMERICAN COLONIES, JUNE 29, 1754, MET TO CONSIDER COLONIAL CONFEDERACY—RENEW TREATIES WITH SIX NATIONS—BENJAMIN FRANKLIN PRESENTS PLAN OF COLONIAL UNION—ADOPTED BY THE CONVENTION—REJECTED BY PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLIES AND IMPERIAL BOARD OF TRADE—THE "ALBANY PLAN" AND ITS EFFECT ON AMERICAN NATIONAL UNITY—1756 POPULATION FIGURES.

The cause of American liberty received another impetus when a Colonial convention was held at Albany in the summer of 1754. Twenty-five delegates met there representing seven American colonies of England—New York, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island and New Hampshire. These Americans met to renew treaties with the Six Nations and to consider the formation of a Colonial confederacy. Lieutenant-Governor LeDancey presided at the convention, which began on June 29, 1754.

The body renewed the treaty with the Iroquois and, in July, Dr. Benjamin Franklin, a delegate from Pennsylvania, presented a plan of union to the assembly. Franklin's plan had many of the characteristics of our present constitution. It was adopted and the plan was sent to the assemblies of the colonies and to the imperial Board of Trade for ratification. The plan received the general disapproval of all these bodies. The assemblies considered that the "Albany plan" gave the colonies too little liberty and the Board of Trade decided that it gave them too much. However, Franklin's plan of union put a Colonial union into concrete form and furnished a subject for wide discussion which had much to do with the development of the movement for national independence. This is another evidence of the great contributions to the cause of American liberty, which were furnished by the Valley of the Hudson—River of Destiny.

One remarkable thing about the Albany Convention of 1754 was that it convened, not on the initiative of the Colonists but

because the Lords of Trade and Plantations in England directed the governors of the colonies to urge their respective assemblies to send delegates to the gatherings. Its primal purpose was the making of a treaty with the Indian tribes, many of whom were disaffected toward the English.

In the previous year, King Hendrick of the Mohawks had broken off all relations with the Provincial government which was lax in its efforts to protect its borders against the French. Colonel Johnson with great ability restored good relations with the Six Nations at a council held at Onondaga (near Syracuse) in September, 1754.

At the Albany Convention, King Hendrick made the best speech, which was given during the sessions of the congress. The council with the Iroquois bound them to the English as allies. Colonel Johnson had resigned as Provincial Indian Commissioner and Abraham, chief of the lower Mohawk castle, asked for his reinstatement. Governor DeLancey replied in a conciliatory way to the Iroquois orators and the Indian council closed successfully. Johnson prepared a plan for the management of the Six Nations and for defensive measures against French aggression. This plan, the delegates took home to their respective assemblies. In this epochal convention, Colonel Johnson was one of the foremost figures and fully equal in influence and constructive ability to Benjamin Franklin of Philadelphia.

In the seven years, between the ending of King George's War in 1748 and the beginning of the Seven Years' or French and Indian War in 1755, the population of the Province of New York had increased rapidly and this short period had been one of great development. The population of New York in 1755 was about 100,000, while that of the English Colonies was about 1,000,000. French Canada, which was so greatly feared by the Colonists, had only about 100,000 French settlers.

The census of the Province of New York in 1756 showed a total of 96,765, of which 70,950 was located in the Hudson River Counties—New York, Westchester, Orange, Dutchess, Ulster and Albany. Albany was then the leading county in population with Dutchess second, Westchester third and New York fourth. Of course, the first three counties embraced great areas of territory

whereas New York County's population was practically all within New York City—present Manhattan Borough.

The population of New York by counties, in 1756, follows: Albany, 17,424; Dutchess, 14,148; Ulster, 8,105; Orange, 4,876; Westchester, 13,357; New York, 13,040. Total of the Hudson River Counties, 70,950. Kings, 2,707; Queens, 10,786; Suffolk, 10,290; Richmond, 2,132. Total of the Province of New York, 96,765. Of this number, 83,223 were whites and 13,542 were blacks, mostly slaves. The Indians within this area were not counted.

While the population of the Hudson Valley counties of New York was 70,950 in 1756, the actual population in the province within the Hudson River watershed was somewhat less, as several thousand of the people of Westchester County then lived in areas comprised within the watershed of Long Island Sound. To the New York population of its Hudson Valley counties in 1756, should be added that of present Bergen and Essex counties in New Jersey, which would probably bring the total up to about 80,000 comprised in the population within the borders of the counties of the provinces of New York and New Jersey, which abutted on the Hudson River.

From the foregoing, will be seen the predominating importance of the Valley of the Hudson in the affairs of New York, from the first Dutch settlements at New York, in 1613, and at Albany, in 1614, up until the beginning of the Revolution in 1775.

The short-lived peace between the Old French (King George's War) and the Great French and Indian War was now drawing to a close. Former settlers had returned to their homes in the exposed sections of Albany County. The six years, from 1748 to 1755, constituted a period of wonderful development in the Hudson Valley, but this brief time of peace was soon to end with the beginning of the greatest conflict waged in the Province of New York up to that period.

CHAPTER 51.

1755. FRENCH-INDIAN WAR—BATTLE OF LAKE GEORGE.

BEGINNINGS OF THE GREAT CONFLICT—1755, BRITISH AMERICAN EXPEDITIONS PLANNED AGAINST FORT DUQUESNE, LAKE ONTARIO FRENCH FORTS AND CROWN POINT—1755, FORT TICONDEROGA BUILT BY FRENCH—JOHNSON GUARDS HUDSON VALLEY FRONTIER—COMMISSIONED MAJOR GENERAL AND PLACED IN COMMAND OF COLONIAL MILITIA FOR CAPTURE OF CROWN POINT—MADE COLONIAL COMMISSIONER OF INDIAN AFFAIRS—SHIRLEY AND JOHNSON CONFLICT—GENERAL LYMAN BUILDS FORT EDWARD—JOHNSON REACHES LAKE ST. SACRAMENT, AUGUST 28—RENAMES IT LAKE GEORGE, SEPTEMBER 1, 1755—DIESKAU, AT HEAD OF FRENCH-CANADIAN-INDIAN FORCE, DEFEATS AMERICAN-INDIAN SCOUTING PARTY—ENEMY DECISIVELY DEFEATED, SEPTEMBER 8, 1755—JOHNSON WOUNDED—GENERAL LYMAN COMMANDS—FORT WILLIAM HENRY BUILT—JOHNSON MADE BARONET AND PRESENTED £5,000.

The opening of the year 1755 found the French in Canada greatly strengthened by the extension of their power westward. The French had a line of communication and a series of posts extending from the mouth of the St. Lawrence for nearly 3,000 miles along the Great Lakes and down the Mississippi to its outlet into the Gulf of Mexico. In 1754, they started to rule the waters of the Ohio, by which attempt they came into direct conflict with the Six Nations, who claimed practically the entire region between the Mississippi, the Ohio and the Great Lakes. Where the English attempted to build a fort at the forks of the Ohio and Alleghany (Pittsburg), the French seized it and completed the post, naming it Fort Duquesne. Colonel George Washington moved against this post in 1754 and engaged the French in battle. He was defeated and compelled to return. This opened the great conflict in America.

The American colonists appealed to Great Britain and three expeditions were planned for 1755. One was to be directed against Fort Duquesne, one against the Lake Ontario French forts and the third was to move to the capture of Crown Point on Lake Champlain. The first two of these campaigns failed but the third expedition, under command of Major General William Johnson, fought and won the Battle of Lake George. This was one of three pitched battles won by the American-English armies during the war, the others being at Quebec under Wolfe, and at Niagara, also under Johnson. Thus, Major General Johnson commanded at two of the three English victories, although General Lyman, second in command, was the actual victor at Lake George as Johnson was severely wounded early in the attack on the American camp during the battle.

Early in 1755, the French began the construction of Fort Carillon, which entirely commanded the narrow passage of Lake Champlain, at that point. The name of the fortification was later changed to Fort Ticonderoga. As previously noted, the French had built Fort St. Frederick at Crown Point, a few miles above Ticonderoga in 1731. With these two strong posts, the French now dominated Lake Champlain throughout the greater part of its length and they also controlled the important portage route between Lake George and Lake Champlain. They held all these points until Amherst dislodged them in 1759. The capture of these key positions, by the British-American army in that year, spelled the beginning of the end for the dominion of France in North America.

General Braddock was sent to America in 1755 as commander of the British and American Colonial forces. He suffered a terrible defeat in his movement against Fort Duquesne, on July 9, 1755, which had a most depressing effect on the Colonists.

Colonel William Johnson early took precautions to guard the frontiers at the very beginning of hostilities. As early as June 6, 1754, he issued orders to the Albany County militia to be ready to repel any threatened French attack from Canada.

On February 24, 1755, Colonel Johnson was appointed, by Governor Shirley, to lead a Colonial expedition for the capture of Crown Point. On April 16, 1755, Governor DeLancey of New York, and Governor Shirley of Massachusetts, commissioned Colonel Johnson to be a major-general.

Major General Johnson's stone house, which he called Mount Johnson, was palisaded and fortified in 1755 and was known thereafter as Fort Johnson. In the summer of 1755, he held important Indian councils there, at one of which 1,100 red men were present. In April, 1755, General Braddock made Johnson commissioner of Indian affairs for all the colonies. While Johnson was organizing his Crown Point expedition, Governer Shirley was raising a force to capture Fort Niagara. Both commanders competed for the services of the Indians as scouts and both expeditions suffered thereby. Friction soon arose between these generals. Only 300 Indians joined Johnson's command and a large proportion of these were Mohawks, in which tribe Johnson had been inducted as a chieftain.

General Johnson ordered General Lyman to proceed to the carrying place between Lake George and the Hudson River at present Fort Edward. At the latter place, Lyman built a fort, which was first called Fort Lyman, but which Johnson later named Fort Edward. Johnson reached Fort Edward on August 14, 1755. On August 28, 1755, he arrived at the beautiful lake which Father Jogues had christened Lake Saint Sacrament. On September 1, 1755, Johnson renamed it Lake George in honor of the British king.

Johnson had an army of about 3,000 troops, all of whom were Colonial militia, many of them being residents of the Hudson Valley. On his arrival at Lake George, he ordered the camp to be fortified.

Learning of the British-Colonial expedition, which was intended for the capture of Crown Point, the military authorities of New France prepared to defend it. An expedition was preparing for the capture of Oswego. Its destination was changed to Crown Point and it was put under the command of Baron Dieskau, who expected an easy conquest of the "mob of countrymen" opposed to him. The French Army sailed up Lake Champlain in boats and canoes.

General Johnson's Provincial Army of militia had some very able military leaders, chief of whom was General Phineas Lyman of Connecticut, second in command, and the real victor of Lake George. Others were Captain Ephraim Williams of Massachusetts, founder of Williams College, who was killed in the first battle; Israel Putnam, then a private in a Connecticut regiment,

and later the famous American Revolutionary general; Lieutenant John Stark of the New Hampshire regiment, who, as a Revolutionary American general, directed the defeat of the British at Bennington in 1777.

Only one of the American regiments wore the militia uniform of blue with red trimmings. The soldiers of the remainder of the army were dressed in their everyday clothing, as the militiamen of the Revolutionary Army were later generally attired. They were not soldiers but were generally farmers and farmers' sons, who had enlisted for the summer campaign. Blankets had been served them by the several provinces which raised the regiments. Most of the men brought their own guns. They had no bayonets but carried hatchets in their belts as a substitute. Powder horns were slung at their sides. On these, they carved quaint devices with the points of their jack-knives. All in all, they were the same type of Americans, who later fought and won the War for Independence.

Johnson's Indian scouts reported the advance of the French consisting of 3,500 French regulars, Canadians and Indians. The invaders moved to capture Fort Lyman but the Indians as usual refused to join in an assault on a strong fortification. Accordingly, Dieskau ordered an attack on the American camp at the head of Lake George. The French advance guard captured a party of American wagoners from Fort Lyman. A few of them escaped and ran into the American camp, where they gave warning of the approaching enemy.

Johnson sent out a strong reconnoitreing force of militia and Indians, which was ambuscaded by the enemy. After the first confusion, the Americans and Indians rallied and made good their retreat, inflicting much damage on the enemy. In this battle, many Mohawks and their leader, aged Chief Hendrick, were killed. The Canadian commander and many of the enemy were slain and the Canadian militia and Indians were dispirited by these losses. However, the enemy continued their advance.

The American militia lay behind a redoubt of logs, wagons and batteaux, when their retreating comrades hurried into camp. Order was soon restored and the soldiers were disposed to meet the advancing enemy.

The French regulars came on in good order, firing by

platoons but they were stopped by the American artillery. The Canadians and Indians scattered behind trees and fought in the Indian manner, which was also that of the frontiersmen. Both sides now opened a furious musketry fire. Johnson was shot in the thigh and the command passed to Lyman, who successfully directed the battle for four hours, when the French were finally driven off. General Lyman was everywhere in the front of the battle but escaped uninjured. The American wagoners and camp followers also joined in the fierce conflict. However, the Mohawks did little, evidently thinking that they had done and suffered enough in the morning battle, where many of them were killed.

About five o'clock, the Americans rushed from behind their line with a yell and attacked the enemy with their hatchets and gun butts, routing them completely. Dieskau, who had been previously wounded, was again shot and was carried helpless into Johnson's tent, where the General ordered immediate medical attention for him. By Johnson's care, Dieskau was saved from being murdered by the Mohawks, who were furious at their losses in the morning battle.

The casualties are given as 262 Americans killed, wounded and missing, and 228 of the enemy army. Four hundred Americans were later detailed to bury the dead. Only two surgeons and two assistants were with the American Army and this tiny medical force cared for the many who were wounded.

Johnson has been criticised for not moving forward to the capture of Crown Point, following this victory, but there were many reasons to prevent such action. Recruits came in and, by October, his army numbered 3,600 men but it was insufficiently clothed and supplied and the season was getting late.

On September 21, 1755, Johnson gave the name of Fort Edward to the fort at the southern end of the carrying place, which had been previously called Fort Lyman. On September 29, he gave orders for building a new fort at Lake George, which he christened Fort William Henry. These names were given in honor of grandsons of King George.

On November 22, 1755, a council of war, at which General Lyman presided, decided against any further advance for the season. News of the American victory reached London and, on

November 27, the English government conferred the title of baronet upon Johnson and presented him with £5,000. Johnson went to New York on December 30, where he was given a great public ovation.

Fort William Henry was garrisoned by a number of soldiers from each colony represented in Johnson's army. The remainder of the force, 3,000 strong, marched back to Albany. From there, the New York and the New England militia returned to their homes on the farms and in the towns, where, around their firesides, they again fought the Battle of Lake George, to the great admiration of their families and neighbors.

Johnson made no mention of Lyman, in his report of the Battle of Lake George, although he is said to have privately admitted that he owed the victory to the Yankee general, which is not to be doubted. Bitter feeling followed between the partisans of the two generals and, all in all, the entire campaign showed both the strength and the weakness of the American Colonists in a military way.

The Americans had furnished the greater part of the troops in the Colonial wars with New France. They had supplied the best Indian fighters and forest rangers and now, at Lake George, they had shown they were the equals of the English regulars in the field.

There were six pitched battles in the French and Indian War —Braddock's defeat, Lake George, Ticonderoga, Niagara and two at Quebec. Lake George, Niagara and Wolfe's battle at Quebec were the outstanding British-American victories. The others were French victories. In two of the British-American victories, Sir William Johnson was the commanding general. Johnson used his masterful diplomacy and tremendous energy in keeping the Six Nations loyal or neutral during the war. His great services in this regard have been largely overlooked by historians. The French might have won the war before the British government got started, had it not been for the fact that Johnson held the Iroquois faithful to the English cause or kept them from siding with the French. Sir William Johnson was one of the great Americans of Colonial days and one of the greatest factors in making North America practically an English speaking continent, north of the Rio Grande.

CHAPTER 52.

1756-1759. FRENCH-INDIAN WAR.

1756, 1757, 1758, CHARACTERIZED BY FAILURES OF PLANS AND INEFFICIENCY OF BRITISH COMMANDERS—MASSACRES AND RAIDS ON THE MOHAWK—JULY, 1757, MONTCALM, WITH ARMY OF 8,000 FRENCH, CANADIANS AND INDIANS BESIEGES FORT WILLIAM HENRY—FORT SURRENDERED, AUGUST 9, 1757—INDIANS MURDER MANY OF GARRISON AND NON-COMBATANTS—GENERAL WEBB'S INEFFICIENCY—1758, EXPEDITION AGAINST FORT TICONDEROGA UNDER GENERAL ABERCROMBIE—AMHERST BECOMES BRITISH COMMANDER IN AMERICA—1759, AMHERST PLANS CONQUEST OF CANADA—WOLFE TAKES QUEBEC—JOHNSON CAPTURES FORT NIAGARA—AMHERST TAKES FORT NIAGARA AND CROWN POINT.

Following the death of General Braddock, in the ill-fated expedition directed against Fort Duquesne, Governor Shirley of Massachusetts, became second in command of the British-American armies. Shirley was active in strengthening and garrisoning Fort Oswego, to which supplies went forward from Albany over the Mohawk River or its roads.

Shirley's war plans for 1756 comprised expeditions against Fort Niagara, by way of the Mohawk River and Oswego; against Crown Point; against Fort Duquesne (Pittsburg); against the French settlements on the Chaudiere. It was planned to raise 20,000 American-British troops for these expeditions.

While the active operations, of the French-Indian War in New York State were conducted in areas outside of the Hudson River country the valley of the river and its centers, Albany and New York, were closely involved in all the activities of the war from 1756 until 1760, in which year Montreal and New Canada were conquered by Amherst's British-American expedition, which went out from Albany and Schenectady in the latter year.

Fort Williams was built, at present Rome on the Mohawk River, in 1746, on the site of later Fort Stanwix. Fort Bull was

built about 2½ miles west of Fort Williams. Fort Bull was on the western end and Fort Williams on the eastern end of the portage between the Mohawk River and Wood Creek. On March 26, 1756, a party of French and Canadian Indians attacked Fort Bull and killed 60 of its garrison of 90 men. The French captured Fort Oswego on August 14, 1756. The tremendously inefficient and thoroughly incompetent British General Webb started to march to Oswego. However, he stopped at the site of present Rome and burned Fort Williams and then marched back through the Mohawk Valley to Albany.

In 1756, an army of 10,000 American and British troops was mobilized at Albany under Lord Loudon and General Abercrombie, two of the most incompetent British military commanders who muddled things in America, from the days of the first settlement to the end of the American Revolution. The great army was kept dawdling at Albany all summer.

On November 12, 1757, a raiding party of 300 French marines, Canadians and Indians destroyed the German Flats settlements, at and near the present village of Herkimer on the Mohawk River. The raiders killed 40 people, captured 150 and burned 60 houses.

An enemy raiding party again operated in the Herkimer-Mohawk neighborhood on April 30, 1758, when it destroyed farm buildings and property on the south side of the Mohawk River. Captain Nicholas Herkimer was in command of Fort Herkimer, to which most of the settlers fled. Captain Herkimer sent out a force which drove off the raiders after a brisk skirmish. Herkimer became a brigadier-general of militia during the Revolution and commanded the American force at the Battle of Oriskany on August 6, 1777.

Sir William Johnson, by his great diplomacy, prevented the Iroquois from going over to the French side. These Indians were much disgusted with the characteristically incapable conduct of military affairs by the British commanders. During the war, Johnson held many councils with the Indians at Fort Johnson, 34 miles west of Albany.

In March, 1757, a French Canadian expedition set out to capture Fort William Henry, on Lake George, but failed miserably.

In July, 1757, Montcalm led a strong force of 8,000 French, Canadians and Indians against the post which was garrisoned by 500 soldiers under Colonel Monro. About 1,700 American militia were in a nearby camp. After a protracted siege, Munro surrendered on August 9, 1757. The garrison and non-combatants were allowed to march to Fort Edward. Montcalm's Indians became crazed with drink and fell on this marching column and murdered many of them before the French officers could restrain them.

Johnson raised the Albany County militia and a number of Indians. He marched to Fort Edward, then in command of the cowardly and incompetent British General Webb, who refused to allow Johnson to march to the relief of Colonel Monro's garrison. The militia and Indians returned to Albany absolutely disgusted with Webb and the British high command which could tolerate such official failures.

In 1757, a French spy passed through the country between Oswego and Albany and made careful notes which are now most interesting historically.

William Pitt, the British premier, asked the American colonies to raise 20,000 soldiers for the operations of 1758. The great campaign of the year was to be one directed against Fort Ticonderoga, then in French hands. This movement was under command of General Abercrombie, one of England's most inefficient commanders, and it failed disastrously. The British-Americans marched north from Albany and sailed down Lake George. The French prepared an ambuscade on the portage road from the lake to Fort Ticonderoga and the British commanders, as usual, walked into it. Lord Howe, second in command, was slain. Abercrombie ordered an assault on the fort which was repulsed by the French garrison with heavy loss. The great British-American army then retreated.

However, the hope of the British-American cause was now centered on Lord Jeffrey Amherst, a real soldier and a capable general. He commanded at the capture of Louisburg in August, 1758. In the same month, Lieutenant Colonel John Bradstreet led a British-American force to the capture of Fort Frontenac on the site of present Kingston, Ontario. This task was easy as Bradstreet had 3,000 militia while the fort was defended by only

110 men. Bradstreet's men went to the capture of Fort Frontenac by way of the Mohawk Valley. His men suffered from sickness but, on his return trip, many of them were detailed to work on the construction of Fort Stanwix at present Rome. In the same year, Fort Schuyler was built on the banks of the Mohawk River in the present City of Utica.

The doom of French dominion in America was sealed when Sir Jeffrey Amherst was appointed commander-in-chief of the British-Colonial armies in America in September, 1758.

General Amherst went to Albany and made his headquarters at that key position of the American lines, in the spring of 1759. Here he perfected his campaign plans for the year. General Wolfe was to sail up the St. Lawrence with an army and a fleet and capture Quebec. General Amherst was to take the French forts on Lake Champlain and then go on to Montreal, take that French capital and join General Wolfe at Quebec. General Prideaux was to capture Fort Niagara and then sail down Lake Ontario and the St. Lawrence River to Montreal. The British-American armies achieved all of these objectives in 1759 with the exception of Montreal.

General Amherst was a splendid soldier, whose valor and military successes have had little historical recognition. In fact, about the only person who secured any glory in the French and Indian War was Wolfe, because of his success at Quebec. However, Wolfe's victory was only one of the great features of the big campaign which Amherst planned and carried out for the conquest of French Canada.

With Amherst, the long procession of stupid, incompetent and timid British commanders in America came to an end. Amherst and Johnson seem to have coöperated in sympathetic fashion and their brains and bravery combined to put an end to French empire in America and to the danger of savage butchery which had menaced the Mohawk Valley frontier for a hundred years.

Sir William Johnson held frequent councils with the Mohawks, Six Nations and General Amherst in the early months of 1759. On May 17, 1759, Johnson recommended the capture of Fort Niagara to the Lords of Trade.

General John Prideaux had been raised from the rank of colonel to that of brigadier-general in 1759. He was placed in

command of the expedition against Fort Niagara with Sir William Johnson second in command. The army consisted of 5,000 American militia and British regulars. Prideaux mobilized his forces at Scotia, in the spring of 1759. Prideaux and Johnson marched their army through the Mohawk Valley in the early summer. The American-British forces reached Oneida Lake on June 21, 1759. The army deployed before French Fort Niagara on July 7.

Prideaux left a strong British-American force at Oswego which rebuilt the British post at that place and which also repulsed a French-Canadian-Indian party which made an attack.

On July 20, Prideaux opened the attack on Fort Niagara. He was killed by a shell which burst prematurely, when the command passed to General Johnson. Johnson had 2,300 soldiers and 900 Indian warriors. On June 24, the British-American army was attacked by a force of 1,100 French and 200 Indians, who were badly beaten in a pitched battle. On July 25, Fort Niagara surrendered to General Johnson.

Only a few days after Fort Niagara was taken, General Amherst captured Fort Ticonderoga and his army then occupied Crown Point, following the withdrawal of the French garrison. Amherst started down Lake Champlain for Montreal but his boats were driven back by heavy gales. He disembarked at Crown Point and ordered the building of a great fort there, which survives today in interesting ruins. Johnson returned to Fort Johnson and, on December 2, 1759, he conferred with General Amherst at Albany.

On September 13, 1759, the British Army took Quebec. James Wolfe, the commanding general, was killed in the battle on the Plains of Abraham.

CHAPTER 53.

1760. GENERAL AMHERST, WITH ARMY OF 10,000, MOVES FROM ALBANY, THROUGH MOHAWK VALLEY TO CONQUEST OF CANADA.

1760. AMHERST MOBILIZES ARMY AT ALBANY, SCHENECTADY AND SCOTIA—FORCE OF 6,000 AMERICAN MILITIA AND 4,000 BRITISH REGULARS—BRITISH BEATEN BEFORE QUEBEC—AMHERST'S ARMY STARTS FROM THE CAMP AT SCOTIA—BOATS AND SUPPLIES GO WEST OVER MOHAWK RIVER—JUNE 22, 1760. GENERAL AMHERST AND STAFF LEAVE SCOTIA—AUGUST 10, ARMY LEAVES OSWEGO IN 400 BOATS—MURRAY'S ARMY, FROM QUEBEC, HAVILAND'S FORCE, FROM CROWN POINT, AND ROLLO'S TROOPS, FROM LOUISBURG, CONVERGE ON MONTREAL—SEPTEMBER 6, AMHERST'S ARMY ARRIVES, MAKING A TOTAL AMERICAN-BRITISH FORCE OF 17,000—SEPTEMBER 8, 1760, MONTREAL SURRENDERS AND BRITISH-AMERICAN CONQUEST OF CANADA IS COMPLETE.

The year 1760 opened with bright prospects of the ultimate success of the British cause, for the reason that the British-American armies had a splendid commander in Lord Jeffrey Amherst. His well formed plans caused Colonial military affairs to move forward, in orderly fashion, to a victorious conclusion. Early September saw Montreal and Quebec and all the eastern forts in English hands and the British flag finally floated from the Gulf of St. Lawrence to the head of the Great Lakes. Amherst and Johnson played important parts in the military drama of the year. The Hudson Valley and the Mohawk Valley were the scenes of the march of the main British-American army on the way to Lake Ontario, the St. Lawrence River and the final surrender of the French at Montreal.

Sir William Johnson held numerous councils with the Six Nations in the early part of 1760, while Amherst was mobilizing his army at Albany, Schenectady and Scotia. Amherst's

force consisted of 6,000 American militia and 4,000 British regulars.

Although the British-American army took Quebec on September 13, 1759, the position of the victors was far from secure. However, Wolfe's successor, General Murray, had a hard time to hold the city. The valiant French, undismayed by their reverses of 1759, made an attempt to recapture Quebec by a movement from Montreal. Scurvy played havoc with the British Army and, in the spring of 1759, it had only 2,000 men able to bear arms. Levis, the French commander, moved from Montreal to attack the city. On April 27, the British and French armies met in a conflict which ended in a great French victory. Murray and his beaten army retired into the town. The timely arrival of a British fleet saved Quebec for the English at a most critical time. Levis and his French Army retired to Montreal.

Amherst now put his carefully made plans into effect. He moved his army from Albany to Scotia where he mobilized his forces for the long journey to Montreal. Because of a report that the French had retaken Quebec, Johnson, at first, had much difficulty in enlisting Indians of the Six Nations in Amherst's army.

Amherst's army of 6,000 American militia and 4,000 British regulars was organized at the Camp in Scotia and the movement of troops and supplies, over and along the Mohawk River to Oswego, now began. Amherst wrote Johnson that he would leave not even a guard at Fort Hunter and Fort Hendrick and suggested that Sir William do the same with Fort Johnson.

Amherst's plan of campaign was most comprehensive and, with the large forces at his command seemed certain of success. His movement on Montreal was made from three points, Oswego on the southwest, Quebec on the northeast and Crown Point to the southward.

On July 2, 1760, General Murray sailed from Quebec with 2,500 men. Lord Rollo followed with 1,300 men from Louisburg. About August 12, General Haviland embarked 3,400 troops at Crown Point and set sail down Lake Champlain, bound for Montreal.

The troops of the main army had been going westward through the valley of the Mohawk for several months when Gen-

eral Amherst left his base at Scotia, on June 22, 1760, and rode westward, with members of his staff, along the Mohawk River. The previous day, Amherst learned of the French failure at Quebec.

The main British-American army covered over 160 miles in the voyage and march from Scotia to Oswego. About 100 miles of this route lay in the Mohawk Valley. The many boats of the expedition carried supplies and were moved by boatmen and troops. They went up the river for 95 miles, from Scotia to Rome. Here they were portaged for about 2 miles to Wood Creek and then went down that stream into Oneida Lake. From there, they sailed down the Oneida and Oswego rivers to Fort Oswego on Lake Ontario.

At Oswego, the army made ready for the long and difficult water trip, down Lake Ontario and the St. Lawrence River to Montreal.

Sir William Johnson had command of the 600 Indians who arrived at Oswego. Of these 402 were Iroquois of the Six Nations. Of the latter, 111 were Mohawks. Johnson knew that he could count upon the loyalty of the Mohawks but it is probable that he wanted some of the other Indians with him so that they would not be open to French intrigue.

On August 10, 1760, Amherst's British-American army left Oswego for Montreal in 400 boats. It numbered 10,142 soldiers and 600 Indians.

About August 15, Amherst captured Oswegatchie (also called Fort Presentation and La Galette) where Ogdensburg is now located. Fort Levis, below Oswegatchie on a rocky islet, was bombarded and captured. When it surrendered and the Indians were not allowed to massacre its garrison, most of them left Johnson and wandered back home. The greater part of the Mohawks stayed with Johnson throughout the expedition. The army passed the St. Lawrence rapids, with the loss of 46 boats wrecked and 84 men drowned.

On September 6, 1760, Amherst's army landed on the Island of Montreal. The armies of Murray, Rollo and Haviland now came up and the total British-American force before Montreal numbered 17,000 men. Being greatly outnumbered, the French

surrendered Montreal on September 8, 1760, and all Canada passed under the sway of England.

As previously noted the route of the conquering British-Americans to Canada lay through the Mohawk Valley. From the beginnings of King William's War, in 1689, to the end of the second war with Great Britain in 1815—a period of 126 years—many expeditions were directed toward the conquest of New York and New France, in the Colonial wars, and toward the subjugation of New York or Canada, in the first and second wars between England and America. Most of these movements went out along the Lake Champlain route. All of them failed ingloriously, with the exception of Amherst's American-British army movement of 1760 through the Mohawk Valley. It was the Mohawk Valley, "Gateway to the West," that enabled the combined American-British armies to conquer the French Canadian empire and make all North America eventually an English-speaking continent. Amherst's selection of this route, his thorough preparation for the campaign and its conduct show Lord Jeffrey as the great commander which he truly was.

Although Canada was conquered by way of the Hudson and Mohawk valleys, there is scarcely a reference concerning this movement from Albany to Oswego in American histories. The mobilization of this great American-British army of 1760, at Albany, Schenectady and Scotia is most notable historically and the expedition is an outstanding historical feature of the history of the Hudson Valley, of which the Mohawk River country forms a part. It is fully worthy of the attention given it in this work. The troops first assembled at Albany, reaching that point by roads leading thereto from other provinces, or up the Hudson. Troops from New York City went to Albany by way of the Hudson River. The mobilization point at Scotia on the Mohawk River was only about 16 miles westward of Albany. Most of Amherst's army made its return march by the Mohawk Valley and Hudson Valley routes.

Thus ended a military movement through the Hudson and Mohawk valleys which resulted in the conquest of half of the continent of North America and which ended French rule in Canada which had continued for over 150 years.

CHAPTER 54.

1760-1774. CAUSES AND BEGINNINGS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

PERIOD OF GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT FOLLOWING THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR—ENFORCEMENT OF TRADE LAWS STARTS PUBLIC OPPOSITION—TORY AND WHIG SENTIMENTS DIVIDE HUDSON VALLEY FAMILIES—1765. STAMP ACT BECOMES A LAW—CONGRESS OF NINE COLONIES MEETS IN NEW YORK CITY—POPULAR MEETINGS—MOB RIOTS IN NEW YORK ON STAMP ACT DAY—JUNE 4, 1766. SONS OF LIBERTY ERECT LIBERTY POLE IN NEW YORK CITY—1766. SONS OF LIBERTY ORGANIZE IN ALBANY—BRITISH SOLDIERS CUT DOWN LIBERTY POLE—JANUARY 16, 1770. "BATTLE OF GOLDEN HILL" IN NEW YORK CITY BETWEEN LIBERTY BOYS AND BRITISH SOLDIERS—MINUTE MEN ORGANIZE—PATRIOTIC COMMITTEES FORMED 1771—NEW YORK POPULATION, 168,007—1772. TRYON COUNTY FORMED—1774. TEA, ON BOARD THE SHIP, "LONDON," THROWN INTO NEW YORK HARBOR BY PATRIOTS—FIRST CONTINENTAL CONGRESS MEETS IN PHILADELPHIA—DEATH OF SIR WILLIAM JOHNSON—DUTCH DOMINATE NEW YORK PROVINCE.

Although, in 1756, the population of New York Province was 96,765, there was little or no growth in the four years of actual warfare which followed. However, the period from 1760 to 1775 was one of the greatest times of development, which the Hudson Valley has ever known. Schoolhouses, churches, mills, taverns, stores, shops, houses and barns were erected in great numbers and the cities and villages also increased in population, buildings and trade. Traffic on the Hudson River was brisk and the highways were developed and improved. The Revolution was later to halt this progress and destroy much of its material development in the Valley of the Hudson.

This pre-Revolutionary period was one not only of material growth but also one in which the two forces, which caused the conflict, developed acute opposition. As elsewhere in the Eng-

lish Colonies, the people of the Hudson Valley were violently stirred by the principles and events which brought on the war. The Hudson Valley, aside from New York City, was overwhelmingly Whig or patriot in its sentiments, yet there was much Loyalist or Tory feeling. Families were often divided in their allegiance and much bitter feeling prevailed along the Hudson River before the first gun of the Revolution was fired.

On October 26, 1760, George the Third succeeded to the throne of England. His ministers soon undertook to enforce obnoxious and repressive trade laws which dated from the Navigation Act of 1651, the main object of which was to force the American colonists to buy and sell only among themselves or in England. These laws had been allowed to lapse by force of American public opinion. Upon opposition to them by the people of Boston, so-called "writs of assistance" were issued, which were virtually blanket search warrants, enabling customs officers to go over a citizen's premises in a search for smuggled goods. An English army was then sent to America, with the avowed object of its protection from attack but, in reality, to enforce the hated laws. The Colonists were informed that taxes would be levied on them for the support of the unwanted and detested foreign army. This brought out the old cry of "No taxation without representation."

The Hudson Valley people were soon divided into Whigs and Tories. The uncompromising struggle between the despotic stupidity of George the Third and his arrogant ministry and the spirit of American liberty was soon on in full force. The people of New York were enraged at the appointment of Benjamin Pratt of Massachusetts to the seat in the Governor's Council made vacant by the death of Governor DeLancey in 1760. DeLancey had been Lieutenant-Governor from June 3, 1757, until August, 1760. Cadwallader Colden, as president of the council, acted as governor from August 4, 1760, until August 8, 1761, when he became Lieutenant-Governor and so continued until Robert Monckton became governor on October 26, 1761. Colden was again Lieutenant-Governor from November 18, 1761, until June 14, 1762, when Monckton again became governor and continued until June 28, 1763. At that time Colden again became Lieutenant-Governor and held office until Sir Henry Moore came

in on November 13, 1765. Colden was again Lieutenant-Governor from September 12, 1769, until the Earl of Dunmore assumed office on October 19, 1770. William Tryon succeeded Dunmore on July 9, 1771. Colden was again Lieutenant-Governor from April 7, 1774, until June 26, 1775, when Tryon resumed the office which he held until March 23, 1780. From that time until April 17, 1783, James Robertson, Governor, and Andrew Elliott, Lieutenant-Governor, acted as British Provincial executives. From 1775 to the end of the Revolution, the greater part of the Hudson Valley and the Province of New York was in the control of American authorities. The British governors held sway only over New York City, Staten Island and Long Island.

During the pre-Revolutionary period, Colden, a citizen of New York, had acted as chief executive of the Province for a period of five and one-half years. The fact that a Provincial, even if he was a "Tory," could officiate as the executive of the Colony, must have impressed some thinking people of the time with the obvious truth that New York could be as well governed by one of her own residents as by an appointee of the Crown, who came from overseas and therefore knew little or nothing of Provincial conditions.

This important pre-Revolutionary period (1760-1775) was the beginning of a long and serious quarrel, between the authorities of the Province of New York and the people of present Vermont, over jurisdiction over the latter territory. The boundary line between Connecticut and New York had been previously settled, as noted in this work, and the boundary between Massachusetts and New York was officially determined in 1764. The Connecticut and Massachusetts boundary lines are of interest because they generally follow the eastern limits of the Hudson River watershed. New York claimed the territory north of Massachusetts eastward to the Connecticut River, which embraced the present State of Vermont. Its people resisted the claim and asserted their independence of this authority. Ethan Allen, later one of the officers at the capture of Fort Ticonderoga, was one of the strongest advocates of the autonomy of Vermont. The troubles between the "Green Mountain Boys" and the New York

Provincial and State authorities continued, more or less, up until Vermont's admission to the Union in 1791.

Taxation without consent became the policy of the English government in this period. Duties were levied upon goods imported into the Colonies and revenue collectors were sent to enforce the laws, which were frequently resisted or evaded by the Colonists.

In 1765, the obnoxious Stamp Act became a law and the people of the Colonies assumed a defiant attitude, with the exception of the most bitter Tories. James McEvers was chosen as the collector for New York. The Sons of Liberty of the city demanded his resignation. This powerful organization had been in existence for many years, as has been noted at the trial of Zenger in 1734. The Sons of Liberty of Albany organized in 1766.

The Stamp Act brought out such bitter opposition and developed such a violent state of public opinion in the American Colonies that a Congress of the Colonies was held in New York City, beginning on October 7, 1765. Nine Colonies were represented. A Declaration of Rights and an address to the king were the results of this Congress. Thus, New York and the Hudson Valley was again the scene of a Colonial Congress, those early popular bodies which did so much to further the cause of American independence.

During this period, the advocates of liberty in New York City held frequent gatherings on "the Fields" or "the Common," which is where City Hall Park is now located. Among the boldest "tribunes" of the people, who there addressed them, were Alexander McDougall, a Scotchman who later became a major-general in the Continental Army; Marinus Willett, famous Revolutionary soldier and mayor of New York in 1807; John Lamb, an optician, who became a colonel of the New York Line regiments; John Morin Scott, an eminent lawyer; Isaac Sears, a merchant. Among the more moderate patriotic leaders, were Justice Oliver DeLancey, Robert Livingston, Philip Livingston, later a signer of the Declaration of Independence; Alexander Hamilton and John Jay, later the first chief justice of the State of New York.

The Stamp Act went into effect and on that day a patriotic mob took possession of New York and, in spite of the English garrison, they held sway in the city. They burned an effigy of Governor Colden and also burned his fine state coach. Later, Governor Colden delivered the stamps to the mayor and aldermen of the city who deposited them in the City Hall and no further attempt was made to enforce the obnoxious act. When Pitt came to power, in 1766, the law was repealed.

Although the Whigs and Tories were bitter against each other throughout the Hudson Valley, the chief collisions occurred in New York City, in the decade before the Revolution. On June 4, 1766, the anniversary of the king's birthday, the Sons of Liberty erected a liberty pole, on the Common in New York City, to celebrate the repeal of the Stamp Act. A great public gathering and feast was held there on that day. The "Liberty Boys," as they were popularly known, erected a flag bearing the words, "The King, Pitt, Liberty."

The English soldiers, as well as the Tories, were displeased with the repeal of the Stamp Act, which they regarded as a popular victory. There was also bad blood between the foreign soldiers and the native citizenry. Incensed against the "Liberty rag," the soldiers cut down the flagpole on August 10. The "Liberty Boys" again reared the pole and the red coats again cut it down on March 18, 1767, in spite of a close watch kept on it. It was again set up by the patriots who kept it standing in spite of fights with the soldiers.

The Liberty pole remained upright until January 16, 1770, when a force of soldiers managed to cut it down and pile it beside the door of Montague's tavern, where the Sons of Liberty held their meetings. On January 18, 1770, a general fight took place between soldiers and citizens, principally on Golden Hill, which was located on present John Street, between Cliff and William. These encounters continued the next day and several citizens and soldiers were wounded. The Sons of Liberty soon afterward erected another Liberty pole, which stood until the British occupied New York in 1776. A vane was attached to the topmast and on this vane was the one magic word, "Liberty."

The Boston "Tea Party" took place on December 16, 1773. New York City held one about three months later. In 1773, all

important taxes were abolished, with the exception of those on tea and a few other articles. Lord North said that these were retained "to try the question with America." The question soon came to trial. Americans were bitterly opposed to "taxation without representation" and they objected to the tea impost, particularly as tea was a very general beverage throughout the Colonies.

The first tea ship was expected in New York City on November 25, 1773, and "the Mohawks," an order similar to that which conducted the Boston "Tea Party," made ready to stage an affair of the same kind. The ship did not arrive until April 18, 1774. It was the *Nancy*, under command of Captain Lockyer. He was forced to take his cargo of tea back to England. A few days after, the *London* docked at New York and 18 chests of tea which she had on board were thrown into the water.

The people seemed to sense the coming conflict for national independence. Many patriots joined companies of "Minute Men" and drilled and armed themselves. Organization had been going on for several years. About 1770, the Sons of Liberty of New York City organized a General Committee of One Hundred and a Vigilance Committee of Fifty. Even the patriots had their splits in the violent partisanship of the time. The conservatives became "Patricians," while the radicals were called "Tribunes." Most of the Patricians finally became Tories. Conservative patriots formed a new Committee of Fifty-one in 1774, while the radicals' Committee of Fifty continued in vigorous action.

The Liberty Boys' Vigilance Committee called a meeting of the citizens on the Common in New York City on July 6, 1774. Because of the great numbers which attended this is known as "the Great Meeting." It was addressed by a young student of King's (Columbia) College—Alexander Hamilton. The meeting adopted important measures and pledged New York to join with the other Colonies in a non-importation league.

In July, the Whigs of New York chose delegates for a Continental Congress which met in Philadelphia on September 5, 1774. The representatives were chosen by counties as follows: New York City and County, Philip Livingston, John Alsop, Isaac Low, James Duane, John Jay; Orange County, Henry Wissner, John Haring; Kings County, Simon Boerum; Suffolk County,

William Floyd. Albany, Westchester and Dutchess counties adopted the New York City delegates to represent them.

The people of Albany County were anxious to send Colonel Philip Schuyler to represent them but he was too ill to attend. In July, his friend, Councillor William Smith of New York City, wrote to Schuyler as follows: "The colonies are preparing for the grand Wittenagemote with great spirit. At Philadelphia, a plan is digesting for an American constitution. I know not the outlines of it. I hope it is for a Parliament to meet annually. Our people will be the last of all in the appointment of delegates. I wish your county would assist in the choice. Expresses will be sent through the whole colony to call upon the counties for the purpose. The people of England begin to call out for an American Parliament."

In 1765, the present Morris Jumel mansion was erected on the upper end of Manhattan Island. It was later to figure as Washington's headquarters during the fighting in 1776 in the northern section of the island. It is today an interesting municipal historical museum.

Sir William Johnson used his powerful influence to have the County of Tryon set off from Albany County in 1772 with Johnstown as the county seat. Johnson's baronial mansion is within the present limits of that city. It was erected in 1762 and is now a historical museum, comprised within the bounds of a small state park. Johnson died on July 11, 1774. His death removed one of the greatest empire-builders of Colonial days. There is little question but that Johnson was one of the most vital factors in the extinguishment of France as a power in America and in making North America an English-speaking continent north of the Rio Grande. The world power and influence of an entire continent with a common language is illimitable. Johnson's historically important homes—Fort Johnson and Johnson Hall, lie within the limits of the watershed of the Hudson River.

A census of the Province of New York was taken in 1771, which showed a total population of 168,007 as compared with 96,765 in 1756. This increase of 71,242 in fifteen years clearly indicates the enormous growth which the Colony had experienced in that period. It is probable that the population in 1775, the

year of the opening of the Revolution, was but little short of 200,000.

In the census of 1771, Albany was the leading county, having 42,706 people, almost double that of the second county which was Dutchess.

The 1771 census figures by counties follow: Albany County, 42,706; Dutchess County, 22,404; Ulster County, 13,950; Orange County, 10,092; Westchester County, 21,745; New York County, 21,863; Kings, 3,623; Queens, 10,980; Richmond, 2,847; Cumberland, 3,947; Gloucester, 722. Total, 154,879. Of this total, the Indians were not included.

In the 1771 census, the Hudson Valley counties, including New York County, had a total population of 132,760 out of the total of 154,879 for the Colony. North of the County of New York, the Hudson Valley had a population of 91,014. By 1775, this region probably had over 100,000 people, exclusive of Indians.

In 1774, an official Provincial estimate of the population of New York gave it as 182,247.

New York was still Dutch in general character at the opening of the Revolution. Probably nearly two-thirds of the people were descended from pioneers who came here from the Netherlands. The Dutch element was particularly strong in the Hudson Valley.

One of the active features in furthering the cause of American independence had been the "committees of correspondence," which were formed in 1773 and some of which later developed into "committees of safety."

Representatives from twelve British-American Colonies met in Philadelphia on September 5, 1774, and remained in session until October 26. A Colonial league, for general commercial non-intercourse with Great Britain and her West Indian possessions, was formed which was known as the American Association. This first Continental Congress passed a number of important acts, which were approved by the Colonies. Its proceedings created a profound sensation both in America and in England. It adjourned to meet in New York City on May 10, 1775.

In November, 1774, the patriots of New York City formed a committee of sixty persons "for carrying into execution the Association entered into by the Continental Congress."

CHAPTER 55.

1769—A VOYAGE UP THE HUDSON—NEW YORK TO ALBANY.

WILLIAM SMITH'S JOURNAL OF HIS TRIP FROM BURLINGTON, NEW JERSEY, TO OTEGO, BY WAY OF THE HUDSON, MOHAWK AND SUSQUEHANNA RIVERS—MAY 4, 1769. TAKES PASSAGE IN A SLOOP FOR ALBANY—VISITS PHILIPSE MANOR—SLOOP FREIGHT RATES, ALBANY TO NEW YORK—AGROUND IN THE HIGHLANDS—GOES ASHORE NEAR BEACON—STRIKES ROUGH WATER—STOPS AT RONDOUT CREEK—OBSERVATIONS ON HUDSON RIVER AGRICULTURE—AT CATSKILL—A NEW HUDSON RIVER ISLAND—CANOES ARE COMMON CRAFT—MAY 10. ARRIVES AT AND INSPECTS ALBANY, A TOWN OF 500 HOUSES—REMARKS THE DUTCH STYLE OF ARCHITECTURE AND RECOUNTS SIMILAR CHARACTERISTICS OF ALBANY AND NEW YORK—MAY 11. LEAVES ALBANY BY WAGON FOR SCHENECTADY, VISITING COHOES FALLS ON THE WAY.

Following is William Smith's journal of his journey from New York to Albany and the Cohoes Falls. His interesting diary of his travels, from Burlington, New Jersey, to his lands at Otego on the Susquehanna, forms a most interesting document of the period just antedating the Revolution. It covers descriptions of the country along three great rivers of New York State which have an outstanding historical significance—the Hudson, Mohawk and Susquehanna. This work is principally concerned with the traveler's observations on the Hudson River country, from New York to Albany and Cohoes. His journal gives an interesting account of the Hudson River between New York and Cohoes Falls, a distance of over 170 miles. The diary, which is printed verbatim, and which includes the New York to Albany section, is as follows:

With a View to survey a large Tract of Land, then lately purchased from the Indians, I departed from Burlington for Otego, May 3rd, 1769, in company with Rich'd Wells, now of Phila-

delphia, and the surveyors, Joseph Biddle Junr. & William Ridgway, as also John Hicks.

May 5th. In the morning, we arrived at the Paulus Hook Ferry, went over and dined at Burns's Tavern in New York & this we deemed an indifferent House. here we saw the Govr. Sir Henry Moore and other noted men. in the Afternoon, we took passage in a sloop, Richd. Schoonhoven, Skipper, for Albany, had fine weather and found it extremely agreeable, Sailing with the country Seats of the Citizens on the Right Hand, the high Lands of Bergen on the Left and the Narrows abaft. We sailed about 13 or 14 Miles & then came to Anchor for the Night. the great rains just before we set out had caused the Water of the North River to taste almost fresh at this Place. The Bergen Shore is high and Rocky & the Eastern side diversified with Hill and Gully.

6th. These Albany Sloops contain very convenient Cabins. We eat from a regular Table, accommodated with Plates, Knives & Forks & enjoyed our Tea in the Afternoon. we had laid in some Provision at N. York & the Capt. some more so that we lived very well. our Commander is very jocose & good company. About 7 o'cloc we passed Spite the Devil (why so called I know not) or Harlem River which divides the Manhattan Island from the Connecticut. the Entrance here appears to be narrow, bounded on each side with High land, King's Bridge, said to be about a Mile from this Entrance but not in Sight. The Bergen Coast continues to be lined with lofty Rocks, thinly overspread with Cedars, Spruce & Shrubs. Nearly opposite to Tappan, we took a Turn on Shore to a Part of Col. Philip's Manor, from the Hills of which are beautiful Prospects. All the Country, on both sides of the River from the City, is hilly. The Manor of Philipsburg, according to our Information, extends about — Miles on the River and about 6 Miles back and is joined above by the Manor of Cortland. this Morng. the Sloop passed by Col. Philips's Mansion House and Gardens, situate in a pleasant Valley between Highlands. the country hereabout excels our [New Jersey] by far in fine Prospects and the Trees & Vegetable appear to be as forward as those at Burlington when we left it, but I conceive that our countrymen excel the People here in cultivation—hardly any Houses appear on the Bergen Side from Paulus Hook to the

line of Orange County. The Tenant for Life here tells me he pays to Col. Philips only 7 £ per Annum for about 200 acres of Land & thinks it an extravagant Rent, because on his demise or Sale his Son or Vendee is obliged to pay to the Landlord one Third of the Value of the Farm for a Renewal of the Lease. The Skipper gave here 5 coppers for a Quart of Milk & Mr. Wells bought Ten small Rock Fish for 12 coppers. The Freight of a Bushel of Wheat from Albany to N. York, according to our Skipper, is Four Pence, of a Barrel of Flour one Shilling and, of a Hogshead of Flour, 7/6 and he thinks they have the same rates from Kattskill. In the Night we ran ground among the Highlands about 50 miles from N. York between Orange and Duchess Counties. The Highlands here are not so lofty as I expected and the River, at this place, appears to be about Half a Mile wide.

7th. Our Company went on Shore up the Rocks to a miserable Farm and House in Orange & left with the Farmer a Direction for Otego (the Name of a Creek of the River Susquehanna whereon & in the Vicinity we afterwards formed a Settlement) as he and a few of his Neighbours seemed desirous to seek new Habitations. he pays Seven Pounds a Year Rent for about 100 acres including Rocks and Mountains—Hudson's River is strait to the Highlands, but thro them very crooked. many Strawberries are to be seen about the Banks & stony Fields. Martier's Rock stands in a part of the River which is exceedingly deep with a bold Shore encircled on either Hand by aspiring Mountains & thro them there is View of a fine Country above. here it is chiefly that the sudden Flaws sometimes take the River Vessels for which Reason they have upright Masts for the more expeditious lowering of the Sails on any sudden Occasion—beyond the above Rock lies Pollaples Island—but a few Wheat and Rye Fields appear along the East Side of the River from N. York hither and a very few Fields are ploughed as if intended for Indian Corn. the Lands seem proper for Sheep or perhaps (if the severity of our Winters will admit) for Vineyards. On the West Side among the Highlands are only a few Houses in the small Vallies between the Mountains. From the streights between Butter Hill and Broken Neck Hill & below them there is a distant Prospect of the Kaatskill Mounts. to the N. W. Murderer's Creek which runs by the Butter Hill, divides the Counties of Orange and Ulster. there

are a few Houses at the Mouth of the Creek. The soil in these Parts is broken, stony and few places proper for the Plow. What grain we saw growing was but indifferent. At one o'cloc we passed by the Town of New Windsor on the Left, seeming at a Distance to consist of about 50 Houses, Stores and Out houses, placed without any regular Order. here end the Highlands. This Town [present Newburgh] has some Trade and probably hereafter may be a place of Consequence as the fine Country of Goshen is said to lie back about 12 or more Miles. On the East Side of the River a little above Windsor is the Fish Kill & Landing where the Sloops carry the Produce of that Side for Market. The North River is here thought to be near Two Miles wide and the General Range of the Highlands by the Compass as taken on the N. Side by our Surveyors is W. S. W. & E. N. E. We took a turn on shore at Denton's Mills called 60 Miles from N. York and walked above Two Miles down the River to Newbury, a small scattered Village & to Denton's Ferry. we found excellent Cyder at both. The New England men cross here & hereabouts almost daily for Susquehanna. their Rout is from hence to the Minisink's accounted only 40 Miles distant & we are told that 700 of their Men are to be in that Country by the first of June next. A sensible Woman informed Us that Two Men of her Neighborhood have been several Times across to those Parts of Susquehannah which lie in York Government & here the people say our Rout by Albany is above 100 Miles out of the Way. this is since found to be true, yet that Rout is used because it is the only Waggon Road to Lake Otsego. The Lands near Hudsons River now appear to be less Hilly tho not level, & a few Settlements are visible here and there, the Houses & Improvements not extraordinary. Denton's Mill, above mentioned, has a remarkable large Fall of Water forming a beautiful Cascade. we saw several other Cascades and Rills—divers Lime Kilns and much Lime Stone on each Shore hereaway & some Appearances of Meadow Land of which we have hitherto seen very little. Lime Stone, it is said, may be found on either Side of the River from the Highlands to Sopus. We have the pleasure of seeing sundry Sloops & Shallops passing back and forwards with the Produce of the Country and Returns. in the Evening, we sailed thro' a remarkable Undulation of the Water for a Mile or Two which

tossed the Sloop about much and made several passengers sick, the more observable as the Passage before and after was quite smooth & little Wind stirring at the Time. We anchored between Two high Shores bespread with Spruce, Chestnut, Oaks and other Trees, very like the towering Banks of Bergen.

8th. There is a high Road from New York to Albany, on both sides of the River, but that on the East side is most frequented; both Roads have a View now and then of the River. Poughkeepsing, the County Town of Duchess stands above the Fish-Kill, a little above the rough Water already noted. We passed the Town in the Night. Slate Stone Rocks on the West Shore, at and below Little Sopus, from whence N. York has of late been supplied. they reckon Little Sopus Island to be Half Way between N. York and Albany. the Weather yesterday and to day very warm but the Mornings and Evenings are cool. Our Skipper says that there are at Albany 31 Sloops, all larger than this, which carry from 400 to 500 barrels of Flour each, trading constantly from thence to York & that they make Eleven or 12 Trips a year each. The general course of Hudson's River as taken by compass is N. & by E. and S. and by W. in some places North and South. Between the Highlands and Kaatskill, both these Mountains are in view at the same Time. At Two ocloc we arrived off the Wallkill. [Rondout Creek]. there are 2 or 3 Houses at the Mouth of the Creek & a Trade carried on in Six or Seven sloops. Kingston, the County Town of Ulster, stands about Two Miles distant but not visible from the Water. * * * The Kaatskill Mountains to the N. W. appear to be very near tho they are at a considerable Distance. The Country on both Sides continues still hilly and rugged and what Wheat is growing, looks much thrown out and gullied—more Houses & Improvements shew themselves along the Sopus Shore and Opposite being an old settled Country—our Vessel came to Anchor a little above the Wallkill about 60 Miles from Albany. We went on shore to Two stone Farm Houses on Beekman Manor in the County of Duchess. the Men were absent & the Women and children could speak no other Language than Low Dutch. our Skipper was Interpreter. One of these Tenants for Life or a very Long Term or for Lives (uncertain which) pays 20 Bushels of Wheat in Kind for 97 Acres of cleared Land & Liberty to get Wood for necessary Uses any

where in the Manor—12 Eggs sold here for six pence, Butter 14d per pound and 2 shad cost 6d. One Woman was very neat & the Iron Hoops of her Pails scowered bright. the Houses are mean. We saw one Piece of good Meadow which is scarce here away. the Wheat was very much thrown out, the Aspect of the Farms rough and hilly like all the rest and the Soil a stiff clay. One Woman had Twelve good countenanced Boys and Girls all clad in Homespun, both Linen and Woolen. here was a Two wheeled Plow drawn by 3 horses abreast, a Scythe with a short crooked Handle and a Kind of Hook, both used to cut down Grain, for the Sickle is not much known in Albany County or in this part of Duchess.

9th. We arose in the Morng, opposite to a large Brick House on the East Side belonging to Mr. Livingston's Father, to Robert R. Livingston, the Judge, in the Lower Manor of Livingston. Albany County now on either Hand & sloping Hills here and there covered with Grain like all the rest we have seen, much thrown out by the Frost of last Winter. Landing on the West Shore, we found a Number of People fishing with a Sein. they caught plenty of Shad and Herring and use Canoes altogether, having long neat and strong Ropes made by the People themselves of Elm Bark. Here we saw the first Indian, a Mohicon named Hans, clad in no other Garment than a shattered Blanket. He lives near the Kaatskill & had a Scunk Skin for his Tobacco Pouch. the Tavern of this place is most wretched—Trees are out in Leaf. Cattle and Sheep, nothing different from ours, are now feeding on the Grass, which seems to be nearly as forward as with us when we left Burlington. the Trees quite as forward & the White Pine is common. One Shad taken with the rest, had a Lamprey Eel, about 7 Inches long, fastened to his Back. I was informed hereby a person concerned in measuring it that the Distance from Kaatskill Landing to Schoharie is 32½ Miles, reckoned to Capt. Eckerson's House, a good Waggon Road and Produce brot. down daily from thence to Cherry Valley, half a Day's Journey, that People are now laying out a New Road from SopusKiil to Schoharie which is supposed to be about 32½ Miles. Sopus Creek is about 11 Miles below KatsKill Creek and a Mile below where we now landed. they say that 7 or 8 Sloops belong to Sopus—the Fish are the same in Hudsons River, above the

salt Water as in the Delaware—the Skipper bought a parcel of Fish here cheap. these Fishermen draw their Nets oftener than ours, not stopping between the Draughts. At 3 ocloc we passed by the German Camp, a small Village so called having Two Churches, situated on the East Side of the River, upon a rising Ground which shews the Place to Advantage. some Distance further, on the same Side of the River, we sailed by the Upper Manor House of Livington. a Quantity of low cripple Land may be seen on the opposite Side & this reaches 4 miles to the KaatsKill called 36 Miles from Albany. off the Mouth of this Creek we have a View of the large House built by John Dyer, the Person who made the Road from hence to Schoharie at the Expensce of £400 if common Report may be credited—Two Sloops belong to Katts-Kill, a little beyond the Mouth whereof lies the large Island of Vastic—there is a House on the North Side of the Creek and another with several Saw Mills on the South Side but no Town as we expected. Sloops go no further than Dyer about Half a Mile up the Creek. the lands on both sides of KaatsKill belong to Vanberger, Van Vechte, Salisbury, Dubois & a Man in York. their Lands, as our Skipper says, extend up the Creek 12 Miles to Barber the English Gentleman his Settlement. the Creek runs thro the KaatsKill Mounts. said hereabouts to be at the Distance of 12 to 14 Miles from the North River but there are Falls above which obstruct the Navigation. (these particular Enquiries were made because this was supposed to be the nearest Port to our newly purchased Territory). We landed in the Evening on the KaatsKill Shore, 4 Miles above the Creek but could gain no satis-factory Intelligence, only that the Dutchess of Gordon and her Husband, Col. Staats Long Morris, were just gone from Dyer's House for Cherry Valley & Susquehanna with Two Waggons. they went by the way of Freehold at the Foot of the Mountains on this Side and so over them to Schoharie guessed to be about 32½ Miles as was said before.

10th. We passed by Sunday Islands, whereof Scutters Island affords a good low Bottom fit for Meadow and some of it improved. Bear's Island, said to be the beginning of the Manor of Renslaer-wic, which extends on both Sides of the River. the Lords of Manors are called by the common People Patroons. Bearen Island, or Bear's Island, just mentioned, is reputed to be 12 Miles

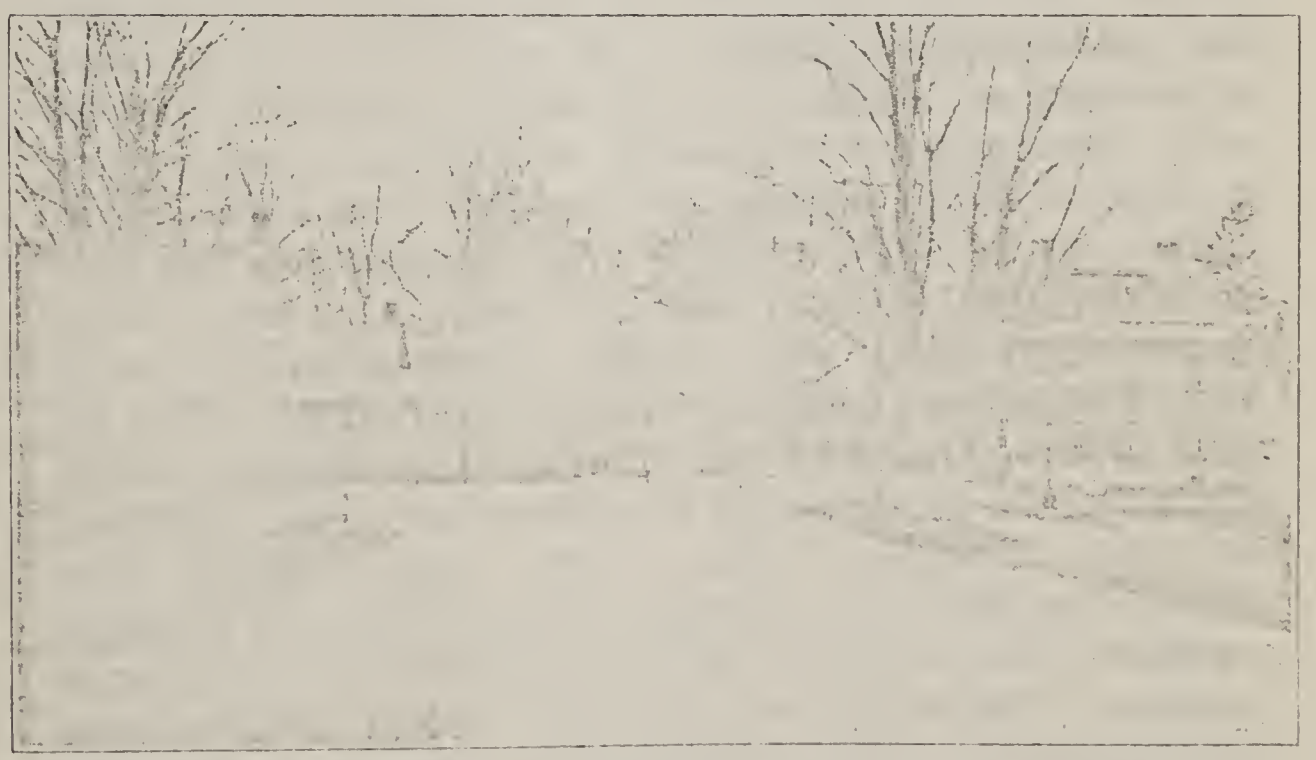
below Albany—Cojeman's [Coeyman's] House, with Two Grist Mills and Two Saw Mills, stand a little above on the West Side and opposite is an Island of about Two Acres covered with young Button Wood Trees which Island, our Skipper says, has arisen there to his Knowledge within 16 years and since he has navigated the River—more low bottom Land is discovered as we pass up, generally covered with Trees. being cleared might be made good Meadow by Banking an Improvement to which the Inhabitants are altogether Strangers. The upper end of Scotoc's Island is a fine cleared Bottom not in Grass but partly in Wheat & partly in Tilth. however there was one rich Meadow improved. we saw the first Batteaux a few Miles below Albany, Canoes being the Common Craft. One Staat's House is prettily fixed on a rising Ground on a low Island, the City of Albany being 3 miles a Head. we discovered for the first Time a Spot of Meadow Ground ploughed and sowed with Peas in the Broad Cast Way. the Uplands are now covered with Pitch Pine & are sandy barren as the Desarts of N. Jersey. as we approach the Town (Albany) the Houses multiply on each Shore and we observe a person in the Act of Sowing Peas upon a fruitful Meadow on an Island to the right. the Hudson near Albany seems to be about Half a Mile over. Henry Cuyler's Brick House on the East Side, about a mile below the Town, looks well & we descry the King's stables, a long wooden Building on the left, & on the same side Philip Schuyler's Grand House with whom at present resides Col. Bradstreet. * * * Col. John Van Renslaer has a good House on the East Side. At Half after 10 oCloc we arrived at Albany, estimated to be 164 Miles by Water from N. York and by Land 157. In the afternoon we viewed the Town which contains, according to several Gentlemen residing here, about 500 Dwelling Houses besides Stores and Out Houses. The Streets are irregular and badly laid out, some paved, others not. Two or Three are broad, the rest narrow & not straight. Most of the Buildings are pyramidically shaped like the old Dutch Houses in N. York. we found Cartwright's a good Tavern tho his charges were exorbitant & it is justly remarked by Kahn, the Swedish Traveler in America, that the Townsmen of Albany in general sustained the character of being close, mercenary and avaricious—they deem it 60 miles from Albany to Cherry Valley—We did not note any

extraordinary Edifices in the Town nor is there a single Building facing Albany on the other Side of the River. The Fort is in a ruinous, neglected Condition and nothing now to be seen of Fort Orange, erected by the Dutch, but part of the Fosse or Ditch which surrounded it. The Barracks are built of Wood and of ordinary Workmanship. the same may be said of the King's Store Houses. The Court House is large and the Jail under it. one miserable woman is now in it for cutting the Throat of her Child about 5 years old. There are 4 Houses of Worship for different Denominations and a public Library which we did not visit. most of the Houses are built of Brick or faced with Brick. The Inhabitants generally speak both Dutch and English & some do not understand the latter. The Shore and Wharves, 3 in Number, abounded in Lumber. Stephen Renslaer, the Patron or Lord of the Manor of Renslaerwick, his House stands a little above the Town. * * * The Site of the Town is hilly and the Soil clay but round the place is a mere Sand, bearing pine Trees chiefly of the Pitch Pine. some Lime or Linden Trees, as well as other Trees are planted before the Doors, as at N. York and indeed Albany has, in other respects, much the Aspect of that City. the Houses are, for the most Part, covered with Shingles made of White Pine, some few with red or blck Tiles. In one of the Streets there is a Sign of the Jersey Shoe Ware House being supplied in Part with Shoes by Henry Guest of N. Brunswick. there is a Town Cloc which strikes regularly. We saw some Indians here & found the Weather very warm and sultry.

11th. Having hired an open Waggon the Company quitted Albany early in the Morng. intending for Schenectady by way of Cahoe's Falls. the fare of the Waggon with Two Horses was 20p. It is called 7 miles from the City to the Mouth of the Mohawk River & from thence to the Cahoes 5 Miles, from the Cahoes to Schenectady 16 Miles, from Albany to Schenectady in a Direct Line along the usual Road 17 Miles (there are now Mile Stones set up). The Patroon's House at the North End of Albany is a large handsome Mansion with a good Garden & Wheat Field that reaches down to the North River. the Road leads along the Bank for about 6 or 7 miles from Albany and the rich Bottom, on each side of the River, is near Half a Mile broad, consisting of a black Mould very level & low, proper for the best sort of

Meadow, but here sown with Wheat and Peas both which look well. some of the Peas are up and some are now sowing. very little Indian corn is raised in these Parts & that not planted in Furrows or Rows but at random, one Field excepted. they plant three or 4 Feet apart in the Hills & the same Ground every year. the Land back of this fertile Space is covered with the Pitch and White Pine chiefly and yet not bad Land, and along the Mohawks River also this rich flat Ground extends from a Quarter to Half a Mile wide, but somewhat narrower on the upper parts of that River. This Stream, at the Cahoes, is reckoned to be about a Quarter of a Mile in Breadth & the Falls extend quite across. the Heighth of the Falls is conjectured by Mr. Wells & the Two Surveyors to be 60 Feet or upwards but I have seen a Copper plate that calls it 75, tho' upon ocular view it appears less. the Falls is almost perpendicular, the whole Body of the River brawling over a Slate Rock. the Banks of the River consist of this Rock intermixed with a crumbling stone and are perhaps 30 feet higher than the Bed of the River. the whole looks as white as cream except in the middle where the black Rock projects a little and the water breaks into many small Rills. We descended down to the Shore by a dangerous passage and ascended by the same after examining every Thing below, particularly some heavy Stones and other Indications of a Copper Mine being not far off. upon quitting this Spot we directed our Course for Schenectady & passed some excellent Farms and likewise some poor barren Pine Land. yet we saw some choice Ground bearing the jersey or Pitch Pine, a Thing to me heretofore unknown. the Course from the Cahoes to Schenectady was nearly West. about six Miles below that Town we are told that the rich Bottoms sell at £35 to £40 p Acre while the Upland will only fetch £3 or thereabouts. they hardly ever plow their Upland. the Indian Corn in the Rich Lands is said to produce from 40 to 60 Bushels an Acre altho every Year planted in the same Earth. By the Information recd. Stephen Van Renslaer's Manor extends on each Side of the North River 12 Miles below Albany and 12 above by 48 Miles across East & West. Along the Road the Trees are out in full Leaf and the Grass in the Vales several Inches high. Clover and Timothy common to the Country. they use wheeled Plows mostly with 3 Horses abreast & plow and harrow some-

times on a full Trot, a Boy sitting on one Horse. the Timber in these Parts besides the Two sorts of Pine consists of Blac & White Oak, White and brown Aspen, large and small Bilberry, Maple, red Oak, Hazel Bushes, Ash and Gum together with Butternut and Shellbark Hiccory in plenty, Elm and others. the Woods abound in Strawberries, and we find Apple Trees, Bilberries, Cherries and some others in Blossom as are the wild Plums, which are very common here. We are informed by Dr. Stringer at Albany that the Owners of Hardenburghs or the great Patent sell their Lands in Fee at 7 6 per Acre.



BLUE STORE CORNERS, NORTH OF CLERMONT, ON THE ALBANY POST ROAD, U. S. ROUTE 9

The corners are famous because all the buildings in the picture are painted bright blue

CHAPTER 56.

1775. FIRST YEAR OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION IN THE HUDSON VALLEY.

JANUARY 10, 1775. NEW YORK PROVINCIAL ASSEMBLY CONVENES WITH TORIES IN GREAT STRENGTH—MAJORITY OF MOHAWKS MIGRATE TO CANADA WITH COLONEL GUY JOHNSON—MAY 22, 1775. PATRIOT ASSEMBLY CONVENED IN NEW YORK—NEWS OF BATTLES OF LEXINGTON AND CONCORD REACHES NEW YORK —SONS OF LIBERTY SEIZE BRITISH VESSELS AND THE ARSENAL AND CLOSE NEW YORK CUSTOMS HOUSE—PATRIOT COMMITTEE OF 100 TAKES OVER CITY GOVERNMENT— MAY 10, 1775. AMERICANS CAPTURE FORT TICONDEROGA—MAY 12. CROWN POINT CAPTURED—JUNE 25. GENERAL WASHINGTON AND BRITISH GOVERNOR TRYON GIVEN SEPARATE RECEPTIONS IN NEW YORK—WASHINGTON CONFERS WITH PROVINCIAL CONGRESS—FOUR NEW YORK LINE REGIMENTS FORMED—COLONEL WILLETT AND LIBERTY BOYS PREVENT REMOVAL OF BRITISH ARMS FROM NEW YORK—BRITISH CANNON REMOVED FROM NEW YORK TO AMERICAN FORTS IN THE HIGHLANDS—AUGUST 23, 1775. AMERICAN AND BRITISH SOLDIERS SKIRMISH IN NEW YORK—BRITISH SHIP "ASIA" FIRES INTO CITY—NEW YORK PROVINCE MADE THE NORTHERN DEPARTMENT OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY ARMY — FIRST AMERICAN NAVY ASSEMBLES AT CROWN POINT—GENERAL SCHUYLER, AT ALBANY, ORGANIZES CANADIAN EXPEDITION OF NEW YORK TROOPS— MONTGOMERY TAKES COMMAND ON SCHUYLER'S ILLNESS— MONTREAL CAPTURED—DECEMBER 31, 1775. AMERICANS REPULSED IN NIGHT ATTACK ON QUEBEC—MONTGOMERY KILLED.

The New York Provincial Assembly convened in New York City on January 10, 1775, with a Tory majority. Colonel Philip Schuyler of Albany, was the patriot or Whig leader. The Tory party outnumbered the Whigs two to one in the body. On April 7, 1775, the Provincial Assembly, which had existed for more

than a century, was dissolved forever. The patriots of New York thenceforth took matters into their own hands.

Col. Guy Johnson succeeded his uncle, Sir William Johnson, as Superintendent of Indian Affairs, following the latter's death. In the spring of 1775, Colonel Johnson called a council of the Six Nations at his home, Guy Park in present Amsterdam, on the Mohawk River. Hearing rumors that he was to be arrested, Johnson, with his family, went to Canada accompanied by a great part of the Mohawks and a number of Loyalists or Tories, among whom were Colonel John Butler and his son, Walter, who was afterwards engaged in a number of terrible raids along the Mohawk River. Sir John Johnson and his family remained at Johnson Hall. He was surrounded by a large number of tenant farmers on his estates who were strong Tories. The presence of Colonel Guy Johnson and the Mohawks in Canada now constituted a decided menace to the patriots or Whigs of New York.

Later in the year, the Continental Congress established a Board of Commissioners of Indian Affairs, divided into three departments, one of which was the Northern Department, embracing the Province of New York. General Philip Schuyler, Major Joseph Hawley, Turbutt Francis, Oliver Wolcott and Volkert P. Douw. Through this board, Congress sent friendly messages to the Six Nations asking them to remain neutral. These efforts were successful only to a limited extent. In the Revolution, the Oneidas generally sided with the patriots but the Mohawks, Onondagas, Tuscaroras, Cayugas and Senecas fought on the British side.

Matters moved to a crisis about Boston early in 1775 and the entire patriot population of the Colonies was aroused. The newspapers of the time were filled with exciting matter and the people talked of little else than the strong possibility of an approaching conflict. General Gage, the British commander at Boston, began preparations for defending that city, while hundreds of armed patriots assembled at Cambridge.

The Committee of Sixty of New York, now took matters into its own hands and took measures for assembling a convention of patriots. On April 6, 1775, a great gathering of Whigs took place under the flagpole on the Common in New York City. An attempt to overawe them by the Loyalists failed. They called a

Provincial Convention which met on April 20 and chose twelve delegates to represent New York in the Continental Congress.

Delegates were now appointed from the counties to a Provincial Assembly, which met in New York City on May 22, 1775. This body took over the functions of Provincial government and ignored the royal governor and the Council. It was practically a Whig Assembly.

Soon after the Provincial Convention adjourned on April 24, news reached New York City of the battles of Concord and Lexington, which caused great public excitement. Captain Isaac Sears was arrested for "seditious utterances." He was taken from his captors by a crowd of patriots and released.

The Sons of Liberty then acted quickly. They seized all vessels lying in the harbor which had on board supplies for the British troops in Boston. They made a demand for the keys of the Customs House and, when it was granted, they closed it. They seized public arms and the arsenal. A Grand Committee of Safety, consisting of one hundred leading Whigs, was formed which took over the city government.

Events moved rapidly in the Province, which, in reality, had now become an American state. On May 10, 1775, an expedition of Americans captured Fort Ticonderoga near the head of Lake Champlain and one of the most important forts in the state. Benedict Arnold of Connecticut, had gone to Cambridge at the head of a military company. There he proposed the capture of Ticonderoga to the Massachusetts Provincial Congress. Arnold is principally noted for his generalship at the battle of Saratoga in 1777 and his attempt to betray his country in 1780. However he was a truly great soldier with a keen knowledge of the grand strategy of war. He realized that Ticonderoga was one of the key defenses of New York and that its capture was essential to the eventual success of the patriot cause. This idea was in the minds of others. A company of Connecticut militia gathered at Pittsfield, Massachusetts, with the idea of moving against Ticonderoga. They were joined there by Colonel Eaton and Colonel Brown and some of their soldiers. The party marched to Bennington, where the expedition was joined by Colonel Ethan Allen and a force of "Green Mountain Boys." Allen was elected com-

mander of the combined force. Arnold soon arrived and claimed the command which was denied him.

On May 9, 1775, most of the American force crossed Lake Champlain near Ticonderoga and at dawn Allen and Arnold, at the head of the attacking party, seized the sentinel, passed through the covered way and rushed into the parade within the fort. The whole garrison was captured by this surprise attack. The capture was important in that 120 cannon, 50 swivels and two mortars and a large amount of ammunition was captured. General Knox later commanded an American expedition which took this ordnance to Boston where it was used in the siege of that city.

On May 12, 1775, Colonel Seth Warner and a party of Green Mountain Boys moved against Crown Point, which they captured. The Americans now held the key of the defenses against attack from Canada.

On May 10, the day of the capture of Ticonderoga, the second Continental Congress met at Philadelphia. It issued bills of credit, created an army and navy, established a postal service and in general assumed governmental control. Already the American nation had been born.

Although there was a strong patriot party in the Province of New York it was almost equalled in numbers by the Tory opposition. Dangers also confronted the Whigs in the possibility of invasion from Canada and the presence of the Iroquois in Central and Western New York. Through the efforts of Sir William Johnson, the Six Nations had become strong in their alliance with England.

The battle of Bunker Hill, which was fought on June 17, 1775, served to bring matters nearer a crisis in New York. The Provincial Assembly invited General Wooster and his command of Connecticut militia to New York and he marched there and encamped at Harlem for several weeks.

By a peculiar coincidence General Washington and the British governor, William Tryon, arrived in New York City at the same time in June, 1775. Tryon came on the ship *Asia* and Washington arrived, on June 25, on his way to take command of the American Army at Cambridge. Washington landed at the country-seat of Colonel Lispenard, about a mile above the city, and

was escorted into New York by nine companies of infantry. Later in the day, military and civil honors were given Governor Tryon on his arrival.

On the following day, Washington conferred with the members of the Provincial Congress then sitting in the city. Four Line regiments were raised and Colonels McDougall, Van Schaick, Clinton and Holmes were appointed to command them. An artillery company was also formed under Captain John Lamb.

In June, 100 men of the Royal Irish Regiment, then stationed at Fort George, were ordered to Boston to re-enforce General Gage, whose army was closely besieged by General Washington's American forces. The British ship *Asia* lay at the foot of Broad Street to take them on board. On June 6, the soldiers started down the street preceded by six cartloads of arms which belonged to the Province of New York. Colonel Marinus Willett was informed of the removal of the muskets and he hurried to the head of the column and seized the leading horse by the bit. A great crowd of patriots collected and the carts of arms were turned off into Beaver Street and the British soldiers were allowed to go. The rescued arms were later used to equip the four New York Line regiments.

On August 23, Captain Lamb was ordered to remove the cannon of Fort George to forts which had been constructed in the Highlands of the Hudson. While engaged in this work on the night of August 23, he was fired on by a sentinel party in a launch belonging to the British frigate *Asia*, which was anchored near by. Lamb ordered his men to fire and the volley killed one and wounded several in the launch. The *Asia* then fired a broadside into the city. The cannon shot struck several houses and wounded three of Lamb's men. A panic ensued and it is said that one-third of its people left New York. In August, Governor Tryon took refuge on the British ship, *Duchess of Gordon*.

During the summer of 1775 and the winter of 1775-1776, the British remained cooped up in Boston. Business was practically suspended in New York City and its inhabitants lived in constant fear of bombardment.

New York Province was made the "Northern Department" of the Continental Army and it so remained throughout the Rev-

olution. General Washington appointed Philip Schuyler, one of his four major-generals, to command this department.

General Schuyler soon turned his attention to Canada. Colonels Allen and Arnold sailed down Lake Champlain and captured St. Johns but could not hold it. Arnold, on his own initiative, now gathered a force of 150 men and all the vessels he could assemble at Crown Point to oppose a rumored invasion from Canada, which did not materialize. This was the first American Navy and Arnold was its self-constituted "admiral."

Preparations were now made for an invasion of Canada. On June 27, the Continental Congress ordered General Schuyler to take possession of Montreal—in other words, to occupy Canada. Fort Ticonderoga was the rendezvous for this expedition. Brigadier-General Richard Montgomery was second in command to Schuyler, and he was stationed at Albany to organize the troops which were to assemble there and then go forward to Ticonderoga. Preparations went on slowly and it was near the end of summer before the expedition was ready to move against Canada from Ticonderoga. Washington aided the invasion as much as possible and sent Colonel Benedict Arnold with 1,000 men through the Maine route to the St. Lawrence to aid in the conquest of Quebec and Canada in general.

At Ticonderoga, the troops were slow in arriving and the officers were greatly discouraged by the lack of coöperation on the part of the Continental Congress. At that time the British forces in Canada numbered 1,500 men, of whom 500 were Indians and Tories from the Colonies. Four regiments of New York Line troops gathered at Ticonderoga, commanded by Colonels McDougall, Van Schaick, Clinton and Holmes with a company of artillery under Captain John Lamb. New Hampshire sent three companies. Toward the end of August, the little American Army, under the command of General Montgomery, moved down Lake Champlain to Isle au Noix on the Sorel, a few miles above St. Johns. General Schuyler joined the expedition there. He came from a council with chiefs of the Six Nations at Albany. He was soon prostrated by illness, turned the command over to Montgomery and returned to Ticonderoga. Montgomery took St. Johns on November 3 and captured Montreal soon after.

With superb spirit, Montgomery then went on to Quebec.

Near that city, he met another intrepid spirit, Benedict Arnold, at the head of his army, weakened and lessened by its long march through the wilderness. On December 1, the American forces began a siege of Quebec which lasted three weeks. On December 31, 1775, the little American Army attempted to take the city in a night assault, which was repulsed with much loss. Montgomery was killed while leading the New York troops just before dawn. Arnold was wounded and most of his division was captured in the struggle. Arnold was taken to the American hospital but gave orders for the American forces to move a few miles up the St. Lawrence, where, for a time, he blockaded the garrison in Quebec.

The news of the death of Montgomery and the American failure before Quebec caused sorrow throughout New York. Major General Richard Montgomery was born in Ireland in 1736. He entered the British Army and served in America in the French-Indian War. Montgomery bought a beautiful estate on the east bank of the Hudson River in Dutchess County and married a daughter of Robert Livingston. He sided with the patriots and was commissioned a brigadier-general. He was in command of the Canadian expedition from Schuyler's disability until he was killed. A monument to his memory is erected on the front of St. Paul's Church, facing Broadway in New York City. Montgomery is one of the most heroic and picturesque figures of the Revolution.

One of the features of 1775 was the formation of Committees of Safety, which grew out of the organization of the Committees of Correspondence, which had been created in 1773 by the patriots. These Committees of Safety assumed control of local affairs until the organization of the state government in 1776. The formation of militia regiments followed. The Americans had been organized in Provincial militia regiments and these were readily reorganized as patriot military bodies. The Colonial wars had been largely fought by the American militia and large numbers of patriots in the Hudson Valley, as well as in the Province of New York had military experience in the French and Indian War. This training was most valuable in the military preparations made by the patriots for the approaching conflict.

CHAPTER 57.

1776—SECOND YEAR OF REVOLUTION IN HUDSON VALLEY.

1776, JANUARY. GENERAL SCHUYLER, WITH 2,000 ALBANY COUNTY MILITIA, MARCHES FROM ALBANY TO JOHNSTOWN AND DISARMS SIR JOHN JOHNSON'S TORY FOLLOWERS—PAINE ADVOCATES AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE IN "COMMON SENSE"—JULY 4. DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE — JULY 9. DECLARATION READ BEFORE GENERAL WASHINGTON IN NEW YORK CITY—BRITISH FORCE LANDS ON STATEN ISLAND—NEW YORK PROVINCIAL CONGRESS MOVES TO WHITE PLAINS WHERE, ON JULY 9, 1776, IT APPROVES DECLARATION AND NAMES NEW YORK A "STATE"—CONGRESSIONAL MISSION TO CANADA BY WAY OF HUDSON RIVER AND LAKE CHAMPLAIN—HESSIANS ARRIVE AT QUEBEC—AMERICAN TROOPS DRIVEN FROM CANADA—JOHNSON AND FOLLOWERS FLEE TO CANADA—AUGUST 27, 1776. BRITISH VICTORY ON LONG ISLAND—BRITISH REOCCUPY NEW YORK—OCTOBER 28. BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS—NOVEMBER 16. BRITISH CAPTURE FORT WASHINGTON—AMERICAN FLEET DEFEATED ON LAKE CHAMPLAIN—CONTINENTAL SHIPYARD AT POUGHKEEPSIE — STATE ASSEMBLY MOVES TO KINGSTON—BRITISH PRISON SHIPS IN NEW YORK HARBOR.

Early in January, 1776, General Schuyler marched from Albany to Johnstown, where he disarmed nearly 300 Tory followers of Sir John Johnson. Expecting possible armed opposition, Schuyler left Albany with nearly 2,000 militia and he was joined with other bodies of armed patriots as he progressed on his 50 mile march. At Caughnawaga (Fonda) he was joined by 900 Tryon County militia, under command of Colonel (later General) Nicholas Herkimer. A review of 3,000 American militia was held on the ice of the Mohawk River at Caughnawaga. The Tories were disarmed at Johnstown on January 19, 1776, when Johnson was put on parole.

Notwithstanding the strength and aggressiveness of the

Whigs, many Tories began to arm themselves in portions of the Province where they were strongest, particularly on Long Island.

In January, 1776, Sir Henry Clinton, with a considerable force, sailed from Boston. Washington thereupon sent General Charles Lee to New York City. Lee, with 1,200 men, camped on the edge of the city and his presence strengthened the patriot cause which had been weakened by Tory activity and the threat of the commander of the *Asia*, a British warship, to fire upon the town if "rebel troops" entered. Fortifications were erected and a garrison of 2,000 men held the city.

On March 17, 1776, General Howe and his British Army evacuated Boston, because of the close siege prosecuted by General Washington and his American troops. Fearing that Howe intended to occupy New York, Washington moved to a point near that city with the greater part of his army. Tryon, the Royalist governor, was then living aboard the ship, the *Duchess of Gordon*, in New York harbor. He formed a plot to murder Washington and his chief officers. An American soldier named Hickey, one of Washington's Life Guards, was the tool employed. The plot was discovered and Hickey was hung on June 26, 1776, before a crowd of 20,000 people.

Early in 1776, Thomas Paine issued his celebrated pamphlet "Common Sense," which advocated American independence. One hundred thousand copies were issued and they had a tremendous effect in creating a popular desire for national freedom. Many of the Colonial Congresses now moved for independence.

On July 4, 1776, the Declaration of Independence was adopted by the Continental Congress, then in session in Philadelphia. On the late afternoon of July 9, the Declaration was read to a brigade of the Continental Army, which was formed in a hollow square on the Common and on the site of the present New York City Hall. General Washington was then present and the paper was read by one of his aides. In the evening, a crowd of citizens and soldiers pulled down the statue of George the Third, which stood on Bowling Green. The figures of the man and horse were made of lead, which was melted into bullets and used by the Continental soldiers.

Early in July, a large British force landed on Staten Island. The Provincial Congress then adjourned to White Plains, where

its members assembled in the Westchester County Courthouse on July 9, 1776. The members heartily approved the Declaration of Independence. It was first referred to a committee, of which John Jay was chairman. Within a short time, he reported the following resolution:

"Resolved, unanimously, That the reasons assigned by the Continental Congress for declaring these united colonies free and independent States are cogent and conclusive, and that, while we lament the cruel necessity which has rendered the measure unavoidable, we approve the same and will, at the risk of our lives and fortunes, join with the other colonies in supporting it."

At White Plains, the New York Provincial Congress changed the name of that body to "Convention of Representatives of the State of New York." This is the first time the name "State" was officially used in connection with the name of New York and, therefore, White Plains can be considered as the birthplace of the State of New York, although its constitution and plan of organization was not adopted until the following year at Kingston.

A handsome monument marks the site of the Westchester County Courthouse of 1776 in White Plains. It stands in front of the State Armory in that city. Westchester County is naturally proud of its important part in this epochal chapter of the history of the State of New York.

The actions of the New York State assembly, in support of the Declaration of Independence and in declaring New York a State, were most important as it definitely placed the commonwealth, with the other Thirteen Original States, as a force working for an absolutely free and independent political existence for the American nation.

The State of New York and the Valley of the Hudson were henceforth to become the scenes of some of the most vital events of the War for Independence and these events had more influence than those in any other state in the final achievement of national freedom.

The British government now decided to attempt to crush the Colonies by a well organized plan of campaign. It embraced the capture of New York and Albany, the British occupation of both the Hudson and East rivers. This occupation of New York would make a wedge between New England and the other Col-

onies and make their separate conquest easy. The plan's vital element was a line of British posts, extending from New York up the Hudson River to Albany and thence by way of the Hudson, Lake George and Lake Champlain northward to Montreal. A side line was planned to run through the Mohawk Valley to Fort Oswego on Lake Ontario.

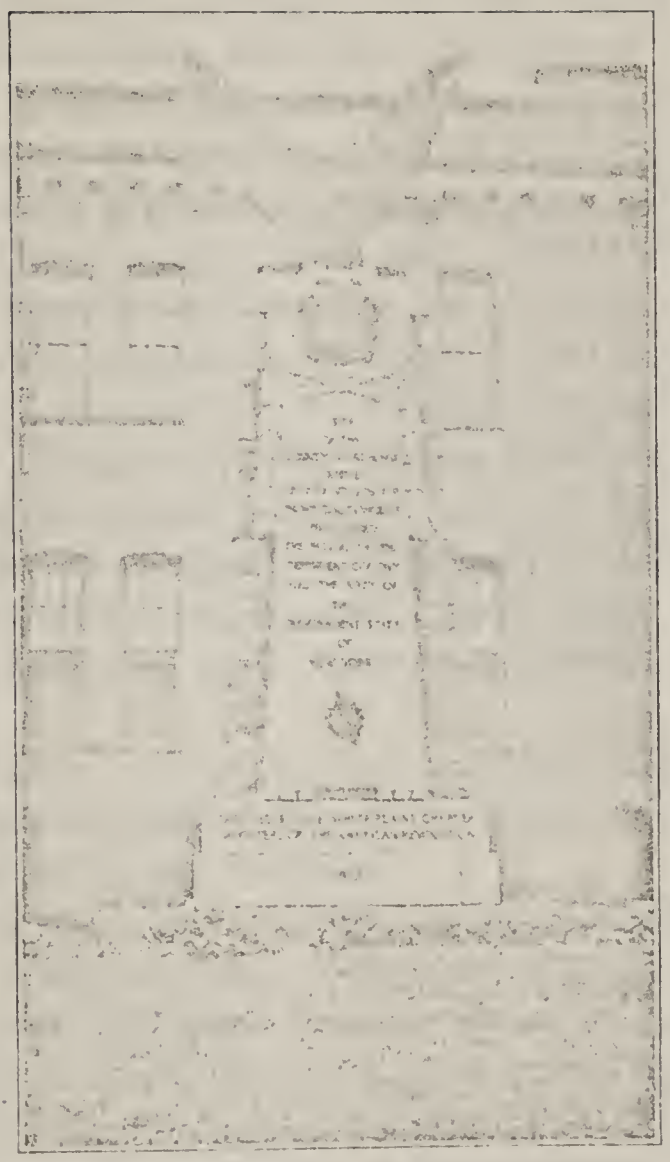
With full knowledge of this British plan of conquest, Continental Congress, in 1776, decided to send an American commission into Canada to attempt to secure the accession of its people to the patriot cause.

The commissioners selected were Benjamin Franklin, Charles Carroll of Carrollton and Samuel Chase. With them, went Rev. John Carroll, a Catholic priest. They were entertained in New York City by Lord Stirling and set sail up the Hudson for Albany, on April 2, 1776, in a sloop furnished by him for their use. A heavy northeast storm compelled the boat to anchor at the north end of Manhattan Island, where it lay for 24 hours. The sloop then set sail and had a rough voyage through the Tappan Zee and the Highlands as the storm continued.

The blow was succeeded by fair weather and, with a favoring wind, they sailed on to Albany, where they were entertained by General Philip Schuyler at his home then south of Albany, but now located well within the city. General Schuyler then took the commissioners to his country-seat at Schuylerville and thence to Lake George, where he had a good bateau ready for their use. They made the trip down the lake through floating ice. Their bateau was drawn over the four-mile portage to Lake Champlain by six yoke of oxen. There the commissioners embarked and sailed down the lake to St. Johns where they disembarked and were driven to Montreal in calèches—two-wheeled carriages.

The American commission met a cordial reception at Montreal but the military measures now taken by the British government made the mission without result. The Crown had hired thousands of German soldiers to assist in crushing the American "rebellion." A considerable force of these Hessian troops arrived at Quebec in May and the little American Army was soon driven from Canada. Under the command of General John Thomas, the Americans retreated to the Sorel, where General John Sul-

511-7512



BIRTHPLACE OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK

Site of Westchester County Court House of 1776, at White Plains

livan took command when Thomas became sick. Sullivan retreated to Crown Point. At that place, there was a force of 5,000 American troops who were poorly sheltered, clad and fed. By July, fully one-half of them were sick. The Northern Army was in a much weakened condition. It had lost 5,000 men by death, sickness and desertion.

Learning that Sir John Johnson was still active in the Tory cause, in May, 1776, General Schuyler sent Colonel Elias Dayton and a strong force to arrest Johnson and his retainers. Learning of Dayton's approach, Johnson and many of his followers fled to Canada by a central Adirondack route. They suffered terrible privations before they reached Montreal. There, Sir John was commissioned a brigadier-general in the British service. He raised two battalions, consisting of about 1,000 men, who were known as "Johnson's Greens" or the "Royal Greens." These men were followers of Johnson or other Tories who had fled to Canada. They fought on several occasions in New York during the Revolution—notably at the battle of Oriskany in 1777—and they ravaged districts which were formerly their home sections and fought and killed many of their former neighbors, friends and even relatives.

Following Johnson's flight, Colonel Dayton took Lady Johnson to Albany where she was detained for some time as a hostage for the good behavior of her husband.

The British planned their attack on the American Colonies at three points. General John Burgoyne was to invade New York from the north and meet General Howe at Albany. Howe was to capture New York City and then come up the Hudson River with 30,000 men, including 12,000 Hessians. Sir Henry Clinton was assigned the conquest of the southern Colonies.

From the foregoing, it will be seen that the Hudson River was considered to be the vital point in the defense of the American Colonies and it was so regarded by both the British and Colonial military authorities throughout the war.

General Howe reached Lower New York Bay in the latter part of June and, on July 8, he landed 9,000 troops on Staten Island. Here he waited for his brother, Admiral Howe with English regulars and Hessian troops, who were aboard his fleet, the first vessels of which arrived on July 12. Sir Henry Clinton

sailed to New York Bay with troops aboard a fleet which had been repulsed in an attack on Fort Moultrie on June 28.

In August, General Howe had 30,000 troops ready to attack New York City, where General Washington was in command of an army mostly composed of militia, one-fourth of whom were sick and unfit for duty. General Howe and Admiral Howe attempted peace negotiations on terms of absolute submission by the Americans. These were, of course, refused.

A great conflict was now inevitable. Both sides began preparations. British warships sailed up the Hudson River past the American batteries in an attempt to communicate with the Tories on the shores of the Hudson and to furnish them with arms in an effort to keep a line open to Canada. Two American forts had been erected where the Hudson narrows, at the point where the present Fort Lee bridge across the Hudson has been erected in New York City. These fortifications were Fort Washington, on the New York shore, and Fort Lee, on the New Jersey shore. Hulks of vessels were sunk by the Americans in this channel. Batteries were placed on Manhattan Island and General Greene was sent to Long Island to build forts south of Brooklyn. General Sullivan now superseded Greene, who was prostrated by fever. Small bodies of troops were stationed at present Jersey City and on Governor's Island. General James Clinton and a detachment of militia guarded Westchester County, along the shores of Long Island Sound, to prevent the landing of British troops. Sullivan placed guards on a line running from the Narrows to Jamaica on Long Island. Before September an American line of defense, with 20 cannons, extended from present Greenwood Cemetery to the Navy Yard, within present Brooklyn. A redoubt, with seven big guns, was built on Brooklyn Heights. Washington had appealed to the country and men flocked to his standard from New York, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, Delaware and Maryland, and the Continental Army was swelled to 17,000 men.

General Howe landed a force of from 12,000 to 15,000 British soldiers on Long Island on August 25th. Washington sent a few troops to Long Island and put General Israel Putnam in chief command in that sector. There were about 8,000 Americans on Long Island to oppose the British advance, which began on the evening of August 26th. The movement was made in three divi-

sions commanded by General Grant, General De Heister, Sir Henry Clinton and Earl Cornwallis with General Howe in chief command. The British left, under General Grant, took the road nearest New York Bay; the center was composed of Hessians, under General De Heister, advanced by Flatbush; the right, under Clinton and Cornwallis, moved toward the Bedford and Jamaica passes, which were unguarded.

The battle began on the morning of August 27th. The Americans made a stubborn defense, although they were outnumbered two to one. Putnam learned that his pickets, at the lower Greenwood pass, had been driven in. He prepared to stand on "Battle Hill." The Hessians advanced toward Flatbush pass, in present Prospect Park, Brooklyn. Sullivan's American troops gave them battle there when the British right attacked his rear. Sullivan ordered a retreat but he was captured with a number of his men. General Lord Stirling fought Grant's column. Freed from the battle with Sullivan's men, a large British force now attacked Stirling, who retreated. Stirling was captured. By noon, the British had won the field. The Americans lost 500 men in killed and wounded and 111 of their number had been captured.

General Washington crossed the East River from New York to Long Island, August 28th, and gave orders for a retreat to New York on that night. A dense fog spread over the region at midnight and, under its cover, the entire American Army crossed the East River to New York in rowboats and batteaux.

General Howe now resumed peace negotiations with the Continental Congress, which sent Dr. Franklin, John Adams and Edward Rutledge to treat with him. Meetings, which were held on Staten Island, were fruitless of results.

The American Army established itself on Harlem Heights in strong entrenchments. Washington moved from New York City and made his headquarters in the present Morris-Jumel mansion. On his way, he stopped at the home of Robert Murray on present Murray Hill. Here he met Captain Nathan Hale who volunteered to visit the British camp on Long Island in disguise to secure information. Hale was captured and hanged as a spy.

The result of the battle of Long Island greatly disheartened many of the American troops and numbers of them deserted and went to their homes. The general morale of the army was much

weakened by the defeat. The battle of Long Island was one of the greatest fought during the Revolution in point of numbers engaged.

New York was now abandoned by the American Army and continued in the hands of the British until 1783. The troops moved to the camp on Harlem Heights, the sick and wounded were taken to New Jersey and the military stores were moved up the Hudson River to Dobbs Ferry.

On September 15, 1776, British troops crossed the East River from Long Island and landed at the foot of present East 34th Street, then known as Kip's Bay. On the following day, detachments of Americans and British fought on Harlem Plains, where the Americans were victorious.

On September 21, fire destroyed 500 buildings in New York City.

General Howe now received reenforcements of 10,000 Hessians, making his total force 35,000 strong. He resolved to attack the American Army in the rear and, on October 12, he landed a large force in Westchester County.

Washington moved his army to meet this new peril. He sent General Heath and a detachment of troops to hold back Howe's advance. Washington placed General Greene in command of a small force in Fort Lee and garrisoned Fort Washington with 3,000 men. He then moved his army into Westchester County and marched it up the valley of the Bronx River. The troops were ordered to entrench in camps extending from Fordham Heights to White Plains, near which village Washington made his headquarters on October 21.

There was constant skirmishing between the two armies until they met in battle in the present City of White Plains. The strongest American position was on Chatterton's Hill on the west side of the Bronx River. The two armies were equal in numbers, each having about 13,000 troops.

On October 28, 1776, the battle of White Plains began. The British Army advanced in two divisions, led by General De Heister and General Erskine. British troops, under cover of a heavy cannonade, threw a rough bridge over the little channel of the Bronx River, which is only 10 or 15 feet wide at this point. Over this structure the British passed and drove the Americans

from their position on Chatterton's Hill. The American troops retreated to their intrenched camp, where they had thrown up breastworks composed of cornstalks with a slight covering of earth. These deceived General Howe, who considered the position too strong to carry in a frontal attack. Here the Americans lay until the night of the 31st when they withdrew five miles northward to the heights of North Castle, where they held a strong position.

The British did not pursue the Americans and Washington then crossed the Hudson and encamped, with his main army between Hackensack and Fort Lee in New Jersey. General Lee was left at North Castle with a strong force. General Heath was put in command of the posts in the Hudson Highlands.

Fort Washington was the next point to be attacked by General Howe. It stood on the bold heights north of present 181st Street, where a handsome monument now marks its location overlooking the Hudson River. It was supported by several strong redoubts and outposts and it mounted 34 guns. On November 16, 1776, Howe's army attacked this system of fortifications at four different points. By noon, all the redoubts and outposts had been carried, at which time the fort surrendered. Its name was changed to Fort Knyphausen, in honor of the general who commanded the Hessian mercenary troops during the assault, in which 2,600 American soldiers were captured. The holding of the fort by American troops for this assault appears to have been a grave tactical error on the part of Washington.

During the early part of the battle, Generals Washington, Putnam, Mercer and Greene viewed the operations from the Morris-Jumel mansion. Seeing the trend of events, the American commanders left hurriedly and, within fifteen minutes after their departure, the house was occupied by British soldiers.

New York and Manhattan Island were now completely in British hands and Howe sent Cornwallis across the Hudson with 6,000 men, who first occupied abandoned Fort Lee and then started in pursuit of Washington's army across New Jersey to the Delaware River. When Washington crossed that stream into Pennsylvania, his army numbered only 3,000 men.

The menace of a British invasion from Canada now occasioned great anxiety in New York State. A large British and

Hessian force had arrived in Canada, under command of General John Burgoyne. This army was united with troops under command of General Guy Carleton, governor of Canada. These forces were assembled for the invasion of New York and the occupation of the upper part of the State, as outlined earlier in this chapter. Circumstances delayed this expedition until the following year.

In June, 1776, Congress sent General Horatio Gates to command the "American Army in Canada." On his arrival in Albany, Gates learned that the American Army had retreated from Canada to Crown Point. Gates went to that fort, where he appointed General Benedict Arnold commander of a fleet which he ordered built. Arnold sailed with a considerable fleet down Lake Champlain and, on October 11, met the British fleet and a desperate battle followed. The American fleet escaped that night. It was overtaken by the British vessels on the 13th, when another severe fight took place. The American fleet was defeated and many of the ships were beached or burned. Generals Burgoyne, Riedesel and Carleton went to Crown Point which they occupied with their sailors, but later returned to winter quarters in Canada.

Early in the Revolution, American warships were built at the "Continental Shipyard" at Poughkeepsie, which was established there by the firm of Van Zandt, Lawrence and Tudor. The warships, *Congress*, with 28 guns, and the *Montgomery*, with 24 guns, were built there. In 1777, the Poughkeepsie firm built the great boom, which was stretched across the Hudson River at Anthony's Nose.

The dark year of 1776 was brightened by Washington's exploit on Christmas Day, when he crossed the Delaware with 2,000 Americans and defeated the Hessians and British light horse cavalry who were stationed at Trenton.

The ranks of Washington's army were again filling and he soon was able to take the field again.

During 1776, the New York Assembly, or "Convention," led an itinerant existence. When driven from New York by the British occupation, its members moved northward and held meetings successively at Harlem, Kingsbridge, White Plains, Philipse Manor (North Tarrytown), Fishkill (in the Reformed Dutch

Church), Poughkeepsie, and Kingston. The Assembly remained at the latter place until the establishment of the State government in 1777.

Among the terrible features of the Revolution in the Hudson Valley were the British prison ships, which lay in New York harbor during the war and on which many American prisoners experienced severe privations and suffering. The British Provost-Marshal Cunningham was a man of great brutality and utterly without principle and he inflicted untold cruelties on the unfortunate American prisoners. He confessed to starving 2,000 of the patriots, held in the prison buildings in New York City, by selling their rations.

One of the most notorious of the prison ships was the *Jersey* which was anchored at the site of the present Navy Yard in Brooklyn. So terrible were conditions aboard this boat, that it was called "Hellafloat." The majority of its prisoners were American sailors and terrible outrages were inflicted on the captives. The number of deaths on the *Jersey* was appalling. Each morning a ship's officer sounded the cry: "Rebels turn out your dead," following which, often twenty or more corpses would be borne on deck by the staggering, starved American prisoners. During the Revolution, 11,000 Americans died while confined in British prisons, which shows the inhuman treatment to which they were subjected.

Subject Index at end of Volume II

9299

F 822.37